





# VIRTUAL WORLD: PEERLESS WHITE EMPEROR

BOOK 05

*ShiFou KeYi LiuXia*

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

# Virtual World: Peerless White Emperor

(网游之白帝无双)

by

ShiFou KeYi LiuXia

(是否可以留下)

# Synopsis

---

Year 24XX. With several hundred years of improvements, virtual reality has become more mature. It had gradually become humanity's second world. Socializing, working, studying and other everyday things could all be done while sleeping.

Along with the rise in virtual reality systems, virtual games also developed successfully. Additionally, with the vigorous support of the government; every season, games continued to be born, be changed, competed with each other, and be reborn.

Ye Cang is a black bellied, underachieving, 2nd year student at a city college. He appears to have been cured of his albinism yet his story is still full of mystery. In the game 'New Age – Conviction', he began walking the path of a professional gamer. An all-rounder knight, dark cooking, with a nasty disposition, willing to do anything. He's slowly creating his own legend.

“Actually... instead of games, I prefer cooking and dramas” – The White Emperor

# Acknowledgement

---

All rights reserved.

English Translation by syzc, edits by skizlock @ [SYZC's Translation](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

# Chapter 401: ThornyRose's Shock

---

In the end, Fang Ci let GreenDew have the staff. He chose not to take part. The boots gave dexterity; SpyingBlade let FrozenBlood have it. Finally, SpyingBlade took the necklace. Ye Cang gathered the boss-level specter residue. Even the skeleton's bones weren't spared.

The party left the wall and returned to the corridor to prepare for the second floor. ThornyRose had Ye Cang show her the stats of that tactical ability, and Ye Cang didn't refuse. He sent Tactics - Rapid Retreat / Pursuit's stats over.

ThornyRose looked at the skill.

"Since you have it, why not level it up? This is equivalent to being able to power up an army! As the leader, leveling it up is a given... Even you can feel it's worth. I knew there were too many auras, so one was your party leader's aura..."

ThornyRose sighed. Now he had to be the party leader. He had an army scale aura that was only effective when he led.

Ye Cang nodded. This skill was truly very useful whether for retreating or attacking. He spent one skill point and increased it to intermediate level. For advanced, his level wasn't high enough.

Tactics - Rapid Retreat / Pursuit (Adventurer - Intermediate Level):

Passive: When you're the party leader, party members gain +15% movement speed and +10% attack speed.

Active: Rapid Retreat Pursuit - give surrounding allies +75% 65% movement speed and +0 / +50 attack speed. Furthermore, you collectively gain one use of either Charge (charge rapidly at a target within 5 meters) or Escape (instantly teleport a few meters back). Lasts for 25 seconds.

Costs: 35 energy, 20 mana. Cooldown: 13 minutes.

SpyingBlade saw that one of the auras had powered up, and it was the one he liked which raised movement and attack speed. He didn't expect it to belong to Team Leader. This team's auras pretty much doubled one's survivability. It even gave mana regeneration, and spell focus! This always made ThornyRose feel regretful. With Shaking Bear's auras, the team's survivability increased dramatically. Her own health increased by a lot, and even her defence increased! She looked at Zhang ZhengXiong's heavy armor. This guy is probably much tougher than before.

“Shaking Bear, come here...”

Zhang ZhengXiong walked over. ThornyRose slashed at his chest. A 7 damage value floated up, making her shocked. Who would have the balls to try and PK him!

“Let me see your health and defence...”

ThornyRose looked at his attributes and was shocked speechless. His highest attribute was constitution followed by wisdom and strength, but the numbers seemed wrong. If he was a full constitution build, how could his strength be a match for hers, and his wisdom was equal to a spell caster's. She looked doubtfully at Zhang ZhengXiong.

“Bro said not to tell you, but since we have an agreement; you have to introduce a girl whom I'll definitely succeed with if I let you see my talents and skills...” Zhang ZhengXiong said as he let ThornyRose have a peek at his talents. ThornyRose was immediately dumbstruck. Heroic Tier!? An aura related heroic tier talent! This means that Shaking Bear just needs to learn more auras and his attributes definitely won't be low. Every stacking aura gives 5%! He already has a 25% increase. Not only that, he has a super rare aura skill like Aura Mastery! Allowing even his attributes to affect his auras. Could he be any more disgustingly OP!? What made her even more astonished were the two talents [Strong and Tough Body] and [Feel Your Pain]. He just had to stack constitution, and both his strength and wisdom would increase.

She then looked at Zhang ZhengXiong's numerous life-saving skills, especially Desperate Prayer, Berserk Recovery, and Stone Skin. These... could he even be any tankier?

ThornyRose's eyes then went to the four-colored ring on his hand. Wasn't there only three colors before? It got another one? When she saw the ring's stats and the four ability choices, she immediately gasped. This was something that was irreplaceable! Even just the four ability choices were irreplaceable! Let alone the fact, that the ring had percentage attribute increases. It wasn't just one out of three abilities with an extra Desperate Prayer thrown in. This was essentially another life... A second Desperate Prayer could heal up the entire team. He even knew Healing Light!

Fighting wise, he only had a few skills, but he had an epic battle skill, Holy Judgement! That damage and chance to stun! It not only had multiple hits, the cooldown was not very long. In one long boss fight, it could be used many times. She looked at the playboy who was waiting for her to introduce him to a girl, and didn't know whether to feel grateful or aggrieved. The current stage's super all-rounder tank was born, and it's a desperate priest.

ThornyRose hesitated for a while, unable to say anything. Having him always ahead of her was too damn damaging to her ego... Ever since she learned that he was a priest, back in Really New Village, her self-esteem had taken hit after hit. How could there be a priest like him! However, ThornyRose already knew that above epic, there were heroic tier talents. To explain, most heroic tier skills and talents were amazing existences that were percentage based. It would pretty much force you to walk in the path of said hero. However, Shaking Bear seemed to be running counter to it. The hero was a paladin, while he was a berserker.

As she thought until there, she began to think about Lin Le. She used money to trick him into revealing his hidden talents. It was another heroic tier talent. A pure strength type talent. That crushing effect was simply... bullying anyone beneath him in



strength. Doesn't that damn lowlife also have a heroic talent then? His talent is definitely related to magic! He doesn't have much spellcasting equipment, yet has such high spell power and damage. It pretty much guarantees a heroic talent...

Really New Village's Three Brothers, all three of them with Heroic Talents. Truly worthy of their title. Her mind was in chaos when she learned that they had obtained their heroic talents when they were working together. At that time, she already felt like obtaining an epic talent was awesome. Yet, just beside her, two guys actually got heroics...

She looked at SpyingBlade... walked over and whispered, "Do you also have a heroic talent?"

SpyingBlade frowned. How did she know? He pretended to be calm, then suddenly realised, "I don't know what you mean. Heroic talent? So there's actually a heroic above epic in this game..."

ThornyRose looked at SpyingBlade. Does he really not know or is he faking it? This guy... If he says he doesn't know, half the time he's lying...

ThornyRose looked at Little Ye Tian. Little Ye Tian just sighed and said, "I don't..."

Little Ye Tian's sigh was because she should have gone to find her father earlier. Since she was late a few days, Lele was already many skills and talents ahead of her. At that time, she only had one. Everytime she thought about how Lin Le teased her with his heroic talent, she could only clench her teeth and count in her head; One evil Lele, two evil Leles, three evil Leles, four evil Leles... Aaaah! Lele is too hateful!

## Chapter 402: General Level Zombie

---

They found the stairs to the next floor. Ye Cang, with his night vision, took the lead to go down with his ballista ready. Like before, it was just one long path. There were no doors on the left and right, while a coffin room laid in the distance. Due to the length of the passage, he couldn't get any concrete data on the room, but the inside should be very spacious...

Ye Cang waved downwards, and everyone placed torches along the way to the coffin room. Suddenly, ThornyRose stopped everyone.

“Entering that half will trigger the boss battle. We don't know what type the boss is yet, so everyone be careful. We'll go with the usual strategy...”

Everyone nodded, and entered the coffin room. It was a circular room, with a four-sided stage in the middle. Every side had a set of stone stairs leading upwards. On the stage, was an exquisite sarcophagus. On the four corners were a total of 8 coffins forming a ring around it. At this time, the coffins began to show signs of movement.

“It's a group fight! FrozenBlood, Sister Lily, you two take the left. I'll take the right. SpyingBlade, you take on one. Shaking Bear is in charge of the boss. Little Tian, you too. You definitely have to coordinate and suppress it!” ThornyRose commanded.

Lin Le swung his bags and enveloped all the coffins in a sea of flames. ThornyRose secretly thought that this move of Lele's was pretty good. They just had to stay outside the flames and make sure the enemies stay inside it. These molotovs were too useful...

Zhang ZhengXiong directly charged up to the four-sided stage. There was a flash. Though he raised his left arm and blocked it, he was still sent flying a few meters. ThornyRose saw Zhang ZhengXiong react like an assassin. He flipped in the air and

charged back with a Barbaric Tackle. Now, everyone could see what came out of the sarcophagus. It was a zombie holding a jagged axe. Its two eyes stared coldly as Zhang ZhengXiong charged with a roar.

Ye Cang identified it.

General Level Zombie (Boss - Abyss): A battle type zombie who had great strength when he was alive.

Ye Cang began to aim. As for ElegantFragrance, she helped ThornyRose restrain the surrounding abyss-elite ranked armored zombies. On the left side, FrozenCloud rejoiced that there was a sea of fire. The enemy seemed to be having trouble. A Wyvern Kick sent one back into the flames, while DyedLily leaned and dodged one of their attacks. Taking advantage of this moment, her shield smacked it back into the fire. They continued to deal with the zombies. As for Lin Le, he guarded the edge like playing a game of whack-a-mole. He slashed with normal attacks, saving up his rage to prepare a surprise attack on the boss.

While Zhang ZhengXiong suppressed it, OldWangFromNextDoor commanded his water elemental to slow its speed as much as possible. The sea of fire made it inconvenient to use area spells. Wu Na also used her single target ice spells to deal damage. Ice Spear was easily dodged by it, making her sigh at these bosses' high intelligence and stupid fast reaction speed.

“Ice Spear, try to use it when the target is rigid or stunned. I’ve calculated it and this way is easier. Boss level monsters react faster than most professional players do, so it will be very difficult to hit if you just use it like that. Or perhaps before attacking, use Little Tian as your eyes...” GreenDew analysed.

Little Ye Tian nodded, “She’s right. Next time there’s an opportunity, I’ll notify you...”

Wu Na nodded. She had too little experience. She looked at Little Ye Tian. She... whatever, Little Ye Tian was different. Her IQ was

equivalent to hers and Ye Cang's three, all added together. A total of over 300.

ThornyRose frowned. These little ones were all problematic. They were much stronger than normal elites. She turned, dodged and attacked, then smashed one in the face with her shield. She then charged towards the one FrozenBlood was taking on. Heavy Strike, Provoke!

As for Zhang ZhengXiong, while charging with Barbaric Tackle, he struck with his axe, causing it to temporarily stop. He himself was pushed back a few steps once again, but the temporary rigidity was enough for Ye Cang's Meteor Shot to accurately hit it. The Queen Bee Bolt instantly stabbed through its chest, nailing it to the sarcophagus. His shadow weapon shot the King Bee Bolt. With the two poisons stacking, a terrifying burst of damage arose, however it was much lower than expected. After all, an undead had very high resistance to poison

The two bolts formed a cross, nailing the General Level Zombie to the sarcophagus and causing a short stun. Zhang ZhengXiong quickly charged over and followed up with a Holy Judgement. His heavy axe emitted a white light as it struck three heavy blows. The third strike was a critical, which dealt terrifying damage to the zombie. The length of the stun was increased! The heavy axe hacked, leaving behind deep wounds! Little Ye Tian also seized this chance to send her Pearls of Light over to deal damage. It began to emit white smoke under the onslaught of holy attacks, as if salt was sprinkled on its wounds.

Ye Cang swung his black pike and charged over with a Dashing Straight thrust. Adding on Flame Blade and Fire Lotus, his Multiple Straight Thrusts caused bursts of flame. Seeing that it was showing signs of breaking out of stun, he turned and sent a shadow to support FrozenCloud, who appeared to be having a hard time taking on two. The shadow charged with a Dashing Straight Thrust which stabbed through its eye, then kicked it back into the

flames.

“Team Leader, thanks...” FrozenCloud sighed in relief. These zombies were too vicious. It felt like it would be impossible to kill them.

Ye Cang’s two hands began to glow with flames. He cast a Light Strike Array at the four that ThornyRose, FrozenBlood, and SpyingBlade were holding off. He did his best to aim it further away. ThornyRose was about to chase, when she felt the fire under her feet become excited. She quickly retreated a step, just in time to see the light and flames rise past the tip of her nose. She was this close to being injured. She turned and glowered at Ye Cang, “Careful with your area of attack skills! Especially such a strong one!”

“Its fine, I calculated it. At most, only you would have been killed in the explosion...” Ye Cang waved her off, telling her to not worry.

F\*\*k! What do you mean at most, only I would have been killed in the explosion!? It was on purpose! You’re trying to make it look like an accident on purpose! You want to kill me that much!?

Ye Cang continued to cast Flame Burst. He threw it and sent DyedLily’s two targets flying. As for DyedLily, she only got hit by the shockwave which knocked her back a few steps while causing no more than 10 damage. She looked at Ye Cang, who hadn’t even looked over. Such a keen person. I was having some trouble, two abyss-elite zombies are just too tough, and my equipment and skills aren’t as good as ThornyRose’s, let alone Brother Big Diamond, who is solo tanking the boss... She nodded towards Ye Cang, “Thanks...”

“You’re my future sister in law, it’s only natural...” Ye Cang smiled.

Zhang ZhengXiong’s morale immediately spiked. “Bro, she is!? She agreed!? Forget the boss, let’s go to the civil administration

center.”

“Get lost!” DyedLily roared unhappily.

Zhang ZhengXiong’s left arm struck the boss with a heavy punch, sending a burst of light into the boss’s injured chest. After Rainbow Slam, with his hand still inside the boss, he activated the ring’s Desperate Prayer, healing everyone while also dealing impressive damage to the undead. It even dealt continuous damage over time. He then turned and looked towards ThornyRose. His eyes seemed to say, ‘It’s up to you, Sister Rose.’

“.....”

During her difficult fight, ThornyRose’s legs suddenly went weak. Hey, you’re still fighting the boss! Can you not be distracted?! You haven’t even taken out that hand yet. As she thought until there, Lele disappeared! So that’s why! She watched as Lele appeared in the boss’s blind spot with a Handcart Homerun! Zhang ZhengXiong calmly squatted, dodging the swing. The boss was sent flying, dragging Zhang ZhengXiong with him. Lin Le chased after them with a Handcart Charge! Handcart Tornado! Sword Drawing Arts! Whirlwind Strike! Rising Slash! Armed Destruction! As he fell, he flung his bag, burying the boss in molotovs. He stabbed a sword into the boss’ chest and began laughing towards the ceiling.

“Who’s next!!!”

# Chapter 403: Shadow Frost

---

Hey! The system hasn't announced the boss' death yet!? ThornyRose looked at Lin Le's haughty laughter, speechless. She was about to warn him, "Lele! It's not..."

From the flames, a cold axe covered in shadows instantly sent Lin Le flying to the far wall. When he hit the wall, it exploded into shadowy ice crystals. Lin Le was left with not even 10% health. He crawled up from the ground in pain.

"That hurt like hell..."

Whose fault is it!? Would it kill you to be less of a showoff!? ThornyRose covered her forehead. Sometimes, Lele was so strong that it made one feel numb, but other times, he was so stupid it made one want to smash their head into a wall. She looked at the cold air coming off the boss. The flames on its body were extinguished by the shadow frost energy. The scene was enough to have people cry out in fear.

"Speed things up! Activate the tactical skill!" ThornyRose roared.

Ye Cang casually waved his hand. "Tactics! Pursuit!"

Immediately, everyone realized that not only had their movement and attack speed increased more than before, they could even choose one out of two single use skills; Charge or Escape.

SpyingBlade raised his brows. Oh~, this skill really is very valuable. It doesn't even lose to a heroic tier skill. This skill is focused on supporting the team. It even has a passive speed-increasing aura.

Zhang ZhengXiong quickly engaged the boss again with a Barbaric Charge. He thought to himself, the daily use of one out of four abilities of the ring is already been used up. I still have one Desperate Prayer. Should I save it? Or directly use it as an area

attack.

ThornyRose noticed that Zhang ZhengXiong was planning to use Desperate Prayer. “Don’t use it! Save it! Its signature move hasn’t been used yet. Leave the tactical skill’s Charge and Escape as an emergency teleport. Don’t use it lightly!”

Zhang ZhengXiong nodded and began to compete with the boss, displaying his might as Thorns and Roses’ true strongest tank. ThornyRose activated her charge towards DyedLily’s two enemies. DyedLily also charged, swapping positions towards ThornyRose’s one. Lin Le crushed a gold coin in his hand, activating Power of Money and Money Maintenance. His health rapidly healed. He faced one of the nearby zombies in the fire, and activated a Rising Slash. Knockup failed? Trade Secret! Shamelessness! The knock up triggered again! Failed! However, Lin Le didn’t stop there, Shamelessness! Success! The next time he could use it would be in 30 seconds. The zombie was sent flying by Lin Le’s single handed swing. ThornyRose turned and looked at his attack. That was probably that Shamelessness talent. It was too messed up. It wasn’t useful for skills that would definitely succeed, but for those with a chance to succeed, this talent could have it retry twice every 30 seconds. It really matched the name, shameless...

TN: Apologies, my previous translation of Lin Le’s Trade Secret skill was incorrect. It allows Lin Le to retry any failed probability up to twice in 30 seconds.

After Lin Le knocked the zombie back, he didn’t pursue, instead he charged towards one of the zombies near Ye Cang, that was escaping the flames. Ye Cang also using Dashing Straight Thrust at Lin Le’s airborne zombie performing a mid-air combo. Multiple Straight Thrusts! Straight Thrust! He pulled out his ballista and pointed it at an abyss-elite zombie on the ground; Enchant Arrow - Fire, a fire arrow nailed it in the head, killing it.

FrozenBlood soloed one without much trouble, but the zombie’s health was very high, making her feel helpless. She’d been fighting



it for a long time already. She saw Zhang ZhengXiong fighting the boss. Although he was at a disadvantage in strength and was pushed back a few meters, but with Team Leader's tactics skill, he vigorously charged back with Berserk Tackle. The battle made one's blood boil, and slowly, he even managed to push the boss back. Health-wise, that little girl Little Ye Tian's support was very reliable, especially that Healing Chain which was truly awesome. It healed Shaking Bear, then would immediately bounce to the nearby SpyingBlade, then finally to herself. It even healed a pretty good amount. By the time it reached her, it was equivalent to a Healing Light, even though it was only half the healing of the first target. Chaining skills normally become progressively weaker, often by between 25-50%. The strength of her heal spell probably had to do with her attributes and the skill level as well as her talents.

Due to Ye Cang's tactics skill that allowed them to attack like a storm, five of the elite zombies had already been dealt with. The General Level Zombie suddenly burst out with shadow frost energy that was impossible to dodge. It enveloped the entire room and its body with shadowy ice crystals. Everyone got their speed reduced by 15% and they received 35 damage. Not even one second after, the General Level Zombie roared, causing another burst of shadow frost energy to ripple out which swept past them again. There was absolutely no way to dodge! Everyone received another 35 dark and ice damage. The debuff also stacked, reducing their speed by 30%! Zhang ZhengXiong saw the chill in its eyes before it once again roared, sending yet another burst of energy. Everyone received 50 dark and ice damage! The debuff stacked again, a third time! A 50% reduction in speed of both attack and movement! They even entered an intimidated state... The sea of flames was also put out by the shadow frost energy, turning the room into a dark ice cellar...

ThornyRose thought to herself; Not good! Everyone has been hit by the intimidation effect. Eh!? Lele and Shaking Bear don't have

it, probably because their Will is high! If only Ye Cang also wasn't affected, his drum might have a chance of cancelling the intimidation effect!

Ye Cang activated Swift Retreat, dispelling the negative effect! He slapped the drum at his waist. A soundwave woke everyone. Lin Le threw out molotovs like he was throwing out money, pulling the room's temperature back up like a furnace. The shadow frost began to weaken.

ThornyRose looked at Zhang ZhengXiong who wasn't even affected by the three stacks. His will was extremely high; just one talent gave up to 10%! Let alone the fact that he has more from his other talents and equipment. Even more importantly, his class was one of two with the highest base will! A priest! Priests were always strong against mental effects! Even though he was an unorthodox priest, his auras gave him even more will. The other class was the illusionist! A class that used spirit magic to attack and debuff.

Fang Ci was a bit embarrassed as he looked at Bali who was afraid of the flames. There were very few things more depressing than using an undead to fight an undead in a sea of flames. Even more depressing would be an undead fighting an undead on holy grounds. Undead were practically immune to curse type skills, or at least they would reduce the effect by half...

Wang's fighting strength was also reduced by the environment. He was always dependent on his summon, but there wasn't enough space outside the sea of flames, and he couldn't use any AOE water magic. He could only deal a pitiful amount of damage. At least he wasn't reduced to joining Weak Sauce and Little Blue Feather who were cheering at the doorway...

ThornyRose let out a breath of relief, as there was no reduction in members! It was all thanks to Desperate Prayer saving them from a desperate situation. This was such a good skill, especially when fighting the undead. Not only can it cause large area damage and effects, it can also save the team. At a distance, Ye Cang was

showing off by chanting and making hand seals like some incantatrix. He had been casting his incantation for quite a while...

# Chapter 404: Frozen Corpse Eyes

---

“All magical effects! Break!” Ye Cang raised his hand high and shouted. Mark of the Wild was cast on the entire group. Everyone was affected by the warm nature energy. It used up nearly half of Ye Cang’s mana.

Mark of the Wild - Beginner Level: Instant blessing. Surrounding allies gain +15 to all attributes, +50 nature resistance, +15 defence, and restore 1 health every 4 seconds for 3 hours.

“You held back such a powerful buff only to use it now!!” ThornyRose’s chest tightened. She thought it would be some big killing move, but it turned out to be a powerful blessing. She sighed, “How long is the cast time?”

“Instant...” Ye Cang shrugged.

ThornyRose immediately froze. Then why were you chanting there for so long!? Her body trembled; her rage was going off the charts. “You...”

“Don’t let down your guard, we’re still fighting the boss... Really!” Ye Cang threw her a dirty look, then calmly grabbed his ballista and began to aim.

ThornyRose’s two eyes were nearly shooting flames as her gaze locked onto his butt.

FrozenBlood quickly pulled her away and joined the others in surrounding the boss. “Calm down, Team Leader had his reasons for the incantations...”

ThornyRose stopped her anger and asked doubtfully, “What reason?”

“To show off...” FrozenBlood calmly shrugged as she unleashed a storm of attacks on an elite zombie.

“.....” ThornyRose felt like she couldn’t breathe. What kind of

people do I keep meeting...

After the elite zombies were cleared up, the general level zombie was surrounded. With Zhang ZhengXiong's powerful suppression, it suffered everyone's killing blows. Finally, Lin Le spun and unleashed a Sword Drawing Art, cutting it in half. Unfortunately, GreenDew had approached the boss' back in order to help defend it from Team Leader's cursed hands but had her head cut off by Lin Le blade. FrozenBlood looked up and watched GreenDew's head fly into the distance. When Lele attacks, I usually hide far away, because god knows what he'll do. It wasn't just once or twice that I nearly died to him. If my reaction speed was any slower...

"Brother Lil'White, I think I killed a random stranger by accident..." Lin Le rested his giant sword on his shoulder, and blinked his eyes at the distant head.

ThornyRose facepalmed. Lele's inability to remember some people's faces left her dumbfounded. GreenDew had already been with them so long...

"Lele, who is she..." FrozenBlood pulled over Little Jade and pointed at her.

"Little Jade!" Lin Le smiled.

"GreenDew's existence doesn't even compare to Little Jade's..." FrozenBlood muttered. Little Jade shivered. Why did hearing that make her feel so upset.

"Lele, that's our comrade. I think she was called GreenD\*ck..." Ye Cang smiled as he reached towards the corpse.

She's called GreenDew! ThornyRose speechlessly pounced at him. Wu Na also stood between him and the boss, protecting it from being violated. They gave him an abyss-elite corpse to satisfy his cravings. Everyone watched him touch here and there, even flipping it over, yet nothing came out. They sighed deeply.

"His stuff is probably in the one beside him. During the battle, I

saw the two of them whispering to each other in the fire. He must have transferred his stuff...” Ye Cang said earnestly, and then reached for another corpse. However, he was blocked by everyone. ThornyRose and the women all roared, “Letting you loot one is already treating you well! Don’t push it!!”

“Hah, you’ll regret it. You’ve once again let a godly artifact slip through your fingers...” Ye Cang calmly got up and sighed. Everyone rolled their eyes, wondering where his baseless confidence comes from...

Ye Cang took the items Lin Le passed over and began to distribute them. One gold equipment, 5 distinguished, and 2 skill books. The gold quality equipment was an accessory which everyone desired...

Frozen Corpse Eye (Gold - Abyss - Uncommon)

Category: Accessory

Requirements: None

+7 All Attributes

+8 Defence

Additional Dark and Ice Damage: 10 - 12 (Melee) / +10 Dark or Ice

Magic Effect (Spells)

Active - Shadow Frost Roar: Explode with three waves of shadow frost energy that emits out in a ring shape. Each hit deals 25 dark and ice damage with a chance to cause knockback, and add one stack of debuff. Three stacks will trigger the skill effect, intimidating the target for three seconds and dealing 50 dark and ice damage. Cooldown: 1 hour.

ThornyRose was moved. It not only added defence, it even had a hybrid attribute skill like Shadow Frost Roar. Even more noteworthy was that the skill was the same as the one the boss used, just slightly weaker. The range was probably also smaller.

“About the accessory...” Ye Cang held an eyeball which emitted

cold air in his hand.

“The spellcasters can temporarily do without. This accessory is better for a physical attacker. I recommend giving it to Shaking Bear...” SpyingBlade suggested. Shaking Bear had an accessory, but one can never have too many. Let alone the fact that besides Ye Cang and FrozenBlood, even Lin Le didn’t have one yet.

“I agree...” ThornyRose sighed. The all attributes bonus was too fitting for his all-rounded class. Intelligence and wisdom were useless for herself, but for him, it would have a pretty good effect. This accessory, besides Shaking Bear, only that lowlife could use it to its full potential, as he was also an all-rounder.

No one objected. DyedLily also nodded. Giving it to him would indeed be the best choice. He was the current party’s as well as the guild’s main tank. His equipment and skills were both impressive. ThornyRose even said that this tank was advanced from a priest, thus, he could also make use of wisdom and intelligence. The accessory’s active skill was also more fitting for someone on the front lines so that it could reach as far as possible...

“Then I won’t be polite. Haha...” Zhang ZhengXiong equipped the accessory and laughed.

“The next accessory is Lele’s...” Lin Le snorted, feeling wronged.

Ye Cang distributed the distinguished equipment. Fang Ci got two, the other three went to ThornyRose’s side. Next was the skill books.

Shadow Frost Strike (Uncommon - Abyss):

Perform a heavy strike clad in shadow frost energy, dealing 185 damage + 50% of your dark and ice damage (elemental damage receives bonuses from both physical stats and spell power). Causes 25% reduction in movement and attack, and 15 armor reduction for 5 seconds. Also has a chance to knockback and stun.

Cost: 25 energy, 15 mana. Cooldown: 5 minutes.

## Dark Ice Blade (Uncommon - Abyss):

Adds shadow frost energy to your weapon, giving an additional 22 dark and ice damage. On hit, reduces armor by 10 points and speed by 15% for 4 seconds. Debuff can stack, every stack increases the armor reduction by 5 points, and speed by 5%. Dark Ice Blade lasts 4 strikes or 3 minutes.

Cost: 13 mana. Cooldown: 3 minutes.



# Chapter 405: Outside the Ravine of Death

---

ThornyRose looked at the two skill books and knew they were going to be taken away. The only one suited to use them was the damn lowlife with his high spell power. The two skills would make him much stronger. Was he going to benefit again? No!

“You can have the two skills for 100 gold!”

Little Ye Tian generously counted the number of Thorns and Roses members present and deducted their share from their debt. Ye Cang decisively took the skill books and learned them. His melee ability powered up once again. Now he had a more stable melee control ability. He swung his pike, creating an explosion of shadow frost, which blossomed gorgeously. “Tsk tsk, not bad...”

ThornyRose sighed. Reducing their debt was better than nothing. She looked around and found the sword fragment. They could now return and turn it in.

“What are your plans now?”

“Walk the lands with my sword; rid the world of evil...” Ye Cang raised his pike and said, looking solemn. He retrieved his composite heavy bow from ElegantFragrance, and put his ballista back in his bag.

F\*\*k off! ThornyRose couldn't help roaring in her heart. She was only a step away from going berserk. Whatever, the quest was completed perfectly, and there are plenty of things to do in Black Rock City. She took a deep breath.

“Then you guys go on ahead. I plan to move my guild's base to Bal village, it's a good place to train and is rich in resources. Most importantly, there are few players...”

Little Ye Tian nodded. It was true; this place was like a treasure trove. There would probably be even more guilds that come, so letting Thorns and Roses set up camp there was a good choice. At

least they were allies.

“Ok, but they have to help with construction and management...”

“I know that. As for the profits...” ThornyRose and Little Ye Tian began to discuss things that Ye Cang didn’t really understand. Although he often talked about projects with people in the Commandments, but he never looked at the agreements, because he might fall asleep leaving him open to sneak attacks. However, Ye Cang could still understand the big picture...

Leaving the cemetery, ThornyRose increased her debt to the wolves in sheep’s clothing in order to obtain a few barrels of magic spring water and a few disgusting, very disgusting, and extremely disgusting fried maggot like things, which could be preserved for a long time.

Ye Cang watched DyedLily’s departing butt and sighed. “I still haven’t personally confirmed it, but she definitely has good birthing hips. A’Xiong, work a bit harder...”

“Of course. Bro...” Zhang ZhengXiong patted his own chest and grinned.

In the distance, DyedLily didn’t know why, but she felt a chill on her butt. She turned and saw Zhang ZhengXiong, Ye Cang, Lin Le, and Little Ye Tian all pointing at her, but didn’t know what they were pointing for. However, that mysterious chill persisted. Those people were all nutjobs. Suddenly, her whole body shivered. She quickly caught up with ThornyRose while covering her rear.

FrozenCloud saw what Ye Cang’s group was doing. Those guys... She looked up and saw Zhang ZhengXiong staring at DyedLily, and her heart felt strangely uneasy. She struck at him with her elbow.

Zhang ZhengXiong uncrossed his arms, and opened his palm, easily blocking her. “Lil’Dino, I know your feelings for me, but think of the children. In order for them to look as handsome as me,

hah...”

“Sorry Lil’Dino. Although we’re good brothers, but I promised his sister that I would find him a pretty wife. I gave my word...” Ye Cang said, looking at her with a depressed expression.

“.....”

To the side, Wu Na and the others felt dizzy, especially SpyingBlade. She was FrozenBlood’s sister, one of the top beauties in the capital’s acting department. Does he not know? Lin Le saw Fang Ci and the others’ confusion, so took out FrozenCloud’s ‘pre plastic surgery’ picture. Wang and Fang Ci immediately took a step back. They looked to FrozenCloud with encouraging expressions. SpyingBlade was covered in cold sweat. So you all think she looked like that before... However, this prank of god, where did this heavenly disaster of a face come from.

FrozenCloud’s feelings were complicated. She was afraid of their reaction if she told them the truth. Nana once said what she hated the most were liars. She liked Ye Cang because he would never truly cheat her. At most, he’d talk some rubbish, but was there a difference? She also liked their sincerity, like how Shaking Bear treated her. He was always very open and frank with his feelings. He would openly say that he didn’t like dinosaurs. As for herself, she had relied on lies to get close to them...

FrozenCloud sighed. “I would never like a bear like you!”

After speaking, she pulled Wu Na and Little Ye Tian away, and walked at the very front.

“A’Xiong, why don’t you just...” Ye Cang couldn’t take it. He looked at Zhang ZhengXiong and suggested.

Zhang ZhengXiong mind was rattled. Although he wasn’t exactly handsome, but he didn’t have to lower himself to that degree. A normal person would do. “Bro, my sister wouldn’t be able to rest easy...”

“.....” Ye Cang speechlessly sighed. “Lil’Dino... It would be good if we didn’t know how she looked before her surgery...”

“Actually, sister Lil’Dino is...” Fang Ci wanted to say something, but Zhang ZhengXiong looked at him with contempt and shoved the picture at him. “If it was you...”

Fang Ci found himself without a response. He was completely unable to retort for a long time.

SpyingBlade just smiled bitterly. It was better for him not to butt in. FrozenCloud probably had her reasons for not telling them...

Ye Cang’s party just had the ruins in the ravine left to explore. They returned to Bal village and set out from the north. According to the written records, Little Ye Tian led the way to the edge of Ravine of Death.

“It’s not inside the ravine, it should be somewhere on the upper part, we just don’t know whether it’s to the left or the right. Look for a sea of flowers...”

Zhang ZhengXiong looked at the ravine entrance. The sound of wind numbed their hearts, because the wind carried traces of wailing and cries of beasts. To the two sides of the ravine entrance were jungles that sloped upwards.

“Since we’re here, why don’t we enter the ravine and explore a bit. There might be some treasures. There probably haven’t been any people exploring here yet...”

“Alright, however for now, our first priority should be to find Jam’s ruins. On the way back, we can go through the ravine...” Ye Cang calmly said, then began to head towards the left. Everyone followed closely.

Ye Cang petted Little Blue Feather’s head. The little cyan-eyed falcon flew into the air and let out a cry which echoed for a long time.

“There’s no sea of flowers on this side so far...” Ye Cang brought

everyone through the jungle towards the steep hill, which was sparsely littered with trees. Most of it was grass though. The further they looked, the sparser the vegetation became. Even the grass had trouble growing, leaving bald spots of earth...

Ye Cang came to the cliff side. He looked at the middle of the ravine. Along the cliffs, there were many vines and brambles. He pointed to the other side of the ravine. It was a bit higher, and the others couldn't see as far. Little Blue Feather flew over and let out another cry.

“It saw buildings, but no flowers...” Ye Cang translated.

## Chapter 406: Withered Shade

---

“Let’s go...” Ye Cang brought everyone to the side, and jumped down the jungled slope towards the other side. Little Blue Feather called out again.

Ye Cang ascertained the position and everyone quickly travelled over. They arrived at the top of the other side of the ravine and began to run through the grass until they arrived at a boundless withered field. Ye Cang stopped. He raised a hand and Little Blue Feather turned back and landed on his arm. It hopped onto Ye Cang’s shoulder, and began to leisurely clean its feathers.

Ye Cang touched the black wilted stems which immediately scattered into ashes. What was going on here?

Little Ye Tian also squatted down and examined it. “It’s similar to Really New Village, caused by the power of corruption. I think the power of nature here was reversed, turning it into a withering power...”

SpyingBlade wiped the black ashes off his hands, then slowly got up and looked at the ruined structures which were up against a cliff. “We’ll know if we go in...”

Walking through the ashes of the blackened flowers, everyone could feel the land’s sorrow. They were even hit by a debuff, reducing their defence by 25%, and healing rate by 50%. With their healing ability reduced, Little Ye Tian frowned. The curse on this land was a bit excessive. It actually cut their important healing in half and prevented their natural health regeneration. The effect said that any recovery effect from equipment or otherwise was completely prohibited. If they lost health, it wouldn’t recover without healing consumables or skills. Supplies wise, they were still sufficient. The most annoying thing was that healing effects were weakened and they even lost 25% of their defence. This sort of percentage reduction didn’t mean that their damage taken

would increase by 25%. That 25% could be a huge difference depending on the strength of the attack. Some attacks could even double in damage...

SpyingBlade was also wary of this unfavorable location... He remained vigilant of every direction. He checked the position of the sun and saw that it was already almost dusk, so their exploration would go into the night...

Ye Cang looked around with his Eagle Eyes but didn't see anything abnormal. However, a strange sense of danger kept him on guard. This field of ashes was dreadful...

As dusk arrived, the golden glow simply made the place look even more desolate. Ye Cang took off his hood and let Little Blue Feather play in it. His messy white hair was exposed. He stroked Little Blue Feather's long, beautiful crest. Along with a sudden wind, this scene became even more dazzling. With the wind carrying the ashes, it gave an almost heartbreaking feeling to those who saw. FrozenCloud looked at Ye Cang. Team Leader might have no integrity, is always doing dishonest work, and has a vile character, but he gives off this feeling that makes others want to follow him...

...

## Bal Village

ThornyRose was setting up her guild's base, in no rush to use the guild charter. She looked towards ElegantFragrance, "How is the auction house going?"

"Of the two auction houses, we control one of them. As for Team Leader's other property, we don't have the manpower so we have left it to the Freedom Alliance. Tomorrow will be the opening..." ElegantFragrance reported.

"As expected of the fiancée..." FrozenBlood sighed. ThornyRose wanted to tear apart the face of this woman who was always exaggerating the bad side of things. FrozenBlood glanced at her

then took out her phone. “Today, Sister Zhen...”

ThornyRose endured the depression. I’ll bear it. They are clearly born from the same mother, yet why is she so different from FrozenDino who can grin and bear it, suffer in silence, patiently... Not good, I almost messed it up, it’s FrozenCloud...

As night fell.

Ye Cang stopped walking. His danger sense were screaming. He faintly frowned, “Everyone careful. The surrounding ashes are beginning to stir...”

SpyingBlade also noticed that ever since night fell, something had been happening on this field.

Little Ye Tian went over all the possibilities in her mind, but it was still unknown. The information was too limited. She became vigilant and mounted the kagu bug, Little Rations.

In the dark of night, with their limited vision, they could only see the endless shadows... As for Ye Cang with his night vision, he saw that the withered ashes were releasing a black smoke, which became an endless amount of black energy silhouette. He identified it.

Withered Shade (Uncommon - Rare): They exist in withered fields. Along with the passage of time, hatred gathers and forms an aggressive nocturnal shape. A complex unknown creature formed from a mix of energy, the withered ashes of plants, and spirits. They normally appear in groups. They know low-level dark magic, while the higher ranked ones are more terrifying. On death, they can be used for medicine, cooking, forging, as a spell component, etc. Although their uses are many, but they are one of the rarer shadow creatures, especially the high ranked ones.

Everyone looked at the numerous shades and their hearts sank. With this amount, let alone one against ten, even one against a hundred is far from enough. Little Ye Tian began to calculate



rapidly. This would be problematic. These types of energy creatures often had high physical resistance, but low magical resistance, other than dark magic of course. Ye Cang raised his brows. Wanting to get through them using ordinary means was impossible. There was only one way. He looked at his group standing among the ashes. There were less withered shades guarding the south. His two hands began to glow with the light of a Light Strike Array. “A’Xiong! Little Tian! Bring everyone towards the south. I’ll open the way for you! Leave this place to me! Get as far as you can and find a place to defend!”

Wu Na and the others didn’t understand. Zhang ZhengXiong and SpyingBlade quickly urged everyone towards the south. The light and flames of Light Strike Array exploded in that direction. Wu Na and the others saw Zhang ZhengXiong and SpyingBlade charge into the remaining flames without hesitation. The moment they entered, the healing and armor debuff disappeared. As they retreated, Little Ye Tian figured that Ye Cang must have something up his sleeve, which was why he wanted everyone to get away. She began to heal Fang Ci and Wang who had the least health, trying to keep them alive to the best of her ability. If they weren’t in the flames, a lot of healing would have been wasted.

As the withered shades were afraid of fire, they didn’t enter. They could only follow the group with their eyes as they forced their way out of the enclosure. The group ran towards the south and arrived at a normal grass field.

Ye Cang took out his ballista and unleashed a Meteor Shot! An attack brushed past him as he dodged a shade. He stored his ballista while drawing his bow. He pointed the arrowhead at an incoming shade and unleashed an Enchanted Arrow - Fire Arrow. Both hands were used to defend his position. His left hand tightly gripped his bow, while his right hand unleashed arrows. The arrows pierced through what he guessed was a head. The arrow went right out the other side of its head when it was released from

the bowstring. Against an incoming attack, he disappeared with Shadow Step. A Flame Burst was cast. Then his pike swung, stabbing out like a dragon. Ice crystals and flame lotuses blossomed around him. Explosive Arrow, Multishot, Ice Shards, his skills flowed smoothly. Everyone could see the results of Ye Cang's gorgeous 'dance'. FrozenCloud smiled bitterly. He hadn't been hit even once...

## Chapter 407: Good Karma

---

The flames gradually declined. Even if Ye Cang was hit, he was still in no rush. Without messing up his rhythm, he dodged an attack with a turn of his body, then leaned and dodged a shade that suddenly appeared.

Ye Cang fought with all his strength. Whenever possible, he unleashed his spells. His skills were used on every cooldown. Finally, when he was out of resources, he still did the best he could without mana. As his energy was recovering and all his skills were on cooldown, he would dodge and counter-attack. In the end, he was engulfed by the numerous shades.

“Dodge!” SpyingBlade pulled Wu Na and Little Ye Tian away towards a recess near the cliff. Zhang ZhengXiong also pulled FrozenCloud, and had Fang Ci and Wang hide in a ditch. Lin Le and Little Ren squeeze in with SpyingBlade’s group. Lin Le pushed his butt into Little Ye Tian’s face, making her clench her teeth in rage.

There was the sound of a violent explosion. Even with their high dark resistance, the withered shades were still dispersed by this explosion. In a flash, the area thousands of meters around Ye Cang was clear of withered shades. There were only a few hundred left on the perimeter.

“Father!!” Little Ye Tian guessed the reason for that explosion, and saw the message stating Ye Cang’s death! She howled, while Lin Le continued to squish her with his butt.

FrozenCloud sighed. Team Leader had died in battle, but since when could he explode!? It was so powerful and terrifying. God, unless one had a special skill, it would be guaranteed death in PVP. She saw her experience bar increase sharply...

“Don’t get excited. Team Leader can not only explode, he can also revive once, but the cooldown is a few days...” SpyingBlade smiled.

Hearing that, Little Ye Tian relaxed. So that was it. It must be the effects of that two in one ring. Then she thought back to that withered field. They should have waited for nightfall to explore. Then they could fight their way in from the edge, instead of being encircled. She began to blame herself for failing to realize this and wasting her father's precious trump card, exposing it in front everyone.

After the shockwave, everyone looked at Ye Cang who was running over from within the ashes. Several hundred withered shades were chasing his sorry figure. They heard a shout from the distance, "What are you lazy people watching for. Get over here and help!!"

Zhang ZhengXiong brought everyone to welcome them. The battle was extremely messy and fierce. They had to face the withered shades while affected by the terrain debuff. Against the rain of shadow arrows, Zhang ZhengXiong charged through them and killed into their ranks. The couple of arrows that hit him had taken out half his health. He activated Desperate Prayer, healing everyone while also intimidating the shades.

Ye Cang used his bow from a distance while moving rapidly, using flips and dives to dodge the shadow arrows. However, even while running, flipping and diving, he could still rapidly hit his target as usual. FrozenCloud watched, stunned. She activated her qi defence and followed Zhang ZhengXiong, cutting deep into the enemy's ranks. SpyingBlade switched his longsword for a fire element one and drifted around Zhang ZhengXiong's surroundings. Lin Le was depressed. His full strength build wasn't very effective right now, so he pouted and changed into his second form... Arsonist form. He began to hoot wildly while throwing molotovs.

Little Ye Tian worked hard to keep Zhang ZhengXiong, SpyingBlade, and FrozenCloud's health topped up. She didn't have the time to care about the others. Wang was pitiful... always

sticking to his water elemental's butt. Fang Ci was crawling on the ground while controlling Bali. The skeletons he summoned didn't even have time to stand up before being smashed apart by shadow arrows. Little Ye Tian threw out Healing Chains and Pearls of Light to heal the three in the front row.

Ye Cang saw that his Light Strike Array was ready again and laughed coldly. Die. "A'Xiong, prepare to use your skills, I'm going to blow you up!"

"I got it bro!" Zhang ZhengXiong replied and prepared his life-saving skills. FrozenCloud and SpyingBlade quickly retreated. Violent fire and light enveloped Zhang ZhengXiong and nearly a hundred withered shades. Zhang ZhengXiong activated Berserk Recovery, rapidly restoring his health, quickly returning to his state before the Light Strike Array.

FrozenCloud looked at Zhang ZhengXiong in the raging flames with his giant axe and arm guard, standing there like a god of war. Her face began to turn a bit red. SpyingBlade feigned a sigh and made a smile like Ye Cang's indifferent one. "If only you weren't a Lil'Dino..."

FrozenCloud was speechless as she looked at SpyingBlade with his evil smile. That guy definitely knew her from before! She rolled her eyes at him. "Don't tell team leader and them. I... I..."

"I know..." SpyingBlade nodded and patted her on the shoulder. "Good luck..."

He finished speaking then killed his way into the fire.

Good luck? Good luck your sister! I'm still a beauty you know! Why would I need luck to get a damn playboy!? Bah, you being with Falling Star's sister Qian is what I call luck! Tch... FrozenCloud thought to herself sadly.

As the fight reached its end, everyone was spent. Only after exhausting their mana had they managed to deal with the 300

withered shades. They needed to replenish both their health and mana. Suddenly, the withered earth began to emit a large amount of black smoke. A 20+ meter tall shadow creature gradually took shape. Ye Cang broke out in cold sweat. We don't even get time to rest? It would be strange not to wipe...

FrozenCloud smiled bitterly as she watched the gradually forming enormous shade. This was unquestionably an event boss, which appeared randomly. The type that might appear or might never. Just how bad was their Team Leader's luck. Were they going to be sent back to Bal Village?

"Code Red!" Ye Cang began to escape. Everyone rushed frantically behind him. Even SpyingBlade who had fought seas of NPCs was unable to fight any further. Only god knows if it had a perversely OP final move or berserk mode.

Ye Cang heard a roar from behind. Countless shadow arrows fell from the sky like rain. Everyone quickly found a place to hide. The moment it stopped, they once again began to run, escaping the withered region. The boss didn't seem to want to chase any further, but Ye Cang noticed that the withered earth was slowly encroaching towards them. "Everyone quickly heal and buff up with food..."

"Then let's run a bit further..." Little Ye Tian thought of how every time they ate, they would rarely end up in a clear-headed state.

"While recovering, see if there is anyone nearby to help. This is an event boss and only us won't be enough. We need at least a dozen more to come share the burden..." SpyingBlade shook his head.

"Asking for help is a shame upon our status as members of Happy Firmaments..." Ye Cang stroked his chin and contemplated for not even a second. "ThornyRose. Coordinates XXX,YYY, get over here and help. Not coming!? Return our money! Now that's how it

should be, hurry...”

Then he made another call. “Brother PureSoul, where are you? In the cave north of Bal Village?! Right! Do you remember our sword fight in the public bath? Here’s the thing; there’s a troublesome matter concerning an event boss. Come help. Consider it repaying a favor... Division!? Let’s do this; we’ll give you one piece of equipment. No!? Hah, so you were such a fickle untrustworthy person... I’m going to complain to Brother CloudDragon about how we fell out after our sword fight. It’s a promise! Brother PureSoul sure is a good friend. I’m at XXX, YYY. Hurry over!”

Ye Cang calmly sighed. “My karma is so good...”

“.....” FrozenCloud and the others looked at him, their minds in chaos.

# Chapter 408: Rabbis

---

Ye Cang and the others moved to a faraway hill and prepared to eat. Everyone watched as he began to cook, and he even used new innovative ideas. They each prepared themselves.

The first one over was NalanPureSoul who saw the familiar smoke coming from the top of a little hill and smelled that invigorating stench. It was so invigorating that he wanted to throw up. NalanPureSoul, NalanMoon, and NalanMight stopped.

“I don’t want to go. We’re so far, yet the smell is already so strong...” NalanMight’s scalp tingled.

“Let’s go...” NalanPureSoul sighed and brought his people to the hill. He saw the corpses. Little Ye Tian, who was the last to eat, saw NalanPureSoul and the others as she was losing her consciousness. She struggled to take out the sign that she had prepared. The words “Help yourself!!” was stuck to the pot, then her mind went dark, and she collapsed.

NalanPureSoul and the others couldn’t even block out the smell by pinching their noses. He looked at the food effect. It was a must. All three foods added resistances. The added dark resistance was especially high. It was clear that the boss they were going to fight must be related. He looked with love, hate, and admiration at the nearby white hair. Then he resolutely ate the three meals and collapsed to the ground. NalanMoon and the others saw that PureSoul had already eaten. They trembled as they approached their execution...

ThornyRose’s group arrived soon after. They were greeted by the sight of three big pots, a group of people lying on the floor, as well as the sign on the pot. They immediately broke out in cold sweat... The women all gulped and began to look at each other. Little Jade held onto FrozenBlood and shook her head. FrozenBlood just sighed. She served herself all three. “Follow after me!”



As she spoke, Little Jade thought she was going to take the lead to eat first, but FrozenBlood grabbed her and forced it down her mouth. Looking at Little Jade, who was struggling on the ground, FrozenBlood acted as if she had done a good thing. “No need for thanks...”

GreenDew saw FrozenBlood look over to her, and began to sweat profusely. She decisively did it herself.

Everyone woke up one after the other. Their first reaction was to dig at their throats.

“This time, while I was improving it, I made a little mistake. However, the results weren’t bad...” Ye Cang looked at everyone and assured himself.

Not bad!? This is a little mistake!? Everyone all stared at Ye Cang.

“Brother PureSoul, you left before our great sword fight in the bathroom. When you have time, let’s fight again...” Ye Cang looked to NalanPureSoul and said.

NalanPureSoul’s face turned red. “Who wants to cross swords with you in the bathroom!? Brother PaleSnow, stop playing around.”

“Sword fight? Bathroom?” NalanMoon asked doubtfully.

“Haha, you don’t know? It’s a game that’s been around since ancient times. It’s rumored to be the best game for a man and another man to compare strengths with!” Lin Le began to explain.

“There’s a game like that? Why haven’t I heard of it? How do you play?” NalanMoon asked curiously. A game from ancient times sounded really interesting.

By the side, ThornyRose shook her head and thought, you don’t want to know!

“Everyone just has to be in a bathroom and pull out the holy sword at your crotch. Then compare lengths! Compare width!

Then fight and compare hardness! Hah, it's a very cruel game. In the past, that hateful Little Li was destroyed by me while playing. He couldn't smile for the next few days..." Lin Le explained seriously.

"There's no such game!" Besides Zhang ZhengXiong, Ye Cang, and Little Ye Tian who were nodding; the rest all roared.

Then, everyone looked to NalanPureSoul. NalanMoon almost lost her voice. "Little Brother, you..."

"It's just Brother PaleSnow's joke. Don't overthink it..." NalanPureSoul smiled calmly.

FrozenCloud saw OldWangFromNextDoorg give Ye Cang an envious look. Hey, can you be anymore desperate!?

ThornyRose facepalmed. "Alright, alright, where is the boss. What is it like? Explain it, then let's start."

Little Ye Tian explained their meeting with the boss after filtering out the unnecessary parts. "I don't know the details, we weren't buffed or healed so we retreated. So we don't have much data on this boss. We only know its shape and attribute is a dark type."

"It's no use overthinking it. Get ready and let's go before things change..." NalanPureSoul nodded. He examined all the auras affecting him. His health increased greatly. Movement speed and attack speed were also increased more than before. The auras had improved again...

"Alright, cast your buffs and refill your mana, then we can plan..." ThornyRose reminded.

Ye Cang began to chant and make hand seals.

NalanPureSoul faintly raised his brows. A magic with mantras in an western style game? What kind of magic was this?

ThornyRose just painfully covered her forehead. She saw

NalanPureSoul and the other's confused expression. He's just showing off! It's just an instant cast nature buff...

“Break!” Ye Cang shouted. Warm nature power engulfed everyone. NalanPureSoul was moved. +15 to all attributes? Such a high nature resistance and even a recovery effect. However, the recovery effect would probably be useless. According to Little Ye Tian, the withered field suppresses health restoration effects. Even healing is halved. However, this buff was definitely a high-level skill!

Little Ye Tian casted her prayers and gave everyone blessings. All attributes were increased by 15%.

After their mana was restored, Ye Cang brought everyone back to the gradually expanding withered field. The moonlight clearly lit up the area, allowing them to see that beast shaped shade. It was a vaguely cat-shaped figure. Its two eyes emitted a dark red light, and it's whole body emitted a thick black energy.

Ye Cang quickly identified it.

Withered Shade - Rabbis (Event Boss - Abyss - Rare): Extremely dangerous withered shade...

“ThornyRose, your group will take the left. We'll take the right. HeavenShakingMight, you're probably the only one who can tank this. If you discover any weak points, notify everyone as soon as possible. Ranged players stay scattered. Go...” NalanPureSoul saw that the giant cat shade had roared and looked over with its red eyes. He brought his group and scattered. ThornyRose brought her people and scattered to the left.

Ye Cang threw his heavy bow to ElegantFragrance, and then equipped his ballista in its place. Being the first to reach the battle, Zhang ZhengXiong was faced with the swat of its paw. He stood firmly on the ground and blocked forcefully with his giant axe as if holding up a giant cauldron. The dark energy flowed past him, continuously dealing damage. With a bellow, he dived to the side.

The black claws smashed loudly against the earth, leaving scars. The spot where Zhang ZhengXiong's feet were, had also sunken in. However, this stopped the boss temporarily.

NalanPureSoul watched Zhang ZhengXiong display his might as a tank. That imposing aura which never failed to intimidate. He really wanted to face against them, unfortunately they had lost to Lord's Reign and were unable to enter the semi-finals...

# Chapter 409: Killing Rabbis

---

“Lele, throw the molotovs! Throw some around the boss too. Restrict his mobility!” ThornyRose said while attacking violently from the left. Lin Le began to spread a sea of fire.

“Brother Lele, throw some towards me too!” NalanPureSoul had his fire demon shoot out a fireball while he threw out rings of hellfire. He looked up to see four or five bottles flying towards him. He broke out in cold sweat. Are you trying to burn me to death!? The bottles smashed, and NalanPureSoul found himself surrounded by a sea of fire, with him in the middle. Luckily, it didn’t burn him. Such an accurate throw. He began to gather the surrounding flames and sent wave after wave of fire at the boss...

Zhang ZhengXiong spun 360 degrees and struck with his heavy axe at the boss’ neck. He pulled it out, revealing a wound that leaked shadow energy. The shade boss issued an angry roar. It swung its sharp claws while its body shot out countless shadow arrows.

“Dodge!” ThornyRose roared, and moved to stand under the boss.

FrozenBlood jumped down from its body and chose to hide under its abdomen. Elsewhere, a five meter large fire wolf met the shadow arrows, continuously dissolving them. It crashed into the boss’s shoulder and exploded in a burst of hellfire. NalanPureSoul made a grabbing motion, triggering another explosion! Most of the shadow arrows coming in his direction had been destroyed by the explosion while it also dealt a terrifying amount of fire damage. Lin Le knew that this damn black cat had been stunned. He threw his two swords to the ground, and tossed a molotov. It immediately engulfed the swords in flames. He grabbed them, holding a flaming sword in his hand and another one on his back. He quickly leapt towards the boss’s head, creating arcs of flames as he struck! He landed and pulled out the sword on his back with

Sword Drawing Arts - Returning Dragon! He swung his other sword with Surging Dragon! Then Sword Drawing Art - Flash! Whirlwind Strike! The sword left beautiful arcs of flame in the darkness...

Zhang ZhengXiong rushed out from under the boss. The molotovs can be used like that! He tossed his weapon to the ground. "Lele, throw one on my weapon too!"

"Okies!" Lin Le casually said and sent a bottle over. The molotov landed on the giant axe in front of Zhang ZhengXiong.

He grabbed the axe covered in oil and set ablaze. It dealt 3 damage to him every second. It wasn't exactly high, but not low either. However, such little bit of damage wasn't much while taking on a boss! With a roar, he swung the giant axe. Holy Judgement struck at its head. Fire and holy damage made it wail in grief.

At this time, Ye Cang's ballista + Hunter Imprint - Attack (add half of your dexterity to an attack) along with Enchant Arrow - Explosive Arrow flew over. He shadow stepped to NalanPureSoul and then dashed through the fire. Flame Blade + Fire Lotus. His pike exploded with fire lotuses as he struck its head. Multiple Straight Thrusts! Straight Thrust + Shadow Frost Strike exploded with a flower of ice. The word resisted floated up. Ye Cang quickly cast Hunter Imprint - Conceal. He hid himself and passed under its abdomen, dodging past a sweeping tail attack...

Zhang ZhengXiong waved his fiery weapon bravely. SpyingBlade also threw down his weapons. "Lele, here..."

NalanMight, NalanMoon, FrozenBlood, and the others all took advantage of the time when the boss's attention was on Zhang ZhengXiong to assemble and throw their weapons to the ground. Ye Cang also threw his pike in. Lin Le threw out two bottles and covered all the weapons in fuel. Everyone retrieved their weapons. They frowned at that side-effect of 3 damage every second. This

was pretty much using your health to increase your damage. Nevertheless, the increase in damage with every hit was only 10 or so. However, it did succeed in turning their damage into fire damage instead of pure physical...

The battle was exceptionally fierce. When the boss entered its berserk state, NalanPureSoul's side immediately lost some core members. Little Jade also died tragically to a rain of shadow arrows.

ThornyRose frowned. This boss had too much health. They had been fighting for over 20 minutes! Little Tian's mana for healing was also emptied in order to preserve the health of the melee members using burning weapons. NalanBeauty was worse off. She had long since used up her mana and was alternating with Little Tian to sit and drink magic spring water.

Shaking Bear had also used one use of Desperate Prayer... That damned halved healing and health regeneration restriction! ThornyRose turned towards NalanPureSoul, who was still outputting damage with all his might. If they could defeat this boss, he would probably claim the highest damage. He had never stopped casting fire spells, and the damage was very high. His fire demon also dealt a considerable amount of damage. The others, like Wang, Fang Ci, and Nana were practically negligible...

"Lele, don't let the fire die down around NalanPureSoul..." ThornyRose warned once again. Lin Le nodded and threw another 4 bottles around him.

"Thanks Brother Lele..." NalanPureSoul continued to draw the fire. He thought about buying some molotovs from Happy Firmaments later. These things fit well with his Kindling Technique and Fire Recovery, making it like he was always drinking magic spring water while increasing his flame damage. It was just the price, Brother PaleSnow would definitely ask for a high price... His delicate hand grabbed the air. A fire wolf struck the boss and it was baptised in hellfire which exploded once more

for a large amount of damage.

Ye Cang was also not weak. He created a Flame Burst and threw it out. Its explosive strength was also impressive. NalanPureSoul faintly smiled. Such a high spell power...

They continued their flurry of attacks. Although the number of members decreased, but their main force was mostly still there. The shade boss began to change its shape, becoming unstable. NalanPureSoul stopped his attack. "Careful, it's probably some big skill..."

Along with a resentful roar, the enormous cat shade instantly split into numerous little kittens. However, each kitten was still as big as a prairie wolf. There were roughly a few hundred of them.

NalanPureSoul's heart sank. Oh no, we're already in bad shape, and our skills are mostly on cooldown. The healers at the back are already at the end of the line. Even if they replenish their mana, they still wouldn't keep up...

"Bro! Blow me up!", Zhang ZhengXiong bellowed. He swung left and right, even directly activating Desperate Prayer, healing his health to above half. He then activated Berserk Recovery, healing the other half. In an instant, the surrounding shades' hostility was completely directed at him.

Ye Cang began to chant Light Strike Array without hesitation. Light and fire immediately enveloped Zhang ZhengXiong and the surrounding kittens. NalanPureSoul was extremely happy. He quickly made a grab at the air. He couldn't do anything with the light part of the attack, but he could with the fire. And his skill cooldown just finished! After the Light Strike Array was a scarlet red explosion.

"Congratulations, you've slain Withered Shade - Rabbis. Obtaining 4500 experience and permanent 15 dark resistance..."

Everyone sighed in relief. When the boss died, ThornyRose was



immediately 12000% alert. She once again succeeded in pouncing on the loot-crazy Ye Cang. If even this boss is ruined by him, biting him to death won't be enough! This is an event boss! Such an exhausting battle and losing so many sisters! NalanPureSoul's side lost at least ten experts.

## Chapter 410: Shadow Chains

---

“Let me go! An event boss will definitely drop something good! With my divine hand, there will definitely be a godly artifact! It will at least have a +100 to all attributes ring!!” Ye Cang squirmed like a caterpillar. His two eyes were abnormally red. He slowly moved through the fire towards the black dust. FrozenCloud and Zhang ZhengXiong quickly came to help...

What kind of obsession for corpses was this... NalanPureSoul's people all blushed with shame.

Lin Le simply jogged to the boss's side and looted the corpse. From behind, he sensed a grudge so terrifying it could nearly take physical form. His naive face immediately broke out in cold sweat. He gulped and continued to loot. “Brother Lil'White! We got some good stuff!”

Ye Cang returned to normal. Although he still held quite a grudge, he had mostly regained his rationality. He simply turned away and sighed. “There definitely won't be a +100 all attributes ring...”

The surrounding people all blushed with shame. How far in the game are we. There is no such item!

Ye Cang took the things Lin Le passed over, and he raised his brows. There were two dark gold equipment! Two gold equipment, two distinguished equipment, and two skill books! There was even a guild charter! It was a huge harvest. He turned and looked at ThornyRose and NalanPureSoul with a grateful but indifferent expression. “I've troubled everyone. Really sorry. It's over now, you can all go...”

ThornyRose and NalanPureSoul both felt their chests tighten. Ye Cang looked over and saw the angry looks he was getting, then coughed. “I'm just messing with you...”

He spoke and then posted the stats of the Dark Gold equipment.

Rabbis Shadow Blade (Dark Gold - Abyss - Withered Shade)

Category: Long Sword

Requirements: 105 Strength & 115 Dexterity

Damage: 32 - 35

Additional Dark Damage: 21 - 22

+15 Strength

+17 Dexterity

+13 Attack Speed

Active - Rabbis Shadow Blade: Launch a shadow hooked blade which locks onto a target and deals 55 damage. Has a chance to drag the target to an appointed location then detonate the blade and deal 45 dark damage to enemies in range of the blade with a chance to stun and knockback. Cooldown: 15 minutes.

Rabbis Withered Shadow Staff (Dark Gold - Abyss - Withered Shade)

Category: Longstaff

Requirements: 115 Intelligence & 90 Wisdom

Damage: 30 - 31

+23 Dark Magic Effect

+16 Spell Power

+20 Intelligence

+17 Wisdom

Active - Rabbis Withered Shadow Arrow: After activation, the staff will store power for 2 seconds, then continuously fire 15 shadow arrows at a target, each dealing 45 dark damage and reducing their armor by 5%. Can stack 10 times. Duration 10 seconds. Cooldown: 1 hour.

NalanPureSoul was somewhat moved. It's a dark weapon. Although the skill is OP like a machine gun, but I specialized in fire, let alone the fact that someone pragmatic like Brother PaleSnow would never give it to me. But I can fight over that sword for sister!

ThornyRose was also thinking the same. No one in her team specialized in dark magic, however, that sword had to go to FrozenBlood or herself! It was too good, and the weapon's active ability cooled down in only 15 minutes. For a weapon's inherit ability, this was considered to be too quick.

"Let's start with the staff. What to do? However, they're all event bosses, yet why didn't that dog from last time explode with dark gold stuff." Ye Cang held the staff and asked doubtfully.

"It has to do with the method. That kill was the NPC's achievement, so no dark gold dropped..." NalanPureSoul explained. "About the staff... wait, weren't there skill books? Post them for us..."

Ye Cang nodded and posted the skill books too.

Shadow Chain (Rabbis - Special - Withered Shade):

Chant a long verse (approximately 4 seconds) to chain targets together with a shadow chain. All damage received will be shared between all chained targets. (A 100 damage attack for example. If one of two targets receives a 100 damage attack, then the total damage will be determined by the stats of the one who was hit. If Zhang ZhengXiong was hit by the 100 damage physical attack, after his defence, it would only deal 15 damage. This 15 damage would be shared with the target chained to him. Of course, AOE would mean being hit with two different damages, like Rabbis in his divided form. Before dividing, he would only take 1 instance of damage from an area attack, but after dividing, every kitten had taken a hit from Light Strike Array, making the damage extremely terrifying, especially when followed up with NalanPureSoul's conflagrate.)

Chained targets take 25% increased dark damage. Can chain at most 2 targets together for 3 minutes.

Cost: 30 mana. Cooldown: 1 hour.

Summon      Withered      Shade      (Rabbis      -      Special      -  
Summoner/Warlock/Dark Mage/Ranger):

After learning, can summon a withered shade to join the battle with rank based on the summoner. Can have at most two at a time.

Cost: 30 mana. Cooldown: None.

After seeing shadow chain's description, NalanPureSoul couldn't help feeling that this skill was vicious! It could be used in many situations. Against a boss with no area or dark attacks, you could link it to the tank. It could also be used to link multiple bosses. Everyone apart from Ye Cang's three could see its many uses... Even some special situations could be solved by linking a tank and a boss. Everyone knew that a powerful dark element mage would be worth investing in for this skill!

"Let's bid on the staff..." NalanPureSoul said unconsciously.

"Bid my ass! We have someone who needs it. I'm the team leader and the owner of this event boss! You people can decide amongst yourself who gets the sword. We don't need it. You should know our Happy Firmament members, including Little Ren, are all using Dark Gold weapons that are no worse than these..." Ye Cang gave the staff emitting black miasma to Fang Ci. Fang Ci took it with a bitter smile. He was still a bit short from being able to use it.

ThornyRose just remembered that Necromancer was a class that combined dark magic and undead. She then saw Ye Cang hand the sword to NalanPureSoul for him and her to decide among themselves. The two of them had no objections. There were two Dark Gold equipment, so they were indeed qualified to take one. What surprised NalanPureSoul was that those guys all had Dark Gold equipment? Moreover, weapons too... It should be known

that 99% of people haven't even seen gold equipment. However, he cared more about those two must have skills. Necromancer, he had almost forgotten that their team had a new Necromancer...

“Actually, that sword, I can use it as my offhand...” SpyingBlade said quietly.

“I don't even have a dark gold weapon yet...” Fang Ci said unhappily. The two of them were already very close.

# Chapter 411: Vanish

---

“Don’t you have one now...” SpyingBlade smiled.

“Hah, I’m short on attributes...” Fang Ci shrugged.

In the end, the Dark Gold longsword went to NalanMoon. ThornyRose felt regretful, however NalanPureSoul had paid for it and he had promised not to fight over the gold quality sword.

They finished distributing equipment. The gold sword was given to ThornyRose, while Ye Cang gave the heavy armor gloves to Lin Le. All that was left were the two skill books. Little Ye Tian stood out and said, “The skill books will go to Happy Firmaments, which has the right of distribution. We’ll pay 200 gold which will then be divided among you. As for the guild charter, it is also ours... We had a prior agreement that we would only give one item...”

Guild charter... NalanPureSoul frowned. Something he must have, was dropped! He looked at Ye Cang and said seriously, “State your price...”

Ye Cang raised two fingers. “Half federal dollars. Gold wise, you can owe us. Little Ye Tian will go over the interest with you...”

“Alright...” NalanPureSoul said without hesitation. Although 2000 gold was a bit expensive, but the earlier they establish a guild, the better! A 1000 gold debt, would probably take a while to return... In-game currency was in short supply. There wasn’t even enough in the black market.

ThornyRose looked at Ye Cang. So evil. This is already the third guild charter, but NalanPureSoul doesn’t know that I have one on me. I should quickly return and establish the guild, I have to get it before them. She quickly brought her people and, without turning back, vanished like smoke. “Put the skill book money to my debt. Distribution is done, I have an important matter to attend to! Goodbye!”

NalanPureSoul saw ThornyRose hastily leaving the moment he took the guild charter. No matter how important, she should have said a proper farewell, let alone the fact that there are still ruins to explore. There will probably be extra rewards in there. Wait! Could it be! He shouted in a lovely voice, “Not good! They’re also holding onto a guild charter! Chase! Sis, bring some people to cut them off. Everyone rush back to Black Rock City at full speed!!”

Ye Cang watched the two troops disappear into the jungle and muttered, “They didn’t even ask to go explore the ruins... Although I didn’t plan to bring them along... for the time being...”

“It concerns their entire guild after all...” Little Ye Tian shrugged.

“Bro, we’re in the same guild as ThornyRose...” Zhang ZhengXiong broke out into cold sweat.

Ye Cang blinked, and thought for about a second. “So?”

SpyingBlade, Fang Ci, and Wang all smiled bitterly. No wonder, Sister Rose hated Team Leader so much. Team Leader had never treated Thorns and Roses as a guild. The three of them were doubtful. As Ye Cang was playing games for the first time, could it be that he really didn’t know anything about guilds and clubs. SpyingBlade and Fang Ci, who knew that Ye Cang was the leader of one of the factions in the 10 Commandments, were both speechless. He also treated the Commandments the same way. Although he was the head of a faction, but his actions often crossed the line. For example, Sky Burial getting killed by Hunting Flame was all due to his approval. This was something that wasn’t supposed to happen. Regardless of whether Sky Burial was good or bad, he was still a leader of the Commandments, even if he was only promoted two years ago. They learned from Cold Moon and Ardent Wind that #1 didn’t pursue the matter, and Hunting Flame continued joining the meetings with Cold Moon as before, with his mysterious smile and poker face. One could imagine how special Team Leader’s position in the Commandments was. They could



also feel that #2 was a bit low-key...

Fang Ci took the skill book that Ye Cang passed him. Then saw the hardworking little worker bee teammates looting the thousands of withered shade corpses. SpyingBlade looted a withered shade and luckily got a masterwork equipment. He watched Ye Cang loot one beside him, then another one, yet only got harvested materials. Nothing else. “Team Leader, you should take a break. These little monsters would be a waste of your divine hand...”

“Fellow student SpyingBlade is right. I was careless. My divine hand is for looting bosses. These little monsters can’t handle my divine hand’s luck, especially since they all rushed out the door without bringing equipment...” Ye Cang stroked his chin and slowly nodded. After gathering up Rabbis, the withered shade, he sat down and examined the ingredients in his bag. At fixed times, as if he was paid hourly, he would clear up the corpses that everyone had looted.

Wu Na and FrozenCloud both gave SpyingBlade a thumbs up, thanking him for protecting countless withered shade corpses...

Lin Le’s improved handcart was also filled up by the many withered ashes, and they were only half done. Ye Cang was not worried. He had Lin Le and Little Ye Tian return with the cart, then come back. After two trips, they finished cleaning up the entire withered field. The extras were put into their warehouse in Black Rock City. Finally, they looked back on the withered field to see that after looting here and there, the place had become completely bald. The original withered field debuff was also reduced. It now only reduced healing by 25% and health regeneration by 50%. No one was sure whether this should be considered ecological destruction or protection. Anyways, the field became clean. They all smiled bitterly...

“Let’s eat and rest for a while before going in. We’ve made so many big sales, and received so many precious materials, let’s stop

by the night market tonight and feast!” Ye Cang said heroically.

“Hey, we’re only going to eat at some stalls. Although the food is top quality, but isn’t calling it a feast an overstatement! Precious materials?...” SpyingBlade recalled something and asked doubtfully, “These ashes are valuable?”

“It should be. My identification skill says this type of withered ash has a variety of uses. The stronger the withered shade, the more precious the ash. One of its uses is my specialty culinary arts...” Ye Cang smiled. Everyone nodded as they heard the first half. ‘Not bad’ they thought. It seemed even more valuable than magic crystals. However, when they heard the end, they were frozen stiff. Haha, it’s another foul wind and rain of carnage...

...

Night market.

Gongsun Qian came to see her recovered sweetheart. Although she had already tearfully thanked Ye Cang, she was still full of gratitude and appreciation towards him. Ye Cang just waved it off, “There are conditions. Stop calling me benefactor. Although I can’t tell you what they are yet, but it’s dangerous. Aren’t you worried?”

Gongsun Qian leaned on SpyingBlade’s shoulder, “Him, I’m not worried at all. He’s the man that won my heart...”

Ye Cang froze. He couldn’t help raising the corners of his lips. She really was a good woman... He looked at SpyingBlade and said seriously, “Don’t let down her kindness again...”

“I know...” SpyingBlade gently held Gongsun Qian and said with a soft smile.

Soon, the night market around Old Wang’s shop became especially lively, because the ramen shop’s Old Li had also come over. The two of them made an Eastern, Western, Japanese, mashup banquet for everyone. Anyone who passed by would start

to drool. When they saw the trio of white hair, violent bear like body, and a naive childlike university student at the table, they all saluted. However, they all left full of reverence without disturbing them. Thinking of the scene of the student council losing and suffering the mighty chrysanthemum rod made them cover their butts. In the east district, members of T-105 were already legendary existences...

## Chapter 412: Insect Cave Behind the Temple

---

The laughter at the table made Ye Cang smile. He watched Little Ye Tian being angered by Lin Le, FrozenCloud glaring at Zhang ZhengXiong angrily, Wu Na consoling her, Fang Ci feeding his sister Fang Tong, Zuo Yiyi talking about fashion with Gongsun Qian, and SpyingBlade's foolish laughter; the scene seemed especially happy and comfortable. Ye Cang's heart felt warm. If possible, he hoped he could be with them forever. What am I thinking about! It's going to happen! He swept the bad premonition out of his mind. "Cheers! For the Happy Firmaments Corporation!"

"...when did it become a corporation..." Everyone felt ashamed.

"Cheers!!" They were all laughing and drinking.

...

Avīci.

The sinister iron masked, white haired man was there, chained from head to toe. His tranquil eyes looked exceptionally dazzling among all the tortures of hell. A white clothed woman was nearby looking at him with a complicated expression. Love was something unimaginable to her. It seemed even more terrifying than the eternal torment of Avīci. To be able to leave people with no regrets, and keep them faithful beyond death, just what kind of feeling was it... As she thought to there, she quickly came to. She slowly turned and left, walking somewhat unsteadily. Her mind continued to think about those unwavering yet gentle eyes. She gave a dejected sigh. Those words played in her mind... Compared to losing true love, this bit of pain is not even worth mentioning... If the one he loved was me... She felt a violent burning in her chest, and a sweet taste in her throat. She spat out a mouthful of blood. What is wrong with me? I, who has trained in the Jade Heart Sutra, can't feel passion. I have to suppress this magic...

...

The scene returned to the seaside cottage.

Everyone contently walked along the sandy shore, and chatted while looking at the sea of stars. Lin Le turned towards the boundless stars, and his eyes glazed. Lele is doing well. Mommy, Daddy... Lele is famous now. Will you find Lele?

On a cruise ship, Song Xin looked at the data she had gathered, and her brows furrowed. Her face showed her alarm. She quickly destroyed the original. I can't let anyone know that I'm investigating! Her beautiful eyes looked at the reflection of the moon on the sea. Lele, it's not that I don't want to investigate, but I don't dare look any deeper. Your history could open the door to a hidden truth. This is all for you. There is nothing more important than seeing you happy and cheerful.

Everyone returned to the withered field in the game. They faced the ruins and began to advance. Perhaps the battle outside had attracted all the withered shades inside; there wasn't a single trace of a living being. Ye Cang saw a little jewel box in the corner. He peeked left and right and saw no one around. They were splitting up to search. He decisively started running towards it, and opened the chest, then muttered, "This place has been abandoned for so long, it's very normal for the chests to be empty..."

After he spoke, he got up and buried the chest before continuing his search.

Finally, everyone gathered outside the temple and began reporting their results. Ye Cang gave a gold quality spellcaster offhand tome to Fang Ci. It gave him enough attributes to equip the shadow staff. Wu Na and Wang had no objections.

Upon entering the temple, they saw that many of the temple's supporting pillars were broken. In some places, the collapse made rooms and tunnels inaccessible. They had to circle around to the other side of the blockage. Little Ye Tian flipped through an

ancient book.

Goddess Jam's temple was a place to pray for fertility. Many would come for her blessing or stop by the nearby inns for a rest. The place was once prosperous. They would select a cat as an envoy of the goddess and worship it. Finally, when Rabbis...

Rabbis the event boss? She closed the book, and roughly explained the contents to everyone.

"It doesn't seem like a coincidence. All three shrines were destroyed, and it seems like it wasn't caused by natural disasters. If I'm not wrong, it all happened at the same time..." SpyingBlade began to think.

"Who cares. Let's kill our way over and wash the goddess. Won't we know if we ask her..." Ye Cang shrugged and decisively walked further into the temple. Everyone quickly followed.

After entering the main hall, Ye Cang and the others suddenly stopped. They saw that the cracking walls were covered in some sort of fleshy stuff with pulsing veins. Little Ye Tian squatted down and touched the sticky liquid on the ground. "It's from an insect. These disgusting organ like walls are a lot like the ones built by the maggots, however this place looks much more intricate. The inside should be some sort of an insect type existence..."

"Everyone be careful. Lele, how many more molotovs do you have?" Ye Cang drew his composite heavy bow, and reached behind him to take out a kagu bee arrow from his class equipment quiver. He slowly stepped onto the soft 'ground'.

"I'll count..." Lin Le opened his class equipment, the reinforced armed chamber of commerce employee bag, and began to count one by one. Little Ye Tian sighed. "73 refined bottles, 3 boss level bottles..."

"Little Tian, not bad, that's what brother Le counted too. Brother Lil'White, there's that much..." Lin Le smiled and replied.

“Depending on the situation, when we go in and battle, if the insects are afraid of fire, just do your best to make the battlefield advantageous for us...” As Ye Cang walked, he could see that in the darkness, there were egg-like things on the floor. “I see what looks like eggs...”

From the ceiling, a clump of sticky liquid fell on Wu Na’s face. Wu Na scowled, quickly wiped it off, and complained, “I hate sticky stuff like this. Disgusting!”

Little Ye Tian crouched down and examined an egg. She used a little awl to poke a hole and see inside. She didn’t dare to cause a commotion by smashing it open. She saw a beetle type creature in the sticky liquid. Beetle shaped? That meant that their defence was high. If it’s a boss, then it’s a completely different story... As she was contemplating, a mantis like blade popped out of the eggshell. Little Ye Tian quickly dodged, receiving a long scar on her face. SpyingBlade’s longsword quickly struck the egg a few times, settling it...

Ye Cang identified the corpse while harvesting it. “It’s a bagu beetle...”

The scene earlier made Wu Na’s hair stand on end. That time at the kagu bug nest was enough to make her shiver. It was part of her nature as a woman to hate this sort of insect.

“Let’s not go any further yet. Return to the garden and eat a bit to buff up. There’s something new~” Ye Cang hinted at a ‘nice surprise’ which made everyone’s scalp tingle. Withered ashes...

Retreating back to the garden, Ye Cang began to cook. He deep fried meat smeared in slime gel, withered ash, bones, and specter residue. His ‘secret’ recipe created some grey deep fried batter. Beside it boiled his work of art, ‘bone broth’ soup. While cooking, Ye Cang smiled proudly, “This soup is made from Skeletal Demon bones, General Level Zombie bones, various demon beasts bones, and various creature bones. It’s matched with the succulent and

juicy fluorescent mushroom! There's also many other types of mushrooms. Haha, there's more~ There's also fish! Black Peaks local fish! You think that is all!? No! There's also this secret fermented sauce!..." As he spoke to there, everyone quickly got up to stop him, but Ye Cang still threw it in. The so called secret fermented sauce, no one knew how many disgusting and sticky things were mixed in there, but they all saw that it at least had the General Level Zombie's rotten fluid...



# Chapter 413: Burn Down the Temple

---

“It’ll definitely taste good...” Ye Cang covered it with a lid as if sealing a demon beast. He began to make the next one by taking out the leftover poisonous food from last time. “We still have lots of rice from last time, perfect for fried rice...”

While frying it on a large fire.

“Withered ash! This stuff will definitely improve the flavor!”

He grabbed a handful and threw it in.

“Then add my special secret sauce...”

He poured in half the bottle.

“How can fried rice not have meat!!”

Zombie meat was thrown in.

“It’s a bit dry...”

Slime gel mixed with oil was poured in.

“Go wild! My fried rice! !@#\$! It’s missing egg! There are no eggs!!!”

Ye Cang activated his speed boost and charged down the hall. He carried a medium sized egg back. It was partially cracked open, insect embryos could be seen inside. He tore off the egg shell and poured everything in. Everyone covered their mouths, trembling... Especially the kagu bug Little Rations. Little Ye Tian calmed him down, “You should be happy everyone pleaded for your sake...”

Ye Cang began to madly swing his ladle, as if brandishing a sword, rapidly stirring in high heat. Everyone watched this spectacle that was too horrible to endure. The insects were wailing and struggling. Finally, everyone looked at the big pot of fried rice, a pile of stinking fried lumps, and a bone and mushroom soup that ravaged all their senses.

“Looks like the method to use the withered ashes still needs to be researched. There were a few mistakes...” Ye Cang pinched his nose tightly and said seriously in a strange voice.

This was absolutely not a small mistake. The moment he learned his rare cooking skill was the biggest mistake... Zhang ZhengXiong's stomach was regretting it. Why hadn't he spared 5 constitution for intelligence at that time. Then he could have learned that cooking skill. The tigerkin Little Ren quietly tiptoed backwards planning to escape, but Lin Le grabbed his tail pulling him back. “Don't think of running away by yourself... Little Ren...”

Tigerkin Little Ren showed a terrified expression as Lin Le pulled him over by his tail and gave him a full set. He died miserably. The useless Little Blue Feather and Weak Sauce as well as everyone else all gulped. As the supervisor, Little Ye Tian believed that it was her duty to make sure everyone ate before eating herself... She was also in charge of feeding the young pets. If one called Ye Cang the murderer, then Little Ye Tian was the primary accomplice. At least, that is how the young pets felt...

While everyone was struggling internally, Ye Cang was staring off at a wall. Right now my cooking is advanced level. The time I surpass advanced will be when I prepare my first top quality feast. Those rare ingredients have been left alone for too long... He picked up a plate of fried rice, placed a few pieces of deep fried meat on it, and poured some soup into a bowl. Everyone could swear they heard some sort of howl of grief.

Ye Cang quickly ate some fried rice and a piece of deep fried meat. Before his consciousness faded, he poured a mouthful of soup into his belly. His entire body felt like it was being torn apart by the stink, and he instantly fell to the ground and began to thrash about.

SpyingBlade took a deep breath, and also ate all three kinds of food in a single breath, then collapsed. Most of them had finished

eating. However, Fang Ci, OldWangFromNextDoor, and Wu Na weren't so lucky. They lost their consciousness the moment they ate the rice and deep fried meat. Little Ye Tian sighed. She looked at the three who were still too inexperienced. When one ate her father's cooking, one had to be fast. Suck it up like a tornado. It didn't matter how much they ate, but one had to eat all three! Like this! She grabbed the extremely frightened Weak Sauce and Little Blue Feather, and began to stuff them. Finally, it was her mount Little Ration. She inspected everyone and saw no one had died, their luck was pretty good. She came to Ye Cang 'corpse' and slowly closed her eyes. She rapidly obtained the three food buffs as well as the set meal effect, then collapsed onto his chest, twitching together...

After a long time, everyone woke up feeling more relaxed. They didn't expect the set meal effect to be an increase of 5% in speed and reflex. It was even a percentage increase in attributes. The three food buffs not only gave pretty good attribute bonuses, the poison resistance and dark resistance were very high, over 65! If they were hit by an ordinary poison attack, they would only take very limited damage. When they recalled what they had eaten, they immediately felt relieved...

As for Wu Na and the others, they watched as Ye Cang passed them a bowl and looked at them with concern. "You're still missing this dish to get the set effect. Drink up, while it's warm. Everyone is waiting..."

"....."

After obtaining the powerful food buffs, Ye Cang began putting away his cooking tools and saw that there was still a lot of leftover fried rice and soup. He began to work his mind and made an expression that said 'I can't help but be impressed by my own genius.' "I have a new creative idea. It can both improve the quality and economize. Next time I'll mix the soup and rice together. I'll make korean style rice porridge! It'll definitely taste

good! The rice porridge we had in korea was pretty good...”

Everyone was originally trying to turn their pain and sorrow into strength, but now they became even more dispirited. The food buff lasted 6 hours. Wu Na covered her face. Why had she chosen Black Rock City. Why couldn't her hand have trembled and chosen another city... The only good thing was that in reality, she was the cook. The position hadn't been taken by him, otherwise... she couldn't even imagine it.

“Let's continue exploring...” SpyingBlade said in a powerless tone.

Walking in front, Ye Cang was excitedly harvesting. Following behind him, everyone sighed with sullen faces and tingling scalps as they thought of their next meal. They all prayed, while trembling, for an emergency to call them away...

They returned to the previous passage and entered the temple hall. Their visibility wasn't good, but they could all see the many eggs. Only Ye Cang could see clearly that the fleshy walls on two sides and the ceiling were also full of eggs. An enormous goddess sculpture was also covered in eggs and sticky liquid. His Eagle Eyes turned to the hole near the goddess statue. It was at least 10 meters wide, and was so full of eggs that it looked like it was spilling out. When everyone was shocked by this sea of eggs, a sharp sound pierced their ears. All the eggs began to break.

“Lele! Burn the left and right! Leave us a path to the cave! We'll use fire to block it up!” Ye Cang shouted.

“Mm!” Lin Le began tossing molotovs left and right. The eggs didn't even completely break before they were engulfed by a sea of flames. The entire temple hall was like a hell filled with cries of suffering insects. Everyone ran as Lin Le threw more molotovs to the side and towards the goddess. They almost set the entire temple hall ablaze. The fleshy walls cracked and the floor shook.

“Lele, hurry! Something is coming out!” SpyingBlade sensed that

a boss should be coming out of the hole!

Lin Le quickly used Leap. He crazily swung his bag, tossing molotovs towards the hole! Six bottles and then another six bottles. He rapidly threw molotovs until not even ten were left, then retreated back to the group. They turned to the batu bugs around the goddess' statue that hadn't been burned...

# Chapter 414: Bagu Bug Vanguard

---

In the sea of flames, experience numbers continuously floated up. It wasn't much, but also not little.

Under the light of the flames, the bloody goddess looked extremely malevolent. The layer of sticky liquid only made it even more hair-raisingly terrifying. The floor continued to quake. Everyone had pretty much cleared out the bugs around the goddess statue, when they saw that the flaming hole wouldn't hold much longer.

"A'Xiong, standby near the hole. If it comes out, hold it back right away." Ye Cang used his composite heavy bow, and accurately shot arrow after arrow at those lucky bagu bugs on the ceiling that had yet to fall.

Zhang ZhengXiong charged towards the hole, dragging his heavy axe behind him. He sensed the violent movement and lowered his stance.

The fire in the hole gradually became smaller and bagu bugs started coming out. However, there was a violent shriek which turned all the little bagu bugs into meat paste. An enormous, armored, scythe armed beetle came out of the hole. It faced the inside of the palace with a deranged and extremely ear piercing screech that shook their consciousness. Ye Cang quickly slapped the little drum at his waist, sobering everyone up.

Bagu Bug - Vanguard Beetle - Turchisa: The general of the bagu bug vanguard beetles. It has an extremely hard exoskeleton, and a rapid straight line charging speed. It's an extremely destructive, elite bagu bug...

Zhang ZhengXiong had a high Will so he wasn't intimidated when it appeared. As it was charging out of the hole, his Barbaric Tackle struck its body, knocking it back inside. The giant axe glowed with the light of Holy Judgement, fiercely striking three

times at its head. However, the damage wasn't very high. Its shell was really too hard.

“Bro! His physical resistance is too damn high!” Zhang ZhengXiong used his axe to block a sweeping scythe. His feet slit across the cracking, fleshy ground for 5 meters before stopping.

“Those who can break armor, find a spot. Focus fire and break one place. Fang Ci, in this battle, your specter will be of great use. Spirit attacks are more effective against this type...” SpyingBlade reminded.

Fang Ci nodded. He activated his staff's multiple shadow arrows. It had a temporarily armor reduction affect. Meanwhile, he controlled Bali to cast curses and spirit attacks.

Breaking armor? Ye Cang smiled. His hands shined with green light then shot out a green spit like thing. It hit in the spot that the shadow arrows were attacking. The shell began to visibly soften.

“It's afraid of acid type attacks!” SpyingBlade shouted. He activated his own armor weakening skill. His longsword hacked at that spot. He rapidly slashed 4 times, leaving afterimages! Pretty impressive damage numbers floated up. He suddenly leaned sideways, giving way to the shadow frost coated Dashing Straight Thrust. He watched the flower of ice bloom... would it work?

Ye Cang pike poked through. Ice crystals burst out from inside the cracks, blowing it open. Success! The target was stunned and hit by the frozen debuff. Its nerves were temporarily numbed.

“Lele has a trump card...” Lin Le laughed mischievously. He took out green bottles and weighed them in his hand, then three of them were tossed out. The green liquid spilled over the bagu bug vanguard. The shell around it's entire body began to emit smoke.

“Lele, throw a glue bottle at his face and by the hole!” Ye Cang smiled. Die. The acid bottles and my Acid Spray were saved just for invincible bosses like you. If your straight line charging speed is

fast, I'll seal your charge...

“Ok! Brother Lil'White!” Lin Le threw out a bottle of white liquid which landed right on the stunned bagu bug's front. SpyingBlade raised his brows. This is the sticky liquid that the kagu bug nest maggots created. Right, Lele has the formula to make glue bottles. My god, now we've stopped its movements. Without any way to advance or retreat, this boss can only blame itself for meeting its nemesis. If it was another team, this boss wouldn't be much weaker than an event boss. That near invulnerable shell is the biggest threat. He reminded them, “Don't stop attacking! Its shell restores quickly!!”

After throwing the acid bottles, Lin Le leapt over. From its side, he unleashed his Wild Blows. FrozenCloud warned him as he prepared to swing his handcart with Handcart Homerun. She was afraid of him smacking it away from everyone's attack range and out of the glue. He unhappily pouted, put away his handcart, and continued hacking...

Wu Na's Ice Spear pierced through it, adding to its disasters. Following that, Ye Cang Shadow Stepped to Fang Ci's side and released his Queen Bee Bolt with Meteor Shot. He summoned his Shadow Weapon - Heavy Crossbow which shot the King Bee Bolt. Both bolts shot through the hole he had pierced before. A huge burst of damage was caused by the bolts + poison. The boss cried out again and again...

At this time, the bagu bug vanguard broke out of stun due to the sharp pain. The scythes on its two arms swung creating a net of blades. SpyingBlade quickly backed up a few steps to avoid it. Zhang ZhengXiong roared and advanced instead of retreating. His giant axe was used as a shield. He targeted the wound and, with a shout, he charged at it with Berserk Tackle, “Don't stop! Keep it up!”

Zhang ZhengXiong raised his left arm. Clang! His right hand raised his giant axe and struck at the healing shell. Following a



cracking sound was another painful screech. In the flurry of slashes, Zhang ZhengXiong only defended his vitals. He ensured he wouldn't take extra damage and continued fighting. Desperate Prayer! Berserk Recovery! Rainbow Slam! Success!

Zhang Zhengxiong was pleased. It actually worked! Little Ye Tian knew the effects of that skill. Its chance of working on a boss wasn't very high, but insects were sensitive to light, so the chances were greatly improved! Also, this type of boss, as long as its shell broke, the inside was frail, increasing the chances even further. She quickly cast the just off cooldown Holy Shield and Rejuvenating Light on him. Two Pearls of Light formed...

Ye Cang put away his ballista. This was a good chance. He hit again with Acid Spray. Fang Ci was going to summon a Withered Shade but had second thoughts. It seemed they weren't required, so he saved his mana. He began to throw spirit balls, dealing steady yet considerable damage. The increase in dark damage had some effect on his Spirit Ball, but only half. Fang Ci smiled bitterly. As expected of a dark gold weapon, his Spirit Ball's damage was still nearly doubled...

FrozenCloud lowered her body. Her dark gold martial artist robe's effect activated, temporarily doubling her attributes, followed closely by a Wyvern Kick! Claws shot out of her gauntlets; Wolverine Strike, Triple Strike, Heavy Fist, Kamaitachi - Sweeping Wind! Shoryuken! She landed and retreated a step. She used all of her remaining Qi on her epic skill - Collapsing Palm! The strike created an incredibly deep boom. With the bonus from the Combo Master (After using a skill, your next attack will deal +15% damage) talent, a string of scarily high numbers popped up. The boss' shell was smashed once again, stunning it.

Ye Cang faintly smiled. This boss was already their b\*tch. It was too easy to disable. He drew his composite heavy bow and sent out an Acid Sting (A couple instances of poison damage followed by a burst which paralyses the target). It hit the revealed flesh between

its cracked shell. He reached and pulled out another arrow, nocked it, Enchanted Arrow - Explosive Arrow. The damage was practically doubled...

## Chapter 415: Goddess Jam

---

The bagu bug vanguard once again broke out of stun. In fright, it quickly turned around and began crawling back towards the hole, however, the hole being covered in glue made it difficult for it to move forward. Ye Cang's Acid Sting burst at this moment, paralysing it before the hole's entrance. Lin Le quickly jumped towards the hole and squeezed in with difficulty, then smashed with his handcart! "Lele Homerun!"

It was directly smashed out of the hole. With the shake of a hand, a few acid bottles flew out of the hole with it. They flew in an arc, accurately hitting it...

Zhang ZhengXiong fearlessly intercepted it in the air. The both received damage, but he made it fall back into the glue. He landed and once again charge over. Holy Judgement! The final strike of light stunned it once again.

Lin Le pushed the handcart, as if shopping, and crashed it with Handcart Charge. Zhang ZhengXiong used Barbaric Tackle. They sandwiched it between them with a loud bang. It was already powerless to resist, the armor on its body completely useless. Ye Cang drew his bow. Precise Shot, right between the eyes.

"Congratulations, you've slain bagu bug vanguard - Turchisa! Received 3000 experience..."

FrozenCloud flew at Ye Cang with a Wyvern Kick. Ye Cang sneered, dodging it. He grabbed her ankle as she flew by, making her fall to the ground. His pike stabbed through the back of her head. Then he turned his body, dodging Wu Na's Ice Arrow. "Too easy, you think you can stop me with..."

He didn't even finish before Lin Le's voice came, "Brother Lil'White! A dark gold came out! A dark gold!!"

"....." Ye Cang chest tightened. He pointed at everyone, looking

hurt. “You all...”

“Team Leader, this is for the team...” On the ground, FrozenCloud felt, once again, the difference between them. It wasn't just equipment, but also awareness. Team Leader would sense anything that posed a threat to him as soon as it was unleashed. Sister Rose's interceptions were harmless, so he couldn't sense it in his abnormal state...

Ye Cang sighed deeply and took the things Lin Le passed over to give him. These guys don't believe in my divine hand. I must make them fear it!! The next event boss, I'll definitely loot it! He looked at the two pieces of equipment.

Bagu Bug Vanguard Mask (Dark Gold - Bagu Bug - Nightmare)

Category: Heavy Mask

Requirements: 130 Strength

+20 Defence

+25 Strength

+15 Constitution

Reduced physical damage taken by 7%.

Active - Bagu Vanguard : Instantly reinforce your whole body with a shell. Increase defence by 30% for 3 minutes. Cooldown: 15 minutes.

Bagu Bug Vanguard Hatchet (Dark Gold - Bagu Bug - Nightmare)

Category: Heavy One-Handed Axe / Two Handed Axe

Requirements: 115/105 Strength & 75/70 Constitution

Damage: 30 - 32 / 32 - 35

+15 Strength

+10 Constitution

+15 Crush (Against creatures with low armor or lower attributes,

has a chance to deal +50% crushing damage)

Active - Bagu Bug Vanguard's Fury: Immediately perform a straight charge at the target. Deals 165% damage with a chance to cause stun for 2 seconds and knockback. Cooldown: 20 minutes.

"The mask goes to A'Xiong. No complaints right..." Ye Cang directly gave the mask to Zhang ZhengXiong.

Zhang ZhengXiong took it, already used to Ye Cang's favoritism. If Ye Cang felt like it should go to him, he'll think of a way to make it happen, as long as it doesn't involve other matters. He practically got something good every time. Ye Cang was always thinking about him and his sister...

No one had any objections. In this group, only Lin Le and Zhang ZhengXiong could use it. That defensive skill, it would obviously go to the team's main tank. A powerful tank was absolutely necessary. In SpyingBlade's eyes, there was nothing wrong with Zhang ZhengXiong always taking the best equipment. His contribution to the group was that important. Even without his aura's, he was still among the federation's best tanks. It wasn't enough for a tank to have technique, it required a special spirit! An imposingness! If you have the courage to rush into an army of thousands, then there is no need to fear that no one will support you from behind. Zhang ZhengXiong had this 'a match for ten thousand enemies' type of aura. It was like no matter who was in front of him, he would never avoid them. Moreover, he was a berserker that wouldn't rest until he had your head. Really New Village's Three Brothers. Although people thought it was a joke, but those three really were fearless back in Really New Village. They feared no one, because to them, it didn't matter how many or few the enemies were, nor who they were. They didn't even fear CloudDragon. With one word, they kill. From the very first time SpyingBlade sold them that shield, he could tell that those three weren't to be provoked. Where else would you find someone in this age who would bargain with 'If you don't half the price, we'll

pee on it so you can't sell it'...

"What about the axe. Lele and A'Xiong definitely don't want it. As for the others, what about you SpyingBlade?" Ye Cang asked.

"Not used to axes, and it's about the same as my offhand. Leave it and we can sell it for a good price when we get back..." SpyingBlade shook his head.

"Alright, we'll leave it for now..." Ye Cang put the barbed axe in his backpack, then harvested the boss. The sea of bug corpses also went into the cart. He took out a few towels and once again tied them to his pike, turning it into a mop, as he looked towards the goddess statue. "Begin cleaning the goddess statue!"

OldWangFromNextDoor was already sitting on the goddess's chest, waiting for this command.

"....." Everyone saw that and sighed, especially Wu Na, FrozenCloud, SpyingBlade, and Fang Ci. Just how lonely and desperate was he.

Ye Cang was, as before, cleaning the place between her legs. Zhang ZhengXiong and SpyingBlade cleaned her butt. Lin Le worked on her legs. With the help of magic spring water, the blood and sticky liquid was quickly washed off. The goddess statue began to glow. Wu Na and FrozenCloud sat nearby. If they were the goddess, they would immediately smite these blasphemers. Especially that white hair who was poking between her legs with a pike...

"Iyaaan~~!" As the goddess statue began to shine, it let out a very ecstatic moan which echoed throughout the temple for a long time, making Wang feel weak in the knees. As expected of a goddess...

"Sir Brave Warrior with the pike, gentler..." Goddess Jam said shyly while moaning. Ye Cang was in a bit of a bad mood because she didn't directly give them their rewards, so he began to do it harder! Where's my reward! Give it! Or I'll poke you to death!

“Iyaaan~ Warrior! Iyaaan~ Good, good... Aah! Harder!!”

Wu Na and FrozenBlood covered their ears. Such a disgraceful scene and voice. Were these really the three daughters of the nature goddess? It felt like each was thirstier than the last. And they seemed to like this shame play.

“Thank you, especially sir ranger. In order to repay you for freeing this shrine, accept my blessing!!!” The goddess shouted, somewhat short of breath.

# Chapter 416: Three Goddesses

---

“Congratulations, you’ve obtained Goddess Jam’s blessing. +3 Wisdom, +2% Will, and a chance to obtain a plant type skill. Due to Goddess Jam being very pleased with your contribution in freeing her, she specially gives you an extra blessing...”

“Congratulations, you’ve learned the skill Flowers in the Wind.”

Flowers in the Wind (Jam - Beginner Level):

Chant 3 bars (about 2 seconds), and give rise to a flowery wind full of healing energy in an area. Friendly forces in the area will heal 7 points of health every second for 20 seconds, and has a chance to remove a damage over time effect.

Cost: 35 mana. Cooldown: 20 minutes.

“Congratulations, you’ve obtained an extra blessing. You’ve learned Jam’s Plant Technique.”

Jam’s Plant Techniques (Jam - Beginner Level)

Jam - Planting Skill: Can discover, identify, and gather plant type seeds. Can plant and breed them.

Jam - Rapid Growth: Can be used on plants within a large area. Reduce its growth time (Can only increase growth and doesn’t stack. If the range overlaps, only one of them will take effect. Duration is until the plant is mature).

Ye Cang was very satisfied. The planting skill was a perfect match for his cooking. In his hands, the effect were not just  $1 + 1 = 2$  or  $1 + 1 = 3$ . No, it was  $1 + 1 = N$ ! There were infinite possibilities!

Everyone looked at Ye Cang immersing himself in that shiver-inducing laughter. He was definitely thinking about something retarded...

At this time, the shrine began to shine even brighter. Silhouettes of the three goddesses appeared before everyone’s eyes.



OldWangFromNextDoor stared in awe. As expected of three goddesses. Anya's wild beauty, Mallow's dignified beauty, Jam's fresh beauty. Lin Le immediately measured their cup sizes with a glance. They were respectively F, D+, and E.

"Brave warriors, thank you all for freeing the shrines of us sisters. If possible, we hope you will help us restore the shrines to their former glory, and allow us to continue protecting the people of Black Peaks..." Jam's heavy breathing had slowly settled down.

"Jam, right now, Prosperity Hill has already been occupied by insects. Our top priority can only be to ask these brave warriors to gather more warriors and clear them out..." Anya said.

"Anya is right. Brave warriors, will you help us shoulder the burden of clearing Prosperity Hill and restoring it?" Mallow looked at everyone and asked earnestly.

Ye Cang calculated. The reward would definitely be generous, but let alone clearing the Ravine of Death, just restoring the three shrines would be like building three more Bal Villages. Could they handle it? He gave an inquiring glance to the treasurer Little Tian.

Little Ye Tian considered for a moment, then nodded.

"We'd be honored..." Ye Cang accepted the quest.

"Congratulations, you've received the epic quest 'Restoring the Three Nature Goddesses' Shrines'. Help them rebuild their shrines, gather believers, and liberate the Ravine of Death from insects and evil creatures in the Ravine of Death. Time Limit: None. Reward: Unknown."

"Gathering believers..." Ye Cang frowned. The competition between Black Rock City's associations was intense, and the goddesses had been silent for nearly a thousand years, yet they still want a piece of the pie. He felt like they had no way to compete. The other associations had teachers to impart skills and whatnot...

"Don't worry, we've already returned. The descendants of our

core believers have already received our call. They should rush over and assist you in gathering believers...” Mallow smiled.

Little Ye Tian more or less understood her meaning. As expected of a deity. Just like a celebrity, even after their end, they would still have many die-hard fans. These three goddesses, even after their shrines were destroyed, still worked to help and bless their die-hard fans’ descendants. A family with such blessing must be a powerful clan... the kind that lasted for generations, even if they had to do it secretly. “The abnormality appearing at the shrines, do miss goddesses know how it happened?”

The three goddesses shook their heads.

Little Ye Tian explained what she learned from the documents. The three goddesses all frowned. Anya raised her brows, “I knew it was was the doing of that damnable Sachina sect...”

Little Ye Tian vaguely understood. It was a large sect in the wastelands who worshipped the goddess Sachina, a cruel, cunning, and ruthless goddess. With the three nature shrines destroyed, and their believers mostly killed, the wasteland to the north was no longer held back. Along with the continuous warring between the Planetary Empire and the Steel Empire, they were too busy to pay attention to it... Black Rock City also mostly ignored Black Peaks. None of the associations wanted to deal with this mess. The originally prosperous ravine had become the present Ravine of Death...

“We’ll eventually have our revenge, but not now...” Mallow smiled coldly.

Ye Cang was still thinking of how to spread propaganda and be more competitive. He took a deep breath and entered his ‘decide in one second’ mode. He crossed his arms and looked up in thought for one second, then immediately thought of something. He came up to the three goddesses. “Miss goddesses, stand a bit closer to together...”

The three goddesses stood together confused. Ye Cang had Anya pull her clothes down to reveal nearly half her mounds then hold Mallow's waist. He then had Jam spank Anya's bottom while pressing her chest against Anya's wonderfully exposed back. He did his best to have the three goddesses expose a little more skin. As for the three goddesses anger, Ye Cang sighed and with a straight face, explained to them that the modern day male believers all liked this sort of thing. He spouted some bullshit about the exposed flesh marketing technique! He began to trick them with a deadpan expression. Something about in order to keep up with the times, it had to be done. Something about it being all for the shrine. He swore to the heaven and the earth. He was supported by the specialist - Lin Le, who agreed with Ye Cang innocently. He looked at Ye Cang as if seeing an expert. The three goddesses were convinced to the point they nodded to Ye Cang and even apologized. Then, Ye Cang had Wu Na, FrozenCloud, and SpyingBlade, these three people who had learned art, begin to draw (for the NPCs). Ye Cang himself acted like a photographer, taking pictures of their various poses with his virtual camera (for the players).

OldWangFromNextDoor and Zhang ZhengXiong stared with mouths agape as Ye Cang, with a straight face, had Anya reveal part of her F cups and said with a professional voice, "Push your breasts together like this, then face me and give a lovely smile... perfect! Very good!"

Ye Cang sketched the photograph and showed her, "How is it?"

The feverish Anya nodded shyly. On the contrary, it was Ye Cang who frowned, unsatisfied, and shouted, "This won't do! Again! You need to let yourself go a bit more, got it!? Display your wild side! You're not a little kitten! Once more!"

"This time reveal your breasts till here. Then when you smile at me, show your signature wildness..." Ye Cang once again demonstrated personally. His expression was extremely serious

and professional. Anya's brain was having trouble processing it all. She just followed Ye Cang's words and displayed them once again.

"Not bad..." Ye Cang turned the picture into a drawing and showed her again. Anya was also satisfied. She looked really attractive.

"With such a beautiful advertisement, is there any need to worry about believers!?" Ye Cang caressed his work of art and said seriously. He smiled as if he treated his work like his own child, which made Anya blush and nod. The other two goddesses were unable to hold back. They both requested their own posters.

Wu Na didn't know whether to laugh or cry. That guy, no matter what wicked deed he was doing, he would give off a deadly earnest appearance. If she wasn't familiar with him, she might really think he was a good guy.

# Chapter 417: Goddess Association

---

“I feel like miss Goddess Jam should have a makeover, a hip new style...” Ye Cang’s die-hard daughter, Litte Ye Tian, proposed.

“Now that you mention it...” Ye Cang grabbed at Jam’s straight hair examined it very professionally. “Come out with me, Goddess Jam...”

Ye Cang brought Goddess Jam and his ‘professional’ portrait team outside the shrine. Using the destroyed shrine as background, he took out his barber set. He gave Jam a free, european style. Immediately, Jam’s already peerless pure beauty doubled. He then had her change into a green, nature themed long dress, and made a garland to place on her head.

Ye Cang motioned for Jam to stand at the edge of a ruined stage with the sunset on one side. She bowed her head and looked at the ruins and withered field. “Don’t be stupid. Show a hint of sadness! You’re the flower goddess. When you see this broken scene, your home destroyed, your flowers withered, don’t you feel sad!?”

Jam quickly showed an emotional expression, which was extremely moving. Ye Cang instantly took a picture, and sketched it. “Perfect...”

“Indeed, beautiful...” Mallow and Anya were also staring in awe. That setting, that expression, that perfect instant.

Jam was extremely satisfied. Ye Cang then had her lie down on a broken stone windowsill. He had her put her weight on her arms, then he lifted her long dress up to her thigh, showing her long white legs. He then pulled her plant-made shoulder strap down to her elbow, showing the perfect amount of breasts to be enticing. “Show an ecstatic expression. On the count of three, bite your lip and moan like iyaaan~~”

“Iyaaan~~” Jam’s erotic and charming appearance was like an

angel and a devil compared to the last one. OldWangFromNextDoor had to go offline to put out a fire. Fang Ci was embarrassed and had to stick his butt out a bit...

FrozenCloud wiped her cold sweat and continued to draw. Team Leader is too brave. At this rate, we'll be releasing a photobook of the three goddesses.

Finally, Ye Cang also styled the other two goddesses. From wild to charming, from as righteous and awe-inspiring to pure as ice. He even had the three goddesses together, teasing each other. He created an entire set of pictures. There were even some class-targeted advertisements with them holding a bow, a staff, and chakrams. They would be used to attract newbies in Really New Village who were planning to choose an association. In everyone's eyes, the three goddesses were basically violated by Ye Cang.

OldWangFromNextDoor logged back on. Fang Ci, Zhang ZhengXiong, FrozenCloud, and Wu Na all looked at him with disdain. "Pervert + Quick shooter..."

"I didn't go offline to..." OldWangFromNextDoor didn't even get to speak before he was stopped by everyone's sharp glares.

"Alright, the propaganda photobook is done. We can go back to Black Rock City now. Goddesses, leave the rest to us..." Ye Cang displayed a dutiful expression and said seriously. He handed one of the photobooks to the three goddesses who had very happily let him mess with them.

"It's up to you, white haired warrior. Due to my shrine being destroyed, my remaining godly power isn't much, but you're a ranger, so imparting a skill to you is still possible..." Anya said gratefully.

"Congratulations, you've received Anya's teachings and learned Anya's Berserk Shot."

Anya's Berserk Shot (Anya's Hunter Class Series Shooting

Technique - Beginner Level - Epic):

Instantly lock on-to 20 targets in sight. Within two seconds, release a rapid bombardment of arrows, one at each target. Every arrow deals 95% damage and can trigger weapon effects.

Cost: 30 energy. Cooldown: 5 minutes.

Afterwards, the three goddesses left satisfied.

Ye Cang turned and saw Zhang ZhengXiong, OldWangFromNextDoor, SpyingBlade, and even Wu Na giving him a thumbs up. “Awesome!”

“Whatever you do, you must be professional... Hah...” Ye Cang put on his wolf-head hood and sighed. “Let’s go, back to Black Rock City...”

Wu Na, FrozenCloud, SpyingBlade and the others rolled their eyes. He was a guy who never forgets to show off...

Ye Cang and the others returned to Black Rock City. Little Ye Tian gave some of their gold to granny Rica, and arranged the plans to rebuild the three shrines. She also negotiated with ThornyRose.

ThornyRose hung up Little Ye Tian’s call and smiled bitterly. “Those guys, they probably received an epic main storyline quest. It’s related to rebuilding the three nature goddesses shrines and clearing the Ravine of Death.”

“As expected of your fiancée...” FrozenBlood slowly nodded and said. ThornyRose almost tripped. Would it kill you to not mention it!?

Ye Cang went to the city’s administration center and bought a building. He hung up a sign with the words ‘Goddess Association’. By the doorway, he placed a few awe-inspiring photos. Beside them were introductions of the three goddesses. As for the more explicit ones, they were temporarily not made public. Those were benefits for the core members. He then posted a crusade recruitment

notice. “The three nature Goddesses have recovered and are recruiting heroes. Let’s join hands and help the goddesses return to their former glory. Complete an epic quest! All classes welcome! Rewards are waiting for you! What are you waiting for!?”

The passersby all came to have a look. When they saw the three extremely beautiful goddesses, they began to discuss passionately.

“Oh no! I’ve fallen for Goddess Jam!”

“Goddess Anya is true love!”

“Beat it! Goddess Mallow is clearly the best!”

“The association is led by Really New Village’s Brother Hero! What are we waiting for!? Brother Hero! I’m in! Hurry and add me to the association!” Fang Ci pretended to be a stranger and came to the door. He looked at the amazing crowd and pointed at Ye Cang, who slowly walked out of the building.

“Well said, well said! This time, I’ve been entrusted by the three Goddesses to help them rebuild the shrines, recruit believers, and clear up the Ravine of Death. Originally, I wasn’t planning to share this assignment, but everyone knows that I’m fair. I won’t refuse anyone who wishes to join!” Ye Cang took off his wolf-head hood and his two eyes focused as he made his speech.

“Brother PaleSnow, save me a spot. For the quest...” NalanPureSoul’s voice came from the crowd. Everyone opened up a path.

“There is definitely a spot saved for Brother PureSoul...” Ye Cang smiled. They stared at each for a long time, a strange atmosphere between them.

“So it turns out there is something going on with Brother Hero and the Temptress. Tsk tsk, if Fighting King finds out, he’ll be devastated...”

“Another story of stealing love, full of resentment and betrayal... Hah...”



“Such a big event and you didn’t invite me? Brother Hero... not very sincere of you...” LordAsked came over and grinned.

“Bro, it’s not like he and you are close...” LordGrinned (Ji Xiao) replied.

Slap! LordAsked’s palm smacked the back of his head. “Shut up!”

“Who’s that...” Ye Cang showed that he didn’t recognize him. Fang Ci quietly whispered to him. “LordAsked of the four heavenly kings. The Leader of Black Rock City’s most influential guild, Lord’s Reign...”

“So it’s brother Asked. Alright, alright, this little brother was thoughtless...” Ye Cang calmly smiled.

ThornyRose rushed over and saw that LordAsked and NalanPureSoul had already arrived. The three of them confronted each other and smiled, “Let’s go in and discuss. As for these friends on the street, our Thorns and Roses will receive you all...”

# Chapter 418: Negotiation

---

At a big round table, Black Rock City's most influential groups were practically all there. The atmosphere was really heavy.

"I, LordAsked, won't bull you all! 30%!" LordAsked straightforwardly said.

"10%, the extra reward for completing the quest is enough. I'm not lacking manpower. You should know that I'm currently the quest giver, who gets the quest is dependent on my mood. Brother Asked, you best be clear on this point. Don't let my words offend you..." Ye Cang faintly smiled.

ThornyRose raised her brows. The air was thick with the smell of gunpowder. She turned and looked at Flame Dragon Union's and Mad War's Black Rock City representatives. They were basically just here to stir things up. With LordAsked and NalanPureSoul present, they didn't amount to much. At best they could mess with the mood...

LordAsked's eyebrows faintly rose then relaxed. "10%? Brother Hero, could it be that you're looking down on Lord's Reign..."

"So what if we are?" Zhang ZhengXiong stood up, in a bad mood.

Ye Cang reached out and held him back, then apologized, "My little brother takes after me, he speaks bluntly. Haha, Brother Asked, don't mind..."

Lin Le had a hand on the hilt of the giant blade. He gave off an aura as if he would attack if anything displeased him...

LordAsked frowned. These mad dogs. Humph, although distribution is important, but most important is the quest reward. Besides, he's right. Right now, they are basically quest NPCs. That medal, if I'm not wrong, is for viscounts. He's already a viscount in such a short amount of time? What feats did they accomplish? The system hasn't even started any wars yet...

NalanPureSoul smiled gracefully. “Brother Asked, we’ve already accepted the 10% proposal. Now most important is clearing up the Ravine of Death and opening a path to the north, right?”

“Then let’s go with Brother Heros suggestion.” LordAsked agreed in the end. He turned towards the Flame Dragon and Mad War representatives, and decided to find some time to deal with these extras. Then naturally, his share would increase. NalanPureSoul was thinking the same. Learning from Ye Cang, he made good-willed smiles at the two representatives. The two representatives had their breath taken away by that stunning smile.

“Alright, then it’s agreed.” Ye Cang reached his hand out to LordAsked. The two of them faced each other, one with a proud sneer, the other an indifferent smile. They contrasted like fire and water. LordAsked turned to leave. As he left, he glanced at Zhang ZhengXiong and faintly smiled, “Interesting...”

“Bro, it was him on the train...” LordGrinned didn’t even finish speaking. LordAsked’s chest tightened. Damn kid! Would it kill you not to ruin this old man’s mood!? He furiously chopped at the back of his head. “Have you not embarrassed yourself enough!”

“He’s also one of the knights under Mar Junior, and a highly regarded one at that...” Little Ye Tian indifferently said.

Ye Cang recalled Mar Junior’s dream of being the pope. Perhaps that guy would be a pretty good assistant. Black Rock City was their base, so they had to avoid internal strife as much as possible. Of course, if he could get rid of a few rivals, he could have a bigger share. Ye Cang also nodded at the Flame Dragon Union and Mad War branch representatives with a good-willed smile. The two of them nodded back at him and left.

“Those two guys are?” Ye Cang didn’t recognize them at all. He only knew they were Flame Dragon Union and Mad War’s branch representatives.

“BlackWind and LeftEar. Core members, they are both

substitutes in the clubs. Their strengths are alright..." ThornyRose quietly said.

"Whatever..." Ye Cang looked towards the large number of people who were asking about the three goddesses. Some were even asking about their star-sign and blood-type... and when they would descend.

In the eyes of the Happy Firmaments team, the three goddesses were like puppets, while Ye Cang was like a demon king, reaching his claws out of the darkness and toying with them. Well, it was not surprising, it had been a thousand years and their IQ... It's not that their IQ was low, but Team Leader was too formidable. FrozenCloud looked at ThornyRose who had to deal with it all, and immediately shivered. Good thing I'm only a minion... Sister Rose is too pitiful. ThornyRose turned and looked at FrozenCloud and sighed. Lil'Dino... Hah, too pitiful...

Everyone returned to their own associations. Ye Cang just sighed and looked at his adventurer association's front gate. He was about to become the boss of an association, so it would be better to leave this one. The moment he walked in, Linda and the old folks pulled him into a secret room.

"You've really answered the call of the three nature goddesses!?" Linda's trembling set off waves.

"Yeah. I've come to retire from the association. I've received the goddesses hopes and will be establishing one..." Ye Cang looked at everyone and calmly said.

Ye Cang realised that the room was unusually quiet. Everyone was contemplating something. Linda took a deep breath, then looked at the old folks. "Apologies, my Ars family has followed Anya for generations. My ancestors taught that some day in the future, goddess Anya would return. As the later generation that has received her protection, I must heed her call..."

"Haha, we're all old, but Linda, you're different. You're a pure-

breed elf, you won't age. I'll cherish the memories of us making our way in the Plantery Empire..." Granny Ivy hugged Linda with tears in her eyes.

"If possible, I want to be like you all. A long life doesn't always bring happiness..." Linda said tearfully.

Ye Cang broke out in cold sweat. So it turns out you and they were from the same generation. No wonder. Those weapons of yours were formed by absorbing the essence of time. "Cough cough, you mean..."

"I'll be joining your association, president..." Linda smiled helplessly.

"Even though you're in the something goddess association, you don't have to leave the adventurer's association..." Granny Ivy looked at Ye Cang and said. She turned to Linda, "If you need anything from us, just tell us. Not many in Black Rock City dare to provoke us..."

"Humph. I, Bale, might be old, but my axe is still sharp..." A 130cm tall old man clamored. Ye Cang watched as the elders tearfully bade farewell to Linda, and his heart warmed. Friends, comrades, brothers, and sisters for a lifetime. He walked in front of her and asked, "Do you regret that your race is so long lived?"

Linda only said, "Happiness never lasts forever, but pain will follow you to death..."

Ye Cang watched as she tightened her grip on her longbow, which was clearly sized for a man, and sighed. War? No matter where, war is always the greatest sin. The bodies of the innocent can pile into mountains. They suffer even more than those involved. Humans, artificial humans, mutated humans, will this war ever end?

Ye Cang let Linda be the vice president of the Goddess Association, in charge of Black Rock City. She would deal with all

matters inside the city. With Linda joining, when the passersby saw her killer body, they immediately went wild trying to join the goddess association. ThornyRose shivered. How much did these people rely on their lower bodies to think!? Then she had a flash of insight. Such a large amount of funds was right before her eyes! She began to sell membership cards and collect admission fees.

Ye Cang just returned to the grocery store to rest when he received Little Ye Tian's message. Mar Junior wanted to meet them? He came to Mar Junior's hall in the church, confused, and found him drinking. "Isn't it prohibited?"

"It's just on the surface. Archbishop Vivian is a famous female drunkard. If it was enforced, wouldn't that be asking for her life..." Mar Junior smiled.

## Chapter 419: Archbishop Magi

---

Ye Cang faintly smiled. He looked towards the sound that had emerged from the absolutely noiseless corner. If he hadn't seen it for himself, he wouldn't have been able to sense that presence. It was Archbishop Magi herself.

Ye Cang continued smiling, "For real? Archbishop Magi doesn't seem like a drunk... she's so just and strict!"

"That's because you've never stayed at the church. This is a 60 year old bottle of spirit wine. If I hadn't hid it well, it would have long been snatched away by her. I was once as naive as you..." Mar Junior pouted and poured himself another cup, then offered one to Ye Cang. "Sit down and drink with me..."

"I won't allow you to slander the great Archbishop Magi in front of me! Stop talking nonsense or I'll get mad!!" Ye Cang unexpectedly shouted out righteously, which made Mar Junior extremely speechless. What kind of mental illness has that white hair contracted? He suddenly felt a shiver up his spine. Could it be!? Dammit!

"Tsk tsk, if I hadn't heard that my daughter's hero had come to the church, I would have never known that you stinking brat saw me this way..." Mar Junior heard Archbishop Magi behind him. His back was immediately covered in cold sweat. He looked at Ye Cang and his heart tightened. Son of a b\*tch! Why didn't you tell me she was there! You actually hit me while I was down and used me to test the waters! He quickly turned, "I knew Lord Bishop would come, so I've prepared some good wine for you and Brother PaleSnow to enjoy. Those words just now were merely a joke. Lord Magi's ability to handle alcohol is the best in the church!"

"You honorable looking, crafty brat." Archbishop Magi couldn't help smiling as she sat down and saw the 60 year old spirit wine. "However, you brats really know how to live it up. This is good

stuff. I only get to drink a few bottles a year myself. Next time...”

“I’ll be sure to hand it over to you. No, no, hand it over to the church!” Mar Junior offered her the gift like a knight.

Archbishop Magi nodded satisfied. “May the light be with you...”

“.....” Ye Cang broke out in cold sweat. Was the church made up of hoodlums and ruffians?

“Cross, sit...” Archbishop Magi smiled.

“I hear you’ve been restoring the three nature goddesses’ shrines?” Mar Junior skipped the courtesies. Afterall, with the bishop beside him, it wasn’t proper to talk like friends.

“Mm. I explored three ruins in the Black Peaks, and accepted the three goddesses’ request. I’ve established the Goddess Association and am preparing to clear out the Ravine of Death. I’m also planning to restore the roads to their former prosperous state, but I’m not sure what the wasteland is like now...” Ye Cang wasn’t worried that their beliefs were different. He learned from Little Ye Tian that the nature Goddess and the God of light were siblings, so accordingly, the nature Goddesses’ three daughters were the God of light’s nieces. Though they wouldn’t be eliminated, they also wouldn’t receive any aid. At most, they could make some friendly connections.

“The old folks at the adventurers association specially came to me to request that I not make things difficult for you, because the Greedy Wolf has joined you...” Magi smiled.

“You mean that one who, by herself, intercepted the steel empire’s general Mala and his thousands of cavalry. The adventurer who, one year ago, annihilated her enemies to take revenge for her husband? That Greedy Wolf?” Mar Junior was startled.

“Her husband was a high-ranking officer in the Planetary Empire’s vanguard - Haluns. He died in order to save Black River



Village, which was at the frontier. After his death, Mala beheaded him and put him on display...” Magi knew about that part of history.

“After the elves migrated, nearly none were left in the north. She was a female slave who was sold in White Stone City. She was saved by Haluns. It was like a fairytale, however, there wasn’t a good ending...” Mar Junior supplemented. Ye Cang sighed. Now he knew Linda’s history...

“The lifespan of elves and humans already differ by many times. The two of them would eventually be...” Magi shook her head.

However, Ye Cang smiled and interrupted, “True love doesn’t care about time. Even an instant can become eternal, while a moment of suffering can last forever...”

The two looked at Ye Cang, astonished. They didn’t question him, however.

Ye Cang knew that he had still not gotten over it. He felt a bit of self-ridicule, but everyone had their own ambitions. Some people for authority, some for profit, some for sex, but he could never escape from that one word, ‘love’. Although not born together, but he hoped to die together. However, that ‘love’ was now impossible...

Magi looked at Ye Cang and raised her brows. That kid is such an emotional person? The man Gina picked indeed has his merits...

Ye Cang shook his head. “Right, I recently came across a lot of withered ash. Mar, do you need any?”

“Withered ash!? How much?!” Mar didn’t even have time to be amazed before Magi showed interest.

“Two warehouses full. I was planning to sell it for money...” Ye Cang muttered.

Mar knew it was that warehouse. They actually managed to fill two of those big warehouses!? That is practically 10,000 withered

shades! This kid's luck sure is good. Withered ash was useful for both the light and the dark type associations. For the church, it can be used to increase dark resistance and improve the fighting strength of shadow priests and the dark judges. It was a tier 3 strategic goods! Archbishop Magi was tempted, so he remained silent...

“Price wise, although we'll purchase at a slightly lower price, but... your honorary knight title, I can promote it for you. I'll personally recommend you for honorary knight captain...” Magi's words amazed Mar Junior. The honorary knight captain post wasn't low! It had real authority! They could apply for deployment! He thought of Gina and felt relieved. Was this the mother-in-law looking out for her future son-in-law?

Ye Cang didn't feel much when he heard he would be a be an honorary knight captain. He didn't really know what that meant, but since the Archbishop wanted it, he would give them to her. Selling them a little cheaper wasn't a big deal. After all, they still had to spend a long time in Black Rock City, and they needed to help Mar Junior rise the ranks. “Thank you Archbishop Magi...”

“Then what about this type of withered ash?” Ye Cang took out some of Rabbi's withered ash.

“Tier 2 goods, these can be sold for a good price. It's worth its weight in gold...” Mar Junior examined a bit of it and said.

“If you agree, you can sell that to me too, at twice the market price...” Archbishop Magi said.

Ye Cang nodded hesitantly. Then he felt something was wrong! Twice the market price? “Twice?”

“Mm...” Archbishop Magi nodded.

Mar Junior narrowed his eyes. This stuff was very rare, and was in high demand! Goods that only head priests and above would be allocated a bit of. It was impossible to buy it at the so called

‘market price’! If Archbishop Magi decided to resell it in another city, she would make many times profit. She was not making a loss, but rather a huge gain. The earlier withered ashe too...

## Chapter 420: Giant Owl No.2

---

Ye Cang earned 3,321 gold coins after selling the withered ashes and keeping some for personal use. For everyone at this stage of the game, 3,321 gold coins was quite an astronomical figure. Even though the big guilds were continuously buying gold from the black market, they could at most make tens of gold coins per day. However, the expenditure for constructing the shrine would also be very large...

Gina stood at the gates of the Church as she waved Ye Cang goodbye. Her face was filled with an expression of unwillingness and embarrassment, which confused Ye Cang. He shook his head and decided to visit Allie. When he reached her place, he saw Little Jessie and Little Marie playing in the courtyard. Instantly, he broke out in a cold sweat. Don't tell me that Little Marie is Little Jessie's girlfriend. Thinking up to this point, he saw Little Marie kiss Little Jessie on the lips. Of course...

When Little Marie saw Ye Cang, she brought Little Jessie to welcome him. Little Jessie looked at Ye Cang dubiously. How did white haired brother know I am here? As he saw how Allie and Ye Cang were conversing familiarly with each other, he thought, Their relationship will be even better in the future.

"It's been awhile since I've visited, let me cook you guys a little something..." Ye Cang stood up and walked towards the kitchen. Little Marie and Little Jessie were stunned, while Allie immediately held Ye Cang down "Its okay. I'll do it."

"It's alright, it's alright, don't be shy. Just leave it to me," Ye Cang once again smiled and turned towards the kitchen. Allie's smile instantly froze and she said in a cold tone, "Sit down..."

Ye Cang immediately sat down. This woman is so weird; normally she is quite friendly, it's just that she's too selfish when it comes to the kitchen. It's like her secret garden. She should share

it with everyone. Come to think of it, people who are quite skillful at cooking will have a desire to protect their 'territory'. This explains why she's so selfish.

In the kitchen, Allie sighed. If she let him near the kitchen tools, even a person with multiple lives would not be able to survive. Where does his confidence come from? To be able to mention cooking again...

Ye Cang regretfully patted Little Jessie and Little Marie's foreheads. "Because of Allie, you guys are missing my delicious cuisine. If you want to blame someone, blame her for being so territorial, rejecting other highly skilled chefs from entering her kitchen..."

"..." The both of them felt a bit ashamed. It's just you...

After joking around, Ye Cang brought Little Jessie back to the general shop. The shelves were filled with various superior and masterwork equipment; moreover, several groups of people were patronising his shop. Oh right, there was still one gold quality weapon that needed to be dealt with. It might be difficult to sell it via the shop. After a short while, he contacted Thorny Rose and gave her the weapon. "Help me sell it."

After finishing his sentence, Ye Cang headed towards Black Rock City's high-end auction house, leaving behind ThornyRose who was smiling bitterly. Is that guy going to the high-end auction house? Only people with titles can enter. A Viscount is already good enough. I bet there must be something good on auction, but its price will be quite exorbitant. Not that I can go in.

Once again, Ye Cang arrived at the high-end auction house. The guards took a look at his Viscount badge and did not obstruct his entry.

After entering the auction house, Ye Cang chose a seat and began to observe the auction. The item currently being bid on was an antique. After much bidding, the final price came to 300 gold. This

amount of money caused the audience to sigh, as all these luxuries were simply worth too much. The next item was a pair of firearms. The pair of guns had silver barrels with a length of 30cm. There were also several flowing lines on each barrel. One of the guns was bigger which only caused it to be even more attractive. Ye Cang rubbed his eyes. Was this really a dark gold firearm? So high-end!

“These are imported goods, the newest magic crystal equipment manufactured by Farsarqi Harbor City. The luxurious Giant Owl No.2, its starting price is 50 gold.” Ye Cang stroked his chin and thought, The starting price for this dark gold equipment is so cheap. This is all due to the natives and the residents’ different values. “50 gold!”

Ye Cang happily got the equipment when the price reached 100 gold, as everyone gave up due to the high price. The audience didn’t really prefer weaponry unless it was very special. Normally, the intense bidding would be on several luxury goods and rare resources.

Giant Owl No.2 - Left (Dark Gold, Magic Crystal Equipment)

Category: Medium-sized Handgun

Requirements: 100 Strength, 65 Agility

Damage: 31 - 32

+15 Strength

+10 Agility

+25 Firing speed

+45 Range

+30 Armor Penetration

Converging Shot - Giant Owl No.2: Absorbs large amounts of magic crystal energy. After 3 seconds, a slightly stronger piercing shot will be fired, dealing 200% attack damage. For every target pierced by the same shot, damage will decrease by 15%.

Cooldown: 5 minutes.

Magic Crystal equipment: To fire, a magic crystal energy source must be loaded.

Giant Owl No.2 - Right (Dark Gold, Magic Crystal Equipment)

Category: Large Caliber Handgun

Requirements: 107 Strength, 56 Agility

Attack: 33 - 34

+16 Strength

+9 Agility

+20 Firing speed

+55 Range

+35 Armor Penetration

Explosive Energy Bullet - Giant Owl No.2: Absorb large amounts of magic crystal energy. After 3 seconds, an unstable, explosive energy bomb will be fired, dealing 85 arcane damage in an area.

Cooldown: 5 minutes.

Magic Crystal equipment: To fire, a magic crystal energy source must be loaded.

Wings Of The Giant Owl - Giant Owl No.2 (Dual Gun Effect): Madly absorbs magic crystal energy, activating rapid fire mode. The interval between subsequent shots is decreased by 90%, lasting for 6 seconds. This overload mode will consume excessive amounts of magic crystal energy.

Cooldown: 1 hour.

Ye Cang gladly placed the guns at the sides of his waist. His equipment slots were now fully filled. The heavy bow and the spear were slung across his back, two guns at the sides of his waist, the drum and quiver at the back of his waist. In his bag was a ballista and in his shadow was a heavy crossbow. Haha, who has

more weapons than me now!

The remaining items were all artwork, which caused Ye Cang to lose interest. He left the auction house straight away. Looking at the crowds outside the gates of the goddess association, ThornyRose sighed at Linda's charm. Those people were crazy, especially those that were hunter and ranger classes. After learning that Linda was a class instructor, many of them cried to join the goddess association. She watched as Ye Cang raised up a large barreled handgun and fired into the sky. Instantly, the sky exploded into several brilliant energy light rays. At this moment, the crowd quietened down and created a path for him. What made people break out in a cold sweat was that Ye Cang even blew at the mouth of the gun and performed a fancy twirl before equipping it back at his waist.

ThornyRose laughed bitterly. The high-end auction house even has this kind of imported goods on sale. I can use him to help me buy any affordable equipment; after all, the values of the residents and that of the players differ. Maybe their equipment is not as expensive as our's.

“\*\*\*\*! Brother hero is already using guns! We are still using poor quality bows!”

“Stupid idiot! In this game, the bow has its own advantages, so does the gun.”

“So do you want a gun or a bow...”

“Tsk, the bow is too troublesome. Though the gun is less accurate, aiming and calculating the trajectory of a bullet is more suitable for us ordinary ranged players. However, Black Rock City doesn't manufacture firearms. There are still some religious cultures here that oppose the use of magic crystals.”

“Then how did Brother Hero get one?”

“Look carefully, that is Brother Hero, leader of the 3 Brothers,



Director of Black Rock City's Goddess Association..."

# Chapter 421: Association Instructors

---

ThornyRose saw that Ye Cang was armed to the teeth, looking like a damned wealthy person. It was too extravagant! Who in their right mind would equip so many weapons! Most rangers would equip one extra, but this guy's ranger class seemed to have talents that allowed him to equip even more...

“Greetings Brother Hero!” The crowds outside the association shouted.

Ye Cang raised his hand, “Please maintain order, there is room for everybody. The three nature Goddesses do not discriminate; no matter your race, no matter your strength, as long as you have faith, then you can join the Goddess Association. The shrines are currently undergoing reconstruction. They are at the Black Peaks. There is also an event to let everyone level up more easily. You should also know that the Goddesses can teach many hidden class skills.” With a wave of his hand, Ye Cang used his dual guns to lock onto 20 targets. Bang bang bang, streams of light shot out, weaving beautifully between the crowds. Many players felt an energy bullet pass right by their ear... This was a skill!? It could lock on to so many targets in an instant!?

“This is one of Goddess Anya's class skills. Work hard, Goddess believers... There will be a special surprise~~” Ye Cang blew on his two guns and pushed back his hood with the muzzle, showing all the men a ‘you know it’ expression.

“Surprise please!!” The men began to bow like a wave.

Ye Cang sighed, then nodded to Fang Ci. Fang Ci pulled aside the curtains. A portrait of Anya propping up her chest, looking exceptionally sexy, was revealed. Everyone immediately hunched over. Then they began to kneel. “We pledge our lives to the Goddess!”

“Very good...” Ye Cang signalled again. Fang Ci stored the picture

away.

ThornyRose looked at Ye Cang with a strange expression. What in the world did you do to those three Goddesses. You even have this kind of portrait that can almost be considered vulgar...

FrozenCloud just sighed. Those three Goddesses were definitely broken by Team Leader... they're actually happier the more he messes with them...

Really New Village's Three Brothers' fame shot up, becoming Black Rock City's symbolic figures. Their popularity was already no less than that of the four heavenly kings.

Lin Le completed the business task his president assigned him, supplying some withered ash, and was now one of the four leaders of the armed merchant association. He faintly raised his brows, sensing someone following him. He suddenly turned with his hand on his sword hilt. Hundreds of people recoiled. Lin Le pouted, who were these people? Having no idea, he continued to walk. The people behind him followed as before. Lin Le once again turned. Everyone once again backed up... Following which, Lin Le, like a manly hero, began to punch and kick! When he learned that everyone wanted to join the Goddess association, he said, "Go sign up. Just tell them that I, Brother Le, allowed it..."

"Thank you, brother Le is truly gracious!!" All the fans went to sign up. In a few short days, the Goddess Association's member count rose sharply. Out of the numerous associations in Black Rock City, they may not be among the top, but they were not low either. For a new association, it was already enough to make the other associations' eyes drop. Even Linda began to look at Ye Cang strangely. Just what had he done to the Goddesses. She looked down at the photobook that Ye Cang had passed her. He told her to take good care of it, and without his permission, she couldn't leak it...

After a period, an affable old man named Makarlo appeared. He

claimed to be a plant mage. He had come from Cool Breeze City after receiving the Goddess's call. His family worshipped Goddess Jam. Linda treated him very respectfully. She warned Ye Cang that this was a very frightening magister. By himself, he had the strength of an entire army. Ye Cang quickly promoted him to Vice-president, in charge of the association's politics and reconstruction. After Makarlo began overseeing the association, even Magi rushed over to greet him...

"That old fellow's magic power is too astonishing..." Magi left and told Mar Junior.

"Indeed, I can't see through him at all. I'm afraid he's a legion level magister..." Mar Junior nodded.

"Makarlo, I've never heard of him before... Such a powerful person, why has there not been any news about him in so many years..." Magi frowned, unable to understand.

Linda was also puzzled.

Towards these reactions, Makarlo raised his brows and stroked his grey beard that went past his waist. "Our family has stayed low-key for generations. We only enjoy researching plant magic and have always been waiting for Goddess Jam's summon in order to revive plant magic..."

Linda, as an elf, had a natural reverence for plant mages, let alone a great magister level plant mage. This was beyond rare. They were more prevalent in ancient times, but now, even ordinary plant mages were as rare as phoenixes and unicorns.

Ye Cang faintly nodded. Now Jam's class instructor had arrived, only Mallow's was left. Just as he thought that, what appeared to be a female centaur trotted over under the stunned gazes of the surrounding people. In her hand was a green crystal pike. It was as if it was both her pike and her staff in one. Her lower body had four hoofs, while her upper body had two massive jugs covered only by leaves. She also had an extremely beautiful and alluring

face. Her lower body was decorated by what appeared to be plum-blossoms. She looked at Ye Cang and inquired, "Excuse me... Are you the sage, Sir PaleSnow?"

The sage, Sir PaleSnow? ThornyRose and the others were all speechless. There was no such person!

"That's right, I'm the sage PaleSnow..." Ye Cang was very pleased with that title.

"I'm Maru Naya. I've received the great Goddess Mallow's prophecy and rushed over to receive your orders. Please allow me to contribute to the revival of nature magic." The half-deer, half-human beauty raised her pike and said earnestly.

"Such a powerful deer spirit. The power of nature in her is extremely pure..." Makarlo narrowed his eyes, nearly losing his voice in admiration.

"Good, good, let's talk inside..." Ye Cang walked over and courteously pulled her over. Then he leapt onto her back and rode her with a smile.

"Ok, sage PaleSnow..." Maru Naya didn't mind. Her hoofs trotted, bringing her up the stairs into the building.

Ye Cang had Little Ye Tian brainwash the three of them. She shared with them their goals, then ingrained in them their slogan, we definitely can't let the Goddesses down!!

"I lived in the enchanted forest all year round, so I am not familiar with the outer world. As for how to recruit believers..." Maru Naya said worriedly.

"No problem, we'll be in charge of recruitment. You'll be in charge of representing Mallows as a class instructor. You'll be unearthing the believers' potential and guiding them..." Little Ye Tian replied.

Maru Nana nodded and spoke with the nature goddess's etiquette. "I'll do my best. May Mallows be with you..."

“President, I have an idea. We can combine with the Adventurers Association, so that anyone in the Goddess Association can go there and receive missions. As long as we share the missions’ rewards, it is possible with some negotiations. Leave it to me...” Linda patted her chest, making waves in the calm sea.

Makarło squinted, staring into the marine crevice, his mouth faintly open. This is a good association. “I approve...”

ThornyRose was at the doorway, speechless. Old man, your eyes are about to fall in! She turned and saw that Ye Cang was the same. He even leaned his head over. She facepalmed and sighed.

# Chapter 422: Clearing the Ravine of Death

---

Of the three shrines, Ye Cang planned to first restore the one closest to Bal Village, Mallow's shrine. The danger there was relatively lower, and required less work. Little Ye Tian proposed that they first construct the main temple, then go clear up the Ravine of Death. Under Ye Cang's leadership, Little Ye Tian personally oversaw and directed the expensive construction masters that Rica had hire from Black Rock City. The goddess association members were all either helping with construction or leveling up in the dangerous Black Peaks...

Using a week of time, they managed to fix the main temple and the bridge. SpyingBlade stood guard by the Goddess' statue in case someone tried to sneak over. As for the surrounding people, they could take a break as they waited for more work. The day before the completion of the temple, Ye Cang had deliberately gone to the goddess statue and called for her. It was just that his method of calling her was hard to accept. However, FrozenCloud and the others were used to it. Such a sexual thing had become a very ordinary matter due to Team Leader. Mallow's avatar shyly descended. Ye Cang had her change into some impressive and dignified clothes, did her hair, and propped up her breasts. The clothes supported her chest and stuck tightly to her skin. Her two missiles looked like they would shoot out at any moment, which made it hard to for others to look away.

Ye Cang warned her that when he brought people to make a pilgrimage, she should appear like this. Moreover, she had to be bold and dignified, as if she were not to be touched. They even rehearsed it...

The next day.

Ye Cang grandly led the association's hungry men to the main temple. Light began to descend onto the throne. Mallow's avatar slowly appeared. She sat on the throne, looking awe-inspiring. Her

missiles made all the hungry men kneel...

Mallow slowly got up. “Maru Naya, from now on, you’re in control of this shrine. Instruct the believers. My believers, as long as you have faith in me, then you will obtain the purest nature energy...”

“Yes, great nature goddess Mallow!” Maru Naya saluted respectfully.

Everyone watched as Mallow’s whose green nature energy filled the entire shrine. A burst of pleasure filled their bodies and minds. It felt like they had been healed. Under the green light, Mallow appeared even more beautiful. Her missiles began to stir...

“I’m done for, this is too much...”

“I pledge my loyalty to Goddess Mallow!”

“Long live!”

Everyone was kneeling. The Thorns and Roses girls also kneeled with them, but their voices were lacking in strength, “Long live...”

“Very good, in order for you to clear Prosperity Hill quicker, receive my nature blessing!!” Mallow slowly gathered up the green energy, then poured it into everyone’s bodies.

“Congratulations, you’ve obtained Mallow’s Nature Blessing. +15% all attributes, +15% defence, +15% attack, recover 1% health every 15 seconds, recover 1% mana every 30 seconds, +50% nature and poison resistance, +15% will, lasts for 7 days.”

After the blessing, Mallow sat down, somewhat short of breath. In her exhaustion, her chest undulated greatly. Her missiles were only a button press away from taking off. “Believers, brave warriors, with the shrine just completed, my strength is still recovering. I can only help you this much...”

After speaking, she began to gradually disappear. In the emptiness, everyone heard a cute and bashful shout, “Ah! They



popped out...”

All the hungry men continued to kneel, unable to get up. “Just one second! Then we would have been able to see the lift-off!! This is too much! Goddess Mallow!!”

“.....” The Thorns and Roses women, LordAsked, NalanPureSoul, and the others all broke out in a cold sweat. What a group of idiots they had here.

LordAsked sighed. He turned and saw that LordGrinned was also kneeling and beating the ground in frustration. A chop struck, knocking him unconscious. Always embarrassing this old man!

ThornyRose and LordAsked watched the unaffiliated players all roar spontaneously. “It’s a crusade against the Ravine of Death! Protect the three goddesses! All evil that stands before our goddesses, we, the righteous goddess association, will trample it!”

Ye Cang nodded satisfactorily. This plan was inspired by what he learned from La HongYe’s class in the capital. “As a great strategist, I’m truly too amazing...”

FrozenCloud and Wu Na both shivered. There was some truth to his words. Normally he would come up with the crazy strategies, while Lele would fill in the ‘finishing touches’. They looked into the crowd where Lin Le was shouting. “You evil Ravine of Death, it’s all your fault that we didn’t get to see the missiles lift off! Lele will punish you! Trample it!” It sounded like there were 10,000 voices shouting with him... As expected of Happy Firmament’s king of bad ideas.

Maru Naya, Linda, and Makarlo were on standby at the ravine entrance. In case something happened, the group would at least have somewhere to retreat to.

As they reached the ravine, Ye Cang signalled for everyone to stop. He called LordAsked over with a smile. “Brother Asked will now make a speech!”

LordAsked was speechless; however, he had already walked up. He slowly walked forwards a step, giving off the air of a tyrant. He coldly pulled out his longsword and pointed it towards the ravine. “Although this is a small step into the ravine of death, but it is a big leap towards the goddesses and rewards! For the three goddesses!!”

“For the three goddesses!!” Everyone shouted.

Ye Cang raised his brows and thought, that guy is pretty quick witted, he grasped all the key points. He then began preparing the cafeteria, so that the core group could buff up. LordAsked looked at the tens of pots that already had everyone in the canyon retching. “Brother PaleSnow, this is...”

“The core members should all get food buffs. This is my personal recipe, it’s not something that just anyone can eat...” Ye Cang said in a strange voice.

LordAsked endured the odor that nearly made him faint and checked out the food buff. It was pretty awesome! He had originally thought that Brother Diamond’s auras were already amazing enough; he never thought they would also have such a powerful food buff. However, that smell was many times worse than how Ji Xiao had described it. The surrounding crowd saw that before the great war even started, all the core guild and association members had already passed out from food-poisoning. The scene was accompanied by a burst of stench...

After buffing up, everyone entered the ravine. There were caves everywhere, some on steep cliffs, some going underground. Occasionally, they could see some giant insects appearing. As they entered the ravine, countless kagu bugs swarmed out. The battle started immediately. The archers and spellcaster began to bombard the field. LordAsked and NalanPureSoul quickly divided their troops, with a portion to take on the kagu bugs, and another to lead the cave exploration. Ye Cang also brought his little party and chose a sandy cave to explore.

“Father, such a big nest definitely has a broodmother-like existence. Our target should be to annihilate the brood mother. With such a complicated underground network, every path should be able to lead us there...” Little Ye Tian said while analysing the surrounding bugs.

## Chapter 423: Divide and Conquer

---

“Brother hero, is that true? Then let us see who will be the first to reach it...” LordAsked said as he led his elites down a hole.

“We’re splitting up?” NalanPureSoul didn’t object and led his own people into another entrance.

Ye Cang’s group continued going deeper. The tunnel began to violently shake. SpyingBlade signalled everyone to stop. They all watched as a stampede of bagu beetles appeared in front of them...

“The higher-class bugs must have ordered them to go to the various exits...” Little Ye Tian analysed. Ye Cang held his two guns in his hands. “Lele, set this part of the tunnel on fire, take out as many as you can...”

Lin Le swung his bag and 5 molotovs blocked their tunnel with flames. He then threw a bottle of glue at the edge of the fire to protect against the beetles’ charge. The swarm of bagu bugs charged through the sea of flames towards them; however, the front row got stuck on the glue, and the rest began to crash into them. They became extremely disordered.

With a flick, two acid bottles were tossed out. Acid sprinkled over the bugs that were struggling in the glue causing their shells to corrode. Ye Cang raised his two guns which madly absorbed energy from the magic crystal as he used Rapid Fire. His two guns unleashed a hail of energy bullets which penetrated through their targets. SpyingBlade saw his experience continuously increase. Ye Cang pushed the button on his pistols. Two empty magic crystals fell to the ground and he inserted two new ones. He pushed the button again after reloading, then aimed with his right hand and activated the skill Multishot! The magic crystal sensed Ye Cang’s mana, extracted the appropriate amount of energy, and performed a Multishot. Tens of bullets shot out. Meanwhile, his other hand stored power for an Explosive Bullet!

Wu Na and the others saw his awesome new weapons and chose to sit back and watch. After the explosive bullet, Ye Cang holstered his guns and took out his ballista. He aimed it down the tunnel, and fired a Meteor Shot! The spiralling queen bee bolt went all the way to the far wall. All the bagu bugs that had come down the tunnel were exterminated. SpyingBlade looked at the system messages. There were 105 of them... There were even 10 elites among them. Such powerful ranged firepower. This was probably his most powerful burst damage. “Next time you go to the high-end auction, keep an eye out for us too...”

“Alright...” Ye Cang put away his ballista and once again took out his dual guns. These things were really handy. Their burst speed was pretty fast, shooting a shot every 1.3 seconds. He committed the Farsarqi Harbor to memory, vowing to go there to resupply in the future!

“Brother Lil’White. Let me play with the new toys...” Lin Le ran up to Ye Cang and pouted. Ye Cang made a ‘what do I do with you’ expression and handed them over. “Give them back when we fight a boss...”

“Mm!!” Lin Le happily put away his giant sword, and held a gun in each hand. He saw a captured bagu bug, rapidly leapt over, then fiercely smashed it with the butt of the gun. He pistol-whipped it two more times, killing it, then raised them high, “They’re pretty good...”

“That’s not how you use them!” Everyone roared.

“Father, when we get back, lend me the guns. I’ll bring them to the laboratory to analyse them. Perhaps we can even reverse-engineer its design structure and recreate the blueprint...” Little Ye Tian’s words made Ye Cang very happy. Right, Little Tian is an engineer. “As expected of Little Tian, I’ll leave it to you...”

“Of course father, this is my duty...” Having received his praise, Little Tian was very happy.

Lin Le saw Little Ye Tian raise her chin proudly at him, and he pouted. Bad Little Tian...

Little Ye Tian sneered. In the laboratory, my first product, the amplification devices, are about to be completed. Father will definitely be very happy. Damn Lele, although your alchemy is useful, but they're all low-end goods. I'll show you what advanced science is!!

Lin Le smelled a conspiracy. What is that baddy Little Tian plotting. However, Lele isn't isn't easy to mess with! Humph!

SpyingBlade and the others saw the two of them and sighed. Those two brats...

The insect swarm gradually passed and they killed their way into the main tunnel. Ye Cang retrieved his queen bee bolt and reloaded it. Everyone advanced through the tunnel in the direction the bugs had come from and found a downward hole. SpyingBlade suddenly stopped. He looked up towards the upper right where there was something in a pouch of sticky fluid. "There's a treasure chest..."

Before he could finish speaking, Zhang ZhengXiong moved to intercept. FrozenCloud supported him. Wu Na positioned herself between Ye Cang's and the chest, blocking him. Lin Le raised a gun and shot, shooting open the sticky pouch. The chest immediately fell to the ground. He jogged over and opened it. "We got a skill book and blueprint!"

"What! Skill book + Blueprint!?" SpyingBlade was surprised. Equipment would eventually be replaced, but some skills would remain forever useful. There weren't that many skill books, and not everyone could be like Team Leader with his numerous diverse skills. Even with how many he had, he could still use more. As for blueprints, they were extremely rare...

"Hah, why don't you trust me..." Ye Cang grumbled as he took the skillbook and showed it to everyone.

### Fearless Charge (Bagu Bug - Uncommon):

Charge fiercely towards a target location with a big increase in speed. Every time you crash into a target, speed is decreased by 15%. Lasts until the destination is reached or speed falls below a certain point. Deals strength + constitution / 2 damage. Every target hit reduces damage by 15% (damage is affected by speed). Chance to cause stun or knockback.

Cost: 25 rage.

Cooldown: 1 minute 30 seconds.

### Bagu Beetle Mixture:

Use to increase strength and constitution by 15 points, defence by 12 points.

Lasts 4 hours.

SpyingBlade was amazed by the drug. The materials weren't hard to get, and Lele's crafting would give it increased effectiveness. With this drug, their survivability could be upgraded a little more.

“For the skill, it's better to give it to Shaking Bear. The blueprint, only Lele can concoct...” FrozenCloud proposed. No one objected. Ye Cang directly handed them out.

“Brother Lil'White, wait for me to find the ingredients in the cart and make some drugs before going down...” Lin Le began to make the Bagu Bug Mixtures. He made about ten and distributed them to everyone. After they used it, they all entered the hole into the depths.

Meanwhile, LordAsked's side had avoided the insect swarm and had also continued deeper. At an intersection, they actually ran into the Flame Dragon Union's branch members, who were fighting an elite beetle. Without saying a word, he activated his AOE attack and cleaned them all up.

NalanPureSoul also aimed for the Mad War branch members who

were locked in a fight against a large amount of bagu bugs. With a faint smile, a rain of fire was unleashed, followed by a grasp into the air and a violent explosion. The area was only left with a bunch of burnt corpses... He waved his hand and they continued advancing...

As for ThornyRose, she was advancing very cautiously.

“Sister Rose, why aren’t we following Team Leader and the rest...” Little Jade grumbled.

“Those guys ran too fast. Also, if we can, then we should do our best to explore it by ourselves. Secondly, we can find clues more quickly by splitting up, then meet up later.” ThornyRose said unhappily.



## Chapter 424: Sandworm Path

---

Although there were many bagu beetles, they weren't enough to stop the players. At most, three or four people would need to work together against one. As for elites, a support player would be needed. The drop-rate of equipment was pretty good, thus, no one complained when many people died as the people behind them would fill in their spots. What made everyone extremely happy was that the goddess's blessing didn't disappear on death. They all formed teams and continued to kill their way through the Ravine of Death. The weaker ones would stay on the surface and fight kagu bugs. Their gains were also pretty good and they were having a relatively easier time...

Ye Cang and his team arrived at a fork in the road, and stopped.

Ye Cang turned to the left and saw an open cavern that looked like it would have a boss, so he slowly walked over. He examined the interior with his Eagle Eyes, and was puzzled by the fact that there was nothing inside. Entering the hundred or so meter wide cavern, he still hadn't discovered any living creature. This made Ye Cang even more alert. "Everyone be careful, especially of the ground..."

SpyingBlade laid low and put his ear against the ground. A droning sound was getting closer and closer. He leapt to the side and cried out in alarm, "Disperse!!"

Everyone quickly began to scatter. They did their best to get far away from the spot. In a flash, the ground split open and an enormous earthworm like creature emerged. Its head had no eyes, but its mouth was horrifying, like a sucker that was coated in sharp teeth.

Ye Cang immediately identified it. In the moment he had jumped back, he'd already drawn his two guns and sent three shots. As he landed, he continued to move and shoot. His damage was

extraordinary. Wu Na, Wang, and Fang Ci quickly found a relatively safer spot and prepared to output damage.

Sandworm (Boss - Abyss - Wasteland Worm):

A creation of the God of Death, it can be found in the wastelands. One of the creatures most feared by travellers. It can appear and disappear unpredictably and without a trace. It will never rest until it is dead, and its attacks are extremely strong; however, this one is just a common sandworm. Sandworm meat is an excellent cooking ingredient.

Zhang ZhengXiong charged over with a Barbaric Tackle. The worm boss swung its body like a whip.

Zhang ZhengXiong quickly jumped over it like he was jumping a skipping rope. Without slowing down, he crashed into it. Its body stopped. He was just about to attack, when the worm instantly retracted into the sandy soil.

“Careful, it’ll definitely lock onto someone...” SpyingBlade reminded the others while wandering around and sensing the movement underground. Wu Na activated her Frost Armour and began to walk around. Such a disgusting boss. The Ice Arrow that she had just cast had been wasted because it burrowed underground.

Little Ye Tian wanted to use calculations to figure out who it would attack. The most probable targets were her father, as well as Nana, and Brother Xiong. Those three had attacked it, though only Father and Brother Xiong had hit. Then... it was probably father...

Ye Cang crouched and put a hand on the ground. He faintly smiled. So fast, it’s me?

Everyone watched as the worm suddenly broke out of the ground. It’s enormous mouth instantly swallowed Ye Cang.

“Team Leader!!” FrozenCloud shouted. Zhang ZhengXiong wasn’t worried. My bro isn’t so easy to hit.

Just at that moment, an explosion of water could be heard from the bug's mouth, followed by a cry of pain. A burst of water shot out of its giant mouth. As for Ye Cang, he was tens of meters away. His ballista was already ready with a Meteor Shot and his Shadow Weapon heavy crossbow was also summoned. The king and queen bee bolts immediately pierced it. A damage of over 500 floated up.. FrozenCloud smiled bitterly. If Team Leader's crossbows hit a player, it would be an instant kill.

While the worm was temporarily unable to burrow into the ground; SpyingBlade, Lin Le, and Little Ren besieged it with various combos. The worm's health, under the bombardment of these three powerful attackers, fell like a receding tide. Zhang ZhengXiong laughed. Fearless Charge! The moment the impact hit the worm, even Zhang ZhengXiong was dumbstruck. The terrifying force of the impact directly knocked over half the worm out of the ground, putting it into a long 4 second stun...

Zhang ZhengXiong quickly looked at the system records. He had activated the Super Speed effect of his ring, increasing his speed by 5 times. That passive was truly too awesome. SpyingBlade also guessed that it was that passive. It would probably cause many people to misunderstand. It was impossible to predict his movement speed. If he ever triggered Super Speed, he would arrive in an instant, just like that damn golden slime.

An Ice Spear pierced through it. Shadow Arrows bombarded it. Ice, blades, and projectiles flew. Ye Cang's dual guns entered overdrive mode. Lin Le slashed like a berserker. Explosive Bullet, Holy Judgement, Armed Destruction; under such an indiscriminate slaughter, it was quickly killed.

"Players PaleSnow, HeavenShakingMight, HappyAndCheerful, SpyingBlade, Fang, NightSky, Nana, and OldWangFromNextDoor have successfully slain the Ravine of Death's Sandworm!!"

Just two minutes after the players received this message, Lord's Reign boss kill announcement was broadcasted.

“Bro, we were a few minutes slow...” LordGrinned spoke and got another smack on the head.

LordAsked was in a bad mood. “I don’t need you to tell me! Go! Continue! F\*\*k, this boss is rich. It actually dropped dark gold equipment, and it’s a guaranteed drop. There’s news from that transvestite’s side, it appears they got a dark gold too...”

NalanPureSoul looted the boss that they had met and distributed the equipment. He looked to the depths, his beautiful eyes wandering in thought. Ye Cang, the more I investigate him, the more blurred his identity seems. Just what is hiding behind that white figure. He recalled a report of a white haired young man on a rainy day holding the broken corpse of a woman while weeping. After she died... what exactly happened? It’s as if the him after that didn’t exist. Only some simple speculations... Such a difficult man.

And at this moment, that difficult man was pressed to the ground by his teammates and was crawling forwards like a zombie. He wasn’t purified until Lin Le looted the corpse and took out the equipment. Then he got up while complaining and distributed the loot. There were two dark gold items, which left them amazed. The boss wasn’t that hard. It was easy compared to the marsh walker.

“It should be because this is an event. If you consider that there are so many people participating, it isn’t much...” SpyingBlade shook his head. Without the others participating and lending their aid, getting to a boss would be impossible.

“What about the two equipment?” Ye Cang posted the stats for the semi-transparent green oversized sword and the heavy shoulder guard. The oversized sword’s damage reached a massive 41 points. It had no active skill, but it had a passive with a certain percentage chance to deal extra damage, which was very practical. The heavy shoulder guard was a high strength equipment with a shoulder tackle active, which happened to be a piece of equipment that Lin Le needed to change. Moreover, he was the only one who

could use it. Lin Le took off his set, then put on the prepared dark gold and gold equipment. The enormous bone sword was also put into the cart, and he equipped the new sword on his back. The skeletal set appearance was now replaced by a wild fighter-like appearance. His attributes increased by quite a bit, but losing the set effect was a bit unfortunate. With SpyingBlade's suggestions, they didn't plan to sell it off. The aura from the set effect would still be useful in many situations...

# Chapter 425: Gathering in the Broodmother's Nest

---

The main fighting force followed the tunnels, gradually going downwards. The insects they met now were practically all elites. The surface was taken care of by the surrounding players who were fighting very happily. Especially the members of the goddess association. When they heard the news that Ye Cang's group had taken down the first boss, their morale soared.

The next bosses that Ye Cang's group met didn't pose much of a threat. Lin Le continued to swap out his equipment, getting a mask, battle boots, and a belt. It was as if he had completely transformed, once again becoming the strongest melee damage dealer.

However, the first to reach the depths was not Ye Cang's group, but LordAsked's. They were currently fighting a giant broodmother. The dozen of them were fighting a bitter battle and couldn't spare the time to talk. After all, the broodmother was an event boss. It continuously spawned elite insects. The next to arrive was NalanPureSoul's group. Even with them helping, it was difficult to keep up with the spawns. The broodmother was protected by countless guards, such that not even a drop of water could get to it. They could only maintain the status quo for now...

"I don't know when Brother PaleSnow will arrive. With just us, this place is still a bit difficult. If we had Brother Diamond's auras, the pressure would decrease many times over..." NalanPureSoul said.

"Humph, it doesn't matter whether they come or not. Go all out and clear these out, then kill the broodmother!" LordAsked said with disdain.

"So that's how it is. A'Xiong, let's sit by the entrance and watch..." Ye Cang arrived just in time to hear LordAsked's words,

and nodded approvingly. He sat by the cave entrance and began to drink magic spring water. Everyone began to file their nails or chat about clothes.

LordAsked's heart tightened. That brat is really untimely. How can I take back my words!? He ground his teeth and shouted, "Go all out and attack!!!!"

"Brother Asked, so bold. Good luck!" Ye Cang began to dance and cheer together with Weak Sauce.

That damn bastard!! LordAsked gnashed his teeth as he glared at the dancing Ye Cang.

"Brother PaleSnow, stop kidding around. Hurry and help. This doesn't only affect Lord's Reign, but the three goddesses' recovery..." NalanPureSoul mediated.

FrozenCloud and the others all shook their heads. Team Leader doesn't care. The three goddesses are just his toys. They are suffering terribly under his toying, getting touched everywhere and bullied, and are even extremely happy about it. They can't be considered his superiors. Team Leader is basically their manager and pimp. He controls them firmly.

"It's fine. About the three goddesses' recovery, if this time isn't successful, then I can organize another one..." Ye Cang waved it off, not caring.

"....." NalanPureSoul and the others all looked pained.

"Brother PureSoul, hurry. In the final distribution, you can have a bit extra..." NalanPureSoul saw that even more elites were coming and shouted in a lovely voice.

"Brother Asked, what do you say..." Ye Cang made an embarrassed smile, and rubbed his head.

F\*\*k, I'll remember this! He clenched his teeth, "Alright..."

"What! Brother PureSoul and Brother Asked are in danger! We're

such good teammates, how can we sit here and do nothing! Go!” Ye Cang immediately roared righteously.

FrozenCloud and the others all rolled their eyes. Team Leader’s nature was impossible to understand. They all joined the battle to clear up the elites...

ThornyRose also arrived. Ye Cang looked at her and nodded. He put on a leader-like air and sighed, “You finally arrived? Come, you’re the only ones left...”

ThornyRose broke out in a cold sweat. I’m the president! It will never be your turn! Although she said that, in her mind, she still led her people to join the battle.

Ye Cang’s dual guns’ ranged firepower was extremely fierce. LordAsked couldn’t help raising a brow. The strength of those guns are pretty good. At least dark gold quality! Just where did this guy get something so good!? His longsword sliced at a group while the shield in his other hand rose to block a spurt of acid.

ThornyRose saw LordAsked’s paladin playstyle. He’s a shield knight. Does that guy want to be a tank? However, his playstyle really suits it. Whether it was tank, damage, or large swords, he was a peak expert at all of them. She was only surprised that he was a tank because he had never leveled one before...

Ye Cang activated his Giant Owl No.2’s overdrive mode, and began to shoot a hail of bullets. Lin Le did not hold back as he turned the battlefield into the familiar sea of flames. Zhang ZhengXiong was prepared to go for the boss at any time. He faced the front and stored up power, waiting for his chance. SpyingBlade, FrozenCloud, NalanMoon, and LordGrinned took out the bugs that got through the sea of fire.

Is this the trump card that allowed them to get here? An Alchemical product, a molotov-like item. That burn damage is fairly impressive and the bugs here are mostly weak to fire-type damage, so it has a restraining effect! LordAsked turned and saw



that Zhang ZhengXiong was simply clearing up the ones that slipped through. Waiting for the boss? He turned and looked at the so called Mad Devil Le. He changed all his equipment! He had been wearing a set ever since Really New Village. In order for it to be better than a set, then he must be wearing at least a full outfit of gold quality equipment! They developed so fast, but I won't fall behind... In a few steps, he arrived beside Zhang ZhengXiong. "You can be my assistant. I'll take this boss... newbie..."

Zhang ZhengXiong frowned. He turned towards LordAsked. "Your joke isn't funny at all. It should be you assisting me, kid..."

"You should speak more respectfully to your elders, brat. Has your boss never taught you manners?" LordAsked smiled. This guy is interesting!

"Beside my bro and my teacher, no one else deserves my respect. What status do you have!?" Zhang ZhengXiong turned towards him and sneered, his gaze full of provocation.

"Haha, such an interesting newbie! What status do I have!? I'll teach you how to be respectful to your elders..." LordAsked also turned. The two of them approached each other, eyes locked on each other.

"Then show me how you intend to teach me, senior LordAsked..." Zhang ZhengXiong's violent aura erupted. He looked down at LordAsked like a demon god. LordAsked faced him like a peerlessly ruthless and wild tyrant. Everyone glanced at them, apprehensive.

"Really A'Xiong. Brother Asked is our senior, so it's normal for him to have a bit of a temper..." Ye Cang continued shooting as he walked over and put a hand on Zhang ZhengXiong's shoulder. "Brother Asked, my little brother asking you what status you have is a sign of respect. Of the four heavenly kings, we've killed one. Only you and CloudDragon are left. I don't know who killed Brother PureSoul, but only you and CloudDragon are left. Don't

take offence...”

LordAsked froze, then started to laugh heartily. “Interesting! Really interesting! If I wasn’t facing Flame Dragon, I would want my next opponent to be you guys... I’m not as wishy-washy as MistyVeil. CloudDragon? In my eyes, he’s just an unbridled youngster...”

“Bro! CloudDragon and you are from the same generation...” LordGrinned didn’t forget to come back and join in.

A chop descended from the heavens, knocking him to the ground. “Do I need your bullsh\*t! Whose f\*\*king side are you on! You never learn! If you weren’t my little brother! I would have torn you apart!!”

Ye Cang and the others watched LordAskedbeat up Lord Grinned and broke out into cold sweat. Just how bad was Ji Xiao at socializing... He had already been beaten up by Ye Cang multiple times. If there was someone whose every word came out wrong, it would be him...

# Chapter 426: Racketeering

---

LordAsked's attacks were very fierce yet he didn't lose his flexibility. His fighting wasn't fancy, but it still made Ye Cang raise a brow and narrow his eyes. He would be a problematic foe. In a duel, Ye Cang could win, but the chances weren't high. These games were truly interesting...

Ye Cang faintly smiled. He ejected the depleted magic crystals and rapidly replaced them with new ones, then continued to move and shoot, clearing up the bagu bug and kagu bug elites...

SpyingBlade, Lin Le, and Little Ren cut through the enemy ranks like a pair of scissors, bringing about spurts of bug fluids and dismembered limbs. Wu Na and Wang supported them with ice magic. Fang Ci controlled two withered shades and Bali to cast curses and deal dark damage.

That group's teamwork is too good, LordAsked thought to himself. The little girl's healing is so powerful. That Big Diamond guy's auras and that necromancer's curses and spirit damage, are both very effective... He turned and looked at Ye Cang's hail of bullets and the three tyrannical vanguards. His mouth raised into a smile. He smashed forward with his shield and sent a bagu bug flying into a wall. A stab of his sword impaled it dead...

A burst of fire rained down. Ye Cang's two hands glowed with flames. Light Strike Array burst up from the ground and mixed with the Rain of Fire as it fell. NalanPureSoul reached out and grasped the air. The violent explosion of fire surprised even LordAsked. As expected of the best spellcaster, the damn transvestite, NalanPureSoul.

After cleaning up the numerous bugs, everyone rushed towards the 'throne room', stepping over the corpses that littered the ground. NalanMoon looked around at everyone. This was a gathering of Black Rock City's most powerful, besides a couple of

solo players. She looked at LordAsked's domineering and unstoppable charge. The Tyrant, LordAsked. She then looked at Zhang ZhengXiong's berserk charge with his giant axe, like a human gundam. Brother Diamond - HeavenShakingMight... It would have been good if I had tried harder to rope them into the Freedom Alliance. Hah. However, it's only the desperate Thorns and Roses that can afford to take that gamble, staking everything. ThornyRose's courage and boldness makes her very eye-catching. Just like a few years ago, when she had suffered a crushing defeat against Flame Dragon, but her eyes still burned with fighting spirit. She's slowly matured, but that hot-headed gaze is hard to forget. No one truly looks down on her...

NalanMoon's gaze turned to Ye Cang, who had replaced his guns with a bow. The leader of this season's biggest dark horse team, the head of Really New Village's Three Brothers - Brother Hero - PaleSnow. An extremely vile personality that he even shows off in the leagues. He's taken more technical fouls than any other players would in their entire lives. His dead eyes were always dull, making it hard to understand him. As for Mad Devil Le, he was just like his name. It was hard to guess what he would do next. Always doing terrifying things with a cute smile. Finally she looked to SpyingBlade. A near heavenly king level assassin... She sighed.

As they made their way in, everyone saw that on a protruding hill was an over 10 meter large bug. It looked a lot like a mantis, but half its body looked like a human woman's, it's just that her build was very large and her appearance was extremely sinister and terrifying. In place of her two hands were two enormous, black, mantis scythes. She faced everyone and released a crazy scream. The insect swarm became even fiercer, increasing the pressure on everybody.

Before his field of view was entirely blocked by insects, Ye Cang identified her.

Chilvini (Insect - Abyss - Canyon of Death Boss):

The broodmother of the kagu bugs. Can mass produce various types of kagu and bagu bug larvae. The ruler of her kind. Her flesh is extremely delicious and succulent, an extremely valuable ingredient!

“It can’t go on like this...” Ye Cang remarked.

“Divide the forces. One team opens the way, the other attacks!” LordAsked proposed.

“That way, I fear we won’t last long...” NalanPureSoul frowned.

“We won’t last long like this either... We can’t retreat...” LordAsked warned.

“Brother PaleSnow, does your side still have molotovs?” NalanPureSoul thought of a way, however it required a massive amount of Lin Le’s molotovs.

NalanPureSoul thought of how on their way here, Ye Cang had never let Mad Devil Le over-use the fire. Did they not have enough?

“3G fee for each. Thank you for your patronage...” Ye Cang faintly smiled.

NalanPureSoul’s chest immediately constricted. So not using the molotovs was to bleed me and LordAsked dry! He faintly trembled, recalling ThornyRose’s nickname for him. Lowlife... He sighed deeply, “Brother Asked and I will buy 30 bottles each...”

LordAsked’s brows furrowed, “So expensive? You trying to rob me?”

“To clear this area, we need them...” NalanPureSould’s word made LordAsked accept it, half doubtful and half hopeful. Ye Cang signalled Lin Le that it was ok to throw molotovs now. LordAsked watched as a sea of fire took shape. NalanPureSoul’s Kindle turned him into an endless battery. The pressure from the insect swarm decreased.

LordAsked immediately understood and clenched his teeth. This was practically a scam! He didn't use it until now just to scam some money from them. Could that oil really cost 3 gold!?

NalanMoon smiled bitterly. Profiteer wasn't enough to describe him. He was the even crueler racketeer...

LordAsked looked at Lin Le. They're letting him throw all of them? Then he must have a talent to increase the effects. Armed Merchant, a special class from the Armed Chamber of Commerce. Up until now, he is the only player member of Black Rock City's Armed Chamber of Commerce. They seem similar to a crime syndicate; violent loans, violent sales, violent delivery...

This phase slowly came under control. LordAsked more or less assented, and they used nearly 100 molotovs. It looked like they had come prepared. Eventually, all that were left were some scattered elites, which were no longer a threat. The broodmother slowly walked down from its throne-like hill.

"The second phase... Everyone be careful." ThornyRose shouted.

The broodmother didn't charge at them after coming down. Instead, it screamed once again.

Now that their field of view had opened up, Ye Cang noticed that there was a tunnel to the right! There was also a tunnel at the top. He was about to warn everyone, but a bagu beetle that was only slightly smaller than the boss crawled out. There was also a huge kagu bee. Everyone frowned. There were 3 bosses!

"Leave the one in the sky to us..." Little Ye Tian said seriously.

LordAsked nodded. Their ranged firepower was pretty good. He immediately said stubbornly, "Then we'll hold back the broodmother..."

"Alright, us and Thorns and Roses will be in charge of the beetle and small ones..." NalanPureSoul didn't object.

ThornyRose nodded without a word.

The battle could start at any moment! LordAsked directly charged towards the broodmother. NalanMight led some people towards the beetle. NalanPureSoul looked at Ye Cang's group, who had no intentions of intercepting the boss. He wrinkled his brows. They are...?

# Chapter 427: Killing the Broodmother

---

After gaining the Broodmother's attention, LordAsked noticed that Ye Cang's group hadn't moved. His heart sank and he quickly turned and looked at the incoming Kagu Bee boss. "You guys!?"

Ye Cang and the others took out magic spring water and began to chat about this morning's TV shows.

"Brother PaleSnow? You are?" NalanPureSoul asked.

"Nothing, let's recover a bit first." Ye Cang made a 'Don't mind me' expression, making NalanPureSoul's chest tighten. In the front lines, ThornyRose, who was controlling the beetle, looked back. "Don't mess around! Hurry!!"

Just as the kagu bee dived down and was only a few meters from LordAsked, LordAsked quickly raised his shield and prepared to dodge. His brows furrowed. Why hadn't the attack come? He suddenly looked up and saw that the broodmother's chest was pierced through from the back by the bee's stinger. They were killing each other!? Wait! It's them! He suddenly turned and saw Ye Cang and the others drinking magic spring water. What was going on?

NalanPureSoul was closer to them. He saw Little Ye Tian holding a crystal in her hand, which seemed to resonate. It should be because of that. A scenario item? No wonder they're so relaxed. He watched as four molotovs flew towards him and covered his surroundings. That Mad Devil Le always throws them so accurately. He's probably really good with concealed weapons. However, what NalanPureSoul didn't know was that Lin Le used it to play darts and win beer money. He had been black-listed in many stores because of that.

The broodmother released an angry wail. Her mantis scythes swung like mad. The kagu bug blocked many of the cuts, but still received many deep wounds. It didn't stay still though. As it had



the broodmother nailed to the floor, its scythes were also swinging madly. It was an extremely desperate battle. LordAsked, along with LordGrinned and the rest of Lord's Reign, delightedly took advantage of this opportunity to attack the broodmother with all their might.

"A'Xiong, go help out on ThornyRose's side. Lele, remember to use the acid bottles. Help them break the beetle's shell. Besides Lele, Fang Ci, and Spying Blade, everyone else attack the beetle!" Ye Cang slowly got up and assigned tasks. He took out his ballista, summoned his shadow weapon, and the double bee bolts shot out. Meteor Shot!

Lin Le and his group charged towards the bosses who were dealing with 'internal strife'. Little Ye Tian sensed that the energy in the rune was rapidly escaping and warned, "We have to settle it quickly. Since it is controlling a boss, I fear this thing won't last much more than a few minutes."

While running swiftly, Lin Le first threw a molotov on top of the entangled bosses, letting them burn. Then an acid flask accurately struck the charging beetle boss. Its armor began to weaken. NalanMight and the others were delighted. Zhang ZhengXiong executed a Barbaric Tackle. Super Speed once again triggered. He crashed extremely rapidly, like lightning, into its weakened shell. Immediately, the sound of shattering was heard. The shell had a huge, cracked depression. A Holy Judgement followed it up along with Wu Na's Ice Spear, revealing even more flesh.

The two burning bosses were shot by Ye Cang's two bolts, which pierced through both of them, giving rise to enormous damage numbers. Putting away his ballista, he shot an Enchanted Arrow - Explosive Arrow! It struck accurately at the broodmothers' neck, fiercely exploding and dealing another huge amount of damage. Then Ye Cang began to bombard them with magic. He wasn't stingy with his fire type skills so that NalanPureSoul could activate Conflagrate. Those in melee had to be wary of the explosions. After

figuring out NalanPureSoul's cooldown, LordAsked began to command the melee battle. Like a marshal, his commands allowed everyone to attack and retreat in an orderly manner, yet not lose their fervor. SpyingBlade couldn't help sighing. The Tyrant - LordAsked. Last season, he had tried to assassinate him, but was almost captured instead. LordAsked's battle intuition was scary accurate...

An extremely furious cry rang out.

LordAsked sensed something wrong! He roared, "Dodge!!"

As he said that, slashes instantly engulfed the area 10 meters around the boss. This instantly caused the deaths of the majority of the surrounding people. All that was left were SpyingBlade and the others who were close to LordAsked. SpyingBlade looked at the deep scar on LordAsked's shield. When he had blocked the attack and was about to be sent flying backwards, he had taken one step back, rotating his body to deflect the force, then he took one more step and stabilized. In summary, it appeared like he hadn't been knocked back at all. FrozenCloud was also chopped to death by that attack. Lin Le crawled out from a hole in the ground, and patted the dust off his chest. "So close, good thing Lele dug this hole earlier..."

Little Ye Tian turned away. "Tch..."

The crystal rune in her hand began to crack. Little Ye Tian quickly warned, "The control is going to end!"

Little Ye Tian's Healing Chain bounced between ThornyRose and Zhang ZhengXiong. She also cast a Holy Shield and Rejuvenating Light on LordAsked. The Pearls of Light were also sent towards LordAsked in order to replenish his large loss of health earlier. Her timing was perfect.

Taking advantage of the time after the boss had already used its big move, Lin Le quickly leapt over and executed Sword Drawing Arts! Whirlwind Strike! Armed Destruction! While unleashing

everything, he also moved to dodge the slashes. LordAsked had the boss completely under control. He cleverly moved to let most of its attacks hit the kagu bee. SpyingBlade held his longsword in reverse grip and an afterimage instantly pierced through the kagu bee boss and broodmother, killing the dying kagu bee boss. He landed and immediately flash stepped to avoid the broodmother's attack, appearing at her back. His reverse gripped longsword directly stabbed into the wound on her back that was left by the kagu bee boss. With a pull! A fountain of blood spurted out!

LordGrinned leapt to strike the side of the broodmother's head, then landed. LordAsked stepped off the broodmother's insect leg and smashed the broodmother with his shield. In the air, with his limited mobility, the smash sent his body rotating and his longsword began to emit a violent light. A shining wound was left on the broodmother's neck. Lin Le followed up with an Execute!!

In the instant when Lin Le landed, Ye Cang's Flame Burst and NalanPureSoul's hellfire exploded on the broodmother. It was followed up with a second explosion. The broodmother finally cried out loudly and collapsed. The beetle boss was also killed thanks to the weakened shell from the acid.

"Congratulations to the parties led by players PaleSnow, LordAsked, and NalanPureSoul that have successfully slain the broodmother - Chilvini!" The system announced. The struggling players all saw that the insects in front of them had become less spirited, so they quickly went all out on the cleanup operation.

Just as the broodmother died, ThornyRose charged at Ye Cang and successfully intercepted him just 3 meters away from the boss! SpyingBlade saw that Ye Cang had been firmly bound by ThornyRose's body restraining technique, and couldn't help sighing. She once again saved the results of everyone's hard work...

LordAsked was utterly confused. What were they doing? Were they insane? He looked at Ye Cang's abnormal appearance as he

crawled towards the corpse. Mad cackling filled the cavern, “The corpse is mine! Let me loot the boss! Godly artifact, I’m coming! My divine hand is coming...” ThornyRose looked like she would stop him even if she had to die. LordAsked was completely speechless. “If he wants to loot then let him loot. What’s the worst...”

LordAsked immediately realized that NalanPureSoul, ThornyRose, SpyingBlade, and basically everyone not from his guild were giving him a strange look. Then he sighed, wrinkling his brows. “What?”

“Nothing. Lele, hurry and loot.” SpyingBlade faintly smiled.

# Chapter 428: Chilvini's Blade Net

---

Ye Cang got up begrudgingly. He looked at LordAsked, "Brother Asked, if you ever fight a boss and need someone to loot a top quality godly artifact, then remember to call me. I'll definitely give you a fair price..."

Everyone watched Ye Cang trying to promote his corpse cursing business. Their reactions had left LordAsked feeling a bit concerned, so he skipped over it, "Leave the discussions for later. Let's first see what dropped..."

"Brother Lil'White! 5 dark gold equipment dropped, two are weapons and three are armor. There's also a skillbook!!" They heard Lin Le's voice. LordAsked perked up. Dark gold weapons!?

The dark gold weapons were a long saber and a pike. The armor pieces were a shield, light leg armor, and what appeared to be a wig.

"I want the shield! No objections right..." LordAsked said, admiring the shield's stats. It was an entire two grades higher than his own.

Ye Cang looked at Zhang ZhengXiong. Zhang ZhengXiong shook his head. He then shrugged showing that he had no objections.

"I also need a shield..." ThornyRose stood out and smiled.

"I won't bully you. Let's roll. As for the others, don't even think about it. Trash should just continue using trash." LordAsked looked to NalanMight, and smiled with contempt. He threw the dice and rolled 15, then rubbed his nose, somewhat embarrassed.

ThornyRose sneered. 15 and you dare call for a roll!? She tossed out the dice... 2. Her mind immediately crashed and she glared at Ye Cang. LordAsked took the shield that Ye Cang passed him, and sighed. He no longer had the right to call for any of the other items, so he could just leave. "Let's go!!"

“Brother Asked, remember to meet up outside. Ok, what about this saber...” Ye Cang shouted. LordAsked raised a hand and waved as he walked away. “I know...”

Next, Ye Cang took out a 2 meter long, wrist wide, black saber.

Ye Cang looked at Lin Le. Lin Le disliked it for being too light and not domineering enough. At this time, NalanMoon hesitantly raised her hand and said, “Since no one needs it, then I’ll take it...”

SpyingBlade narrowed his eyes. She’s switching to a heavy long saber? Is she going to walk the path of a heavy weapons assassin?

“Then your freedom alliance’s share has been settled. You guys can beat it...” Ye Cang tossed the weapons to NalanMoon and said.

“Brother PaleSnow, thanks...” NalanPureSoul nodded and smiled sweetly. It made ThornyRose feel like she wasn’t girly enough.

“What words are those. We’re good brothers who have crossed swords in the bathroom!” Ye Cang wrapped an arm around NalanPureSoul and smiled.

NalanPureSoul’s face immediately turned red as a tomato. He quickly left without a word. ThornyRose broke out in a cold sweat. That guy’s way of messing with NalanPureSoul was enough to make one choke. It was also partly NalanPureSoul’s fault for wanting to be friends with such a shameless lowlife.

“Ooooh, hot news one after another. The Temptress actually had an affair with Team Leader. Hah, Rose, even if PureSoul is a man, you aren’t his match whether in character, talent, appearance, family background, martial arts, morality, hairstyle, or taste in clothes. You’re completely outmatched... Give up, give up.” ElegantFragrance patted ThornyRose’s shoulders and consoled her.

FrozenBlood nodded in approval, “That’s so true. As her best friend, I have no way to retort!”

ThornyRose trembled. These b\*tches. She gnashed her teeth,

“Don’t force me...”

“I’m just joking. We’re good sisters. Muah...” ElegantFragrance hugged ThornyRose and smiled.

FrozenBlood also affectionately clung to her, “Muah...”

ThornyRose looked off into the distance. Young me, you’ve made too many mistakes, such as not killing them before things got to this point...

“What are you talking about?” Ye Cang looked over and asked.

“Talking about the distribution...” ThornyRose skipped over it.

“There’s still 4 items. The skillbook is ours, and I need the pike. You can choose from the wig or the leg guard.” Ye Cang shrugged, a wig in his left hand and a pair of leg guards in his right.

ThornyRose was very tempted by the wig’s stats and the fact that it was special equipment, but the intelligence and wisdom bonuses were useless for herself. The leg guards were pretty good though, “Leg guard, or you can give ElegantFragrance your bow and quiver...”

Ye Cang thought it over. The quiver was a special class equipment while the bow was an abyss gold, almost as good as dark gold. However, he could coat his arrows in poison, but wasn’t sure if it was possible for the magic crystals. He looked to ElegantFragrance and said, “One second...”

Ye Cang took out the remains of the soup, tossed the two magic crystals into it, then started a fire and began to stir. The system notified him that the magic crystals had been successfully poisoned. He could at most have 10 poisoned magic crystals on him at a time. He tossed the bow and quiver to ElegantFragrance. In their place, he equipped a staff and a tome on a chain, filling the slots up for the added attributes. “Although dexterity fell a bit, magic stats rose by a decent amount... There’s not much difference.”

ThornyRose and the others looked at him and cold sweat poured out. What kind of class is that. Is it really a ranger? Dual pistols, a tome on his waist, a staff on his back, a ballista in his bag, and he can even pull out a pike from his shadow. It was like he was trying to hound all the other classes to death. Does he want to fight over equipment with everyone?

“Ok, the rest is ours. The wig, leg guard, and skillbook, who wants what?” Ye Cang put everything on display, including the pike he called dibs on, and asked.

Chilvini’s Long Hair (Dark Gold - Abyss - Special)

Category: Special Head Ornament

Requirements: None

+13 All Attributes

+15 All Resistances

Reduces damage taken by 5%.

+5% Will

+5% Mana

Chilvini’s Grudge (Passive): Every attack causes an additional 15% damage to the target (Not effective against insects).

“It suits A’Xiong and you the most.” SpyingBlade suggested.

“Bro, I definitely don’t want this gender-ambiguous wig thing...” Zhang ZhengXiong shook his head very furiously.

Ye Cang sighed, “So thoughtless... I’ll just cut it...”

He said that and took the wig. In a short 10 seconds, he spread the black wig amongst his white hair. The white hair now had a few strands of black highlights, which looked very beautiful. It not only maintained the overall style, it made him look even more heroic. ThornyRose couldn’t help sighing at how Ye Cang’s craftsmanship was becoming even more fantastic.



“I’ll take the leg guards...” SpyingBlade said. Ye Cang passed them over to him. It gave high strength and dexterity. Although his own leg guards were a grade lower, but he had already taken the wig. Lastly, he pointed to the skillbook. “What about this?”

Chilvini’s Blade Net (Chilvini - Unique - Beginner Level):

Issue a fierce roar/whistle, causing the target to enter a momentary trance. Then instantly release a burst of slashes at the surrounding five meters. Every attack deals 53% damage. The number of slashes and their damage is affected by speed, reflex, and dexterity.

Cost: 50 energy and 35 rage.

Cooldown: 15 minutes.

# Chapter 429: Strength of the Three Instructors

---

“Give it to Shaking Bear. Tanks are more suited for this sort of skill which requires having a group’s attention, and his damage is not bad.” ThornyRose suggested. Lin Le and SpyingBlade also agreed. Ye Cang happily gave it to Zhang ZhengXiong.

Ye Cang also casually threw both the new pike and his old pike over. “When we get back to Black Rock City, fuse them for me. The shadow pike’s special is still hard to give up...”

“Bro, that’s easy. I still have lots of materials...” Zhang ZhengXiong grinned.

“Ok, let’s go.” Ye Cang led everyone out of the insect nest and met up with the others. The earth began to violently shake when they were going to meet up with Maru Naya, Linda and Makarlo at the entrance. Behind them, a giant worm broke out of the ground. Although it was a worm, unlike a normal one, it had an extremely solid, black, centipede-like shell. Its mouth was a funnel filled with teeth. The moment it appeared, hundreds of players were swallowed and killed. With a sweep of its body, thousands died. It began to issue a horrible roar towards the direction of Ye Cang’s group. The entire ravine looked like it was being ravaged by hurricane winds. They were nearly blown away.

LordAsked frowned. How were the present-stage players supposed to fight that!?

Ye Cang quickly identified it.

Hell Dragon - Surrey (Lord of the Ravine of Death - Worm - Abyss - Event):

A race of mythological worms found in deserts. At the very top in the list of existences that travellers and caravans do not want to run into in the wastelands. It has extremely astonishing

destructive might. The flesh under its hard shell is the best out of all worms!

Just at that moment, an emerald green pike flew over. In an instant, it grew and stabbed the worm into the ground. Then, an enormous treant held an over 10 meter wide rock and jumped down, smashing it into the worm. A sharp arrow whistled through the air and instantly left it near death. Everyone could hear its bitter wails. They watched as it struggled free of the treant, and escaped back into the ground. Along with the rumbling of the earth, it quickly disappeared towards the far side of the ravine... Everyone turned back and looked at the three people who stood at the entrance to the canyon. Makarlo stroked his long white beard, looking like an old daoist. Linda stuck out her tyrannical milk jugs as the glowing bow in her hands gradually dimmed. Maru Naya reached out and her pike flew back to her hand. The ease at which they had dispatched this boss left everyone moved.

Every surviving player began to kowtow to them. “Masters, disciple pays his respects! Long live the Three Goddesses! Long live the Goddess Association!”

Ye Cang sighed in relief. Good thing those three were there. That thing was simply too fierce. The moment it appeared, it already killed thousands of people. It seems like the other end of this ravine would lead to the wastelands. However, for now, no one dared to go there...

Everyone returned to Mallow's shrine. Under tens of thousands of expectant gazes, Mallows appeared with her milk jugs. The contrast between her dignified appearance and her attire made everyone hunch their backs and stick out their butts. “Goddess Mallows!”

“Brave warriors, believers, thank you all for clearing up Prosperity Hill. This is my blessing to you all!” Mallows waved her hand.

“All players who participated in the event receive Mallow’s blessing. Gain 50% experience. When in the Black Peaks, all attributes +15%.”

Along with their harvests from the Ravine of Death, most of the participating players leveled up. This was equivalent to a week of hard work for most people. Ye Cang became 2nd in the level rankings, only 10% away from FlameEmperor.

The players were very satisfied with the reward. Fighting monsters and leveling in the Black Peaks would be easier now. An increase of 15% to their attributes was pretty significant.

Little Ye Tian smiled. Now it was inevitable that many players with the blessing would level in Black Peaks. With Bal Village’s location, it would definitely become a gold mine. She had already come up with many ways to make money... ThornyRose also realized that this 15% buff would bring most of the players to Black Peaks. That supply station, Bal Village, wouldn’t it be...!? She began to scheme on ways to get a piece of the pie...

LordAsked narrowed his eyes. He looked at Ye Cang and grinned, “Brother PaleSnow, Bal Village and the shrines project, you can leave it to my Lord’s Reign. Division wise, I definitely won’t let you suffer a loss...”

“Bro, he really won’t let you suffer. Last time, he...” LordGrinned didn’t get to finish before a hand smacked the back of his head. “Shut up! Shut up, shut up...”

“Don’t ask me... For contracts and stuff, go to Little Tian.” Ye Cang was also somewhat astounded by Ji Xiao, but he shrugged and let Little Tian negotiate with them. Finally, LordAsked and Little Tian reached an agreement.

LordAsked looked at Little Ye Tian. This girl is remarkable! I didn’t manage to take much advantage of them, but a win-win situation like this is not bad. NalanPureSoul also signed the agreement. Little Ye Tian smiled. The construction wasn’t

something that could be completed with only a few people. Tying these guilds and their own interests together was something beneficial. At least, if there is ever a conflict, there was one less thing to worry about. If Black Rock City ever had some internal strife, the ones benefiting would be White Stone City and Violet Sweet City's guilds.

Mallows slightly parted her legs. Although her thighs weren't visible, it didn't stop people from getting lost in their fantasies. Mallows raised a hand to her left breast. Everyone pinched their noses as they listened to her exhausted breathing. "I'll leave Anya and Jam to you Brave Warriors. When the time comes that we are all reunited, we will give everyone an even stronger blessing..."

After speaking, she turned into light and disappeared from the throne, leaving behind only the clothes that were wrapped around her breasts. Everyone began to spray out blood. Some even wanted to go up and touch the clothes, but they saw Maru Naya arrogantly walk onto the stage and put the clothes away, then very respectfully backed away from the throne. Everyone gulped. There was nothing they could do with the powerful deer spirit there. They all kneeled once again, "Great Goddess Mallows! Leave it to us! The enemies of the goddesses will be our enemies, and will suffer our righteous punishment! Brothers! Let's go level! Train in order to protect the goddesses! Sir President Hero! Please hurry and restore the other two shrines. Let us meet Goddess Anya and Goddess Jam!!"

"Don't worry..." Ye Cang waved at the crowd who were leaving to go level.

FrozenCloud, Wu Na, and the other insiders only sighed. Their goddesses had already been NTRed by their president...

Afterwards, Ye Cang brought everyone back to Bal Village to have a look, then returned to Black Rock City. The goddess association immediately became a hot topic in China. The three goddesses were like a virtual idol group. Mallows, Anya, and Jam became

very popular. As for their black-hearted manager, Ye Cang, he was currently watching Zhang ZhengXiong forge equipment.

# Chapter 430: Amplification Device and Soldier Food

---

Ye Cang accepted the new, three meter long pike. It was pitch black and simple, with no decorations. He was very satisfied.

Shadow Spear (Dark Gold - HeavenShakingMight - Reinforced)

Category: Large Spear

Requirements: 145 Strength, 113 Dexterity, 125 Constitution

Damage: 36 - 42

+25 Strength

+20 Dexterity

+17 Constitution

+60 Armor Penetration

+25% Piercing Damage and Speed.

Shadow Spear (Passive): +2 meter attack range.

Barbed Spear - Bleed (Passive): A successful attack will cause a bleed debuff. Bleed damage is affected by the strength behind an attack and its damage.

Shadow Strike:

Immediately become three shadow clones which charge at the target. Can freely switch between them. Deals 185% piercing damage + 35% for each clone, and a chance to break through armor, reducing armor by 15%.

Cooldown: 5 minutes.

“Bro, how is it? Awesome right!?” Zhang ZhengXiong was very pleased with his own creation.

“Not bad. Can you create staff type weapons yet?” Ye Cang tossed the pike into his shadow, equipping it.

“I don’t really get it. The church’s forging is mainly of weapons and scepters, things made fully out of metal. Little Tian’s dark gold scepter was made by me using magic iron and mithril. It has three powerful holy skills sealed inside it. Many magician wands are made of wood... it doesn’t fall under smithing...” Zhang ZhengXiong shook his head.

“That’s fine. I’ll go plant some vegetables. Lil’Dino’s gauntlets also need forging. Help her do it next...” Ye Cang turned and left the smithy. He went to ask Rica to help him rent a private farm. He planted some fungus spores, and some seed from uncommon vegetables. Then he began to use the plant skill to sow the seeds and urge them to grow. Since they needed a period to fully mature, he left, planning to come back later. He conveniently asked the experienced Makarlo to look over it occasionally.

Makarlo was free anyways, and was just wandering around the city by himself. He broke out in a cold sweat when he saw two particular saplings. He couldn’t help rubbing his eyes and smiling bitterly. “It’s really a holy oak tree and a black dragon titan fruit tree... Those are peerless treasures...”

Makarlo summoned a few powerful treants and began to reorganize the field. Like a kind neighbourhood farmer, he began to classify and sort them into fungus, shrubs, fruit trees, vegetables...

Ye Cang yawned, feeling bored. He went to Aily’s house and had some tea. When he left, he saw Aily waving at him, which made him smile. Where to next? As he thought that, Little Ye Tian notified him, “Father, the research has borne fruit! I’ve successfully developed the amplification devices!”

What’s an amplification device? Doubtfully, Ye Cang went over to Little Ye Tian’s laboratory and saw it empty. Didn’t she say it was here?

“Father, teacher has taken an airship back to White Stone City



and let me watch over the laboratory. I can use it as I please...” Little Ye Tian saw Ye Cang looking around and smiled. Like a little girl who had made a new toy, she took out a complex device. “Father, this is the new special assistance type equipment that I developed - Amplification Device! Right now it is only divided into Magic Amplification Device and Motion Amplification Device...”

“Nani?” Ye Cang looked lost...

“The magic amplification device is a tool to improve the quality of spellcaster weapons, like my scepter. If I equip a magic amplification device to it, its attributes will increase by roughly 18%. The motion amplification device can only be equipped on defensive equipment. The amplification device will improve the body’s kinetic energy. For example, it can temporarily increase your strength or speed, and it can reinforce defence. However, only one of each amplification device can be used! And each piece of equipment can only have one. These are the system’s limitations...” Little Ye Tian began to advertise her goods like a little doctor.

“So that’s it. Cost?” Ye Cang more or less understood.

“About three gold, but some materials are uncommon at this point in the game, especially the magic amplification device. The motion amplification device requires the support of a magic crystal, like father’s guns. Oh right! Father, your guns, I’ve already analysed their structure. It’s just a type of magic crystal conversion weapon. Although it’s not a defensive tool, but we can build a magic amplification device or a motion amplification device into it. Its principle is to draw out the condensed magic energy and convert it into a kinetic energy bullet. If I build an amplification device into it, its might will approximately double. And the overdrive mode, due to the amplification device sharing the burden, can last for an additional four seconds. I’ve already applied motion amplification devices to your guns. As for the magic amplification device, we can just put it on your staff for

now. Also, swapping them out is very simple, but has to be done by me, otherwise it will break..." Little Ye Tian continued to explain, then took out the already strengthened Giant Owl No.2 guns and returned them to Ye Cang.

Ye Cang took the guns and saw that their damage was really upgraded by quite a bit. The overdrive mode too. He petted Little Ye Tian's head. "As expected of my Little Tian, well done..."

Little Ye Tian's smile was very pure, then she turned away and sneered. Damn Lele, how can you compete with me!? I've finally beaten you!

At that time, Lin Le excitedly burst into the laboratory. "Brother Lil'White! I've discovered a new formula! I've named it Lele's Soldier Food! Look at the effects. Consume to restore 10 health every second for 20 seconds, and instantly heal half the total amount. But it can only be used 5 times a day!"

Little Ye Tian was surprised. To instantly restore 100 health, and then for another 20 seconds, 10 health will be restored every second... Thi-This is not any worse than my growth amplification device based on usefulness to the team and the market value. She saw the look Lin Le was giving her, as if he was saying, 'Hehe, damn Little Tian. The moment you raise your butt, Lele knows exactly what you're doing.' Little Tian's chest tightened and she roared in her heart, Aaaaah!! That Lele is the worst!!

Ye Cang assessed it. 5 times a day was already very practical. This was a very important life-saving item. "Lele, what does it cost?"

"I don't know. It needs this, this, and also... these..." Lin Le took out all the materials. Little Ye Tian instantly calculated its approximate value to be about 1 gold. Although it was high, but its usefulness was much higher than its value. LordAsked, NalanPureSoul, NalanMoon, or the other experts definitely wouldn't be stingy with these. As for materials, they could have the store procure them...

“Little Tian, how many amplification devices did you make?” Ye Cang asked.

“Besides ours, there are 2 extra magic amplification devices and 3 motion amplification devices...” Little Ye Tian replied.

“I got it. Lele, make some more soldier foods. I’ll get some buyers. Tsk tsk, this time, we’ll make a fortune, then I’ll bring you both to the high-end auction. You can tell me if you want anything, we’ll buy! Buy! Buy!” Ye Cang turned and looked into the distance.

“Brother Lil’White! Yay!” Lin Le became excited. Little Ye Tian was a bit slower but also jumped up and cheered, “Yay...”

# Chapter 431: Debt Collector Department President - Lin Le

---

Ye Cang had everyone come to equip the amplification devices. Zhang ZhengXiong had painstakingly forged more materials into his huge crystal armguard, upgrading it to dark gold. The crystal now seemed to flow with energy. Little Ye Tian attached a magic amplification device onto it, then firmly secured a motion amplification device with a magic crystal onto his shoulder. Zhang ZhengXiong got up and tried out the motion amplification device. He could immediately feel that his strength was increased by quite a bit. He quickly cancelled it to avoid wastage. He then looked and saw that his crystal arm guard's effects had been increased by about 20%, leaving him very pleased.

Lin Le couldn't use a magic amplification device. He could only equip a motion amplification device which he decisively chose to put on his right glove. It allowed him to easily increase the strength of his slashes.

SpyingBlade could only smile bitterly at the fact that Little Ye Tian had developed her own special equipment. As expected of a genius. He put the motion amplification device on his right foot. The only one who could put the motion amplification device on their weapon was FrozenCloud with her two gauntlets. She put it on her right fist.

As for the spellcasters, they all had a magic amplification device attached to the crystal on the ends of their staffs. It looked like a bracket, holding on firmly to the crystal, making it even more pleasing to the eyes.

Lin Le's soldier food made FrozenCloud, SpyingBlade, and the other all delighted. Fang Ci couldn't help sighing at the fact that one of these could pretty much heal him to full. To be able to use it 5 times a day, it was truly a good item. It was equivalent to another

life.

For SpyingBlade, compared to the amplification devices, this affected him more. What assassins needed the most were medicines and consumables which increase the probability of completing their mission.

Ye Cang saw that everyone was done. They still had an extra 50+ bottles of soldier food, 2 magic amplification devices, and 3 motion amplification devices. He took out his communicator and put on an indifferent smile. “Brother PureSoul, long time no see. I’ve missed you. What do you mean ‘what do you want to advertise now’? What do you take me for! I have a super precious special equipment, and thought of you first... This is good stuff. Here, let me show you. What do you think? 10 gold? Are you messing with me? We spent an entire 40 gold to make this! Little Tian can even take it off and put it on new equipment for you to continue and use. It’s not something that will wash out. Since we’re good brothers that have bathed together and crossed swords, I’ll give you a friendship discount. 100 gold! What do you think!? Aya~~ 40 gold is the material cost, and 60 gold is the manufacturing cost. This is a high-tech product, so most of the price is the intellectual property. Half cash? I don’t want to, but how can I say no to a brother who I’ve crossed swords with. Deal! Wait, don’t hang up. There’s also this which my little brother Lele developed called soldier food. It uses algae harvested from 1 million meters under the sea...”

Ye Cang turned and looked at Little Ye Tian, “Is Black Rock City far from the sea?”

Little Ye Tian nodded. Ye Cang thought ‘whatever...’ and then picked the communicator back up, “Haha, I’m just joking. It’s actually made from Black Peak’s holy mountain’s fruits, water from heaven lake, and the air above a garden of a hundred flowers. Lele had to process it for 9981... How much? 10 gold a bottle! I cheat neither the old nor the young! It’s definitely extremely

valuable. Haven't we crossed swords together, how can I possible scam you! Cost? Hah, it's priceless... It's only because we have crossed swords. Don't be in such a rush... really... I have 50 bottles. You want 15, is that right? Half cash again? Deal! Thanks for your patronage. Remember to visit our general store... Brother PureSoul, why don't we make a date to once again cross... Eh, he hung up?"

Ye Cang pouted, then continued to dial the next customer's number. "Brother Asked, have you been well since we've last met? Here's the deal, our team just developed a high-tech product, and I thought of Brother Asked first. This is called an amplification device. We only have 1 magic amplification device, and 2 motion amplification devices. How much? 120 gold! No discounts! What do you mean I'm trying to rob you. I even told brother PureSoul that it was 150 gold!"

Everyone could hear a roar coming from the communicator, "Didn't you say I'm the first!!!"

"Alright, alright. Let us both take a step back. For our eternal friendship, I'll give it to you for just 100 gold! We can't go any lower! All cash? No can do, let's do this. Pay half in game gold and I'll give you both a magic and motion one. Good! So straightforward! As expected of Brother Asked! There's also this medicine. 13 gold for one. Too expensive? Hah, you're a guild leader that many are after, you have to be prepared or end up dead on the street. Against a boss, this will also be a big life-saving treasure. 13 gold is definitely worth the price. A bit cheaper? You're making things difficult for me. We had to climb to the top of Black Peaks and slay a hundred year old serpent for its blood and gall-bladder, then find a mysterious soul-water lake in the mountain range to pray there for 7749... eh, 10 gold half cash, ok. You want 20? Deal! I'll leave it at my general store, remember to go... Eh, this guy is so rude too, hanging up just like that. There's still a motion amplification device that hasn't been sold..." Ye

Cang sighed. Everyone shook their heads. You said it yourself, those who you treat sincerely are very few...

“Brother CloudDragon! It’s been a long time. I’ve really missed... Eh, it’s this. Motion amplification device. Interested? It can be attached to a grappler’s fist wrappings. How much? Haha, 200 gold, fixed price. Don’t hang up... 100 gold then. LordAsked also bought it at this price. Half cash... Hah, just for you brother CloudDragon. I’m willing to lose a little... Oh right, there’s also this medicine. I was going to sell it for 20 gold, but I’ll give it to you for just 10. You want 10, half cash? Deal! I’ll have the relay station mail it to you...” Ye Cang completed the negotiations and saw the looks everyone was giving him. He shrugged, “Little Fang, bring the things over to the grocery store. Lil’Dino, go to the relay station and mail it...”

“Mm...” Fang Ci and FrozenCloud took the things and left the laboratory.

“What about the rest... Lele, Little Tian, and I will be going to the high-end auction. I was going to bring you all with me, but with my current status, I can only bring one or two guests...” Ye Cang dismissed everyone, and went to the auction house’s doorway. The guard saw Lin Le’s armed chamber of commerce’s debt collection department’s vice president badge, and was immediately terrified, letting the three pass. Little Ye Tian sighed. It seemed like Lele could have brought everyone in. As long as it was a store affiliated with Black Rock City, they feared the armed chamber of commerce. For them, it was a shameless and reckless gangster organization.

The three of them found some seats, and watched the continuous stream of luxury goods. Little Ye Tian began to scan and assess them. They bid on a few of what appeared to be antique ornaments.

“This disk’s true value is at least ten times the price I bought it at. According to Solomon’s writings, I can guarantee that it is part of

his collection. It probably accidentally got lost...” Little Ye Tian said, taking the disk.

“What the heck is Solomon?” Ye Cang looked at the encyclopedia, Little Ye Tian, puzzled.

“An ancient dynasty’s king, the king of the golden city. It was destroyed about 2000 years ago. Position wise... around the wastelands north of Black Rock City...” Little Ye Tian deduced from the books she had read in the church’s library. She had filtered it all and quickly came up with her own explanation.



# Chapter 432: Assenroche

---

Ye Cang saw that the next item was a sword. Its quality was unknown, it was only said that a famous mage named Garros had used it in his youth. It was most likely a magician's sword, so he could make use of it. The initial price was not high at merely 50 gold, but it actually rose up to over 250 gold.

“Father, we can continue bidding...” Little Ye Tian narrowed her eyes. 250 gold. Even for the natives, this was a large amount of money. Ye Cang raised his hand, “265 gold...”

Finally, the bids ended at 265 gold. Due to being unable to see the quality of the sword inside its box, many people didn't continue raising the price. It was only a temporary weapon that Garros had used in his youth after all. Most of them knew how to restrain themselves. Ye Cang paid the money, and opened the long box. It was a light blue, transparent sword, with a flowery mithril handguard. It was about 2 fingers wide, and had a total length of 140 centimeters. It was a very slender one-handed sword. The light blue, transparent body looked to be made of crystal. Ye Cang touched it, feeling the texture of the metal. With a flick, the metal gave a crisp ring; an exceptionally sweet sound.

Assenroche (Dark Gold - Mysterious - Garros)

Category: Magic Sword

Requirements: 115 Strength, 125 Dexterity, 100 Constitution, 145 Intelligence, 135 Wisdom

Damage: 34 - 38

+20 All Attributes

+10% Intelligence

+30 Spell Power

+15% Spell Damage

Attacks deal additional arcane damage: 22 - 25

Assenroche's Favor (Passive): When using magic, reduce mana cost by 25% (Excluding spirit, dark, and summoning magic).

Assenroche's Finger: Activate to instantly launch an arcane attack, dealing 100 arcane damage in an area in front with a chance to knockup, knockback, and stun. Cooldown: 1 hour.

Seal: ???

PS: Assenroche is a holy spirit that mastered arcane magic.

Lin Le looked at the beautiful sword enviously, but when he saw the attributes, he instantly lost interest. 145 Intelligence. He would never have enough...

Little Ye Tian raised her brows. A profit! Dark gold! Most dark gold weapons can sell for about 200 gold right now. The stats and abilities both fit her father very well, and it even had a seal. As long as they could find a way to lift it. Perhaps they could even get another hidden quest.

Ye Cang put the longsword horizontally behind his waist, giving off the temperament of a great general.

The three of them quickly spent nearly a thousand gold. Little Ye Tian's purchases were all things that could be resold for a huge profit. Lin Le bought a dark gold necklace. Its pure strength stats increased his explosive strength by another step. When ThornyRose learned that the three of them spent nearly a thousand gold in the high-end auction, her chest felt pained. How rich are they!! The guild has trouble even spending a hundred gold...

"It comes fast and goes fast. Little Tian, make a dozen or so more amplification devices. Lele, you get to work too, make more medicine..." Ye Cang rested a hand on the hilt of his new sword and looked into the sky.

"Ok / Okies," the two of them spoke together. They both

returned to working as child labourers in order to contribute to the studio.

Ye Cang showed off and drew Assenroche. He looked at the sword's body and gently caressed it. "Oh, treasured sword, treasured sword, what do you think I should do next... So free..."

Lin hai, half-moon lake.

Ye Cang sat upon his usual stone and yawned. When he saw even a 0.001 deviation, a willow branch would strike, hitting the spot that had erred to correct Zhao XiangYu's posture. On the other side was her senior apprentice sister that had been learning dance for over a month, Zuo Yiyi. She could already, with difficulty, perform some simple dance moves on the lake. It was still pretty strenuous, but this little improvement had made her very excited for a long time. She just performed a step and spin, when a branch came and caused a stinging pain.

"Your movements are weird. Whether you're learning dance or martial arts from me, you must train so that every basic movement has no deviations. As for whatever you improvise using the basics, you can do whatever you want with it. However, your foundation must be perfect. Just good, is not enough. It must be acknowledged by me as perfect..." Ye Cang laid on the rock and said. His words had a seriousness which made the two women feel even more pressure. They also felt respect for Ye Cang's serious approach.

Ye Cang opened up a beer and slightly pushed aside his heavenly fox mask to drink. He watched the two of them continue to seriously practice, and faintly smiled. Seeing the bright moon in the sky, he slowly lowered his mask again...

The next day (two days break from the game), early morning, the school's exams began.

In the homeroom teacher's office, Ye Cang's group of three were holding blank test papers. Ye Cang went up first and handed it to a teacher with glasses. "Teacher, please, remember to give me a good

mark...”

“Same...” Zhang ZhengXiong also handed his in.

“And me!” Lin Le happily put down his test paper.

The homeroom teacher began to break out in a cold sweat. He looked at Zhang ZhengXiong, who was stretching his joints and sending loud cracking sounds throughout the office. He then looked at the three test papers. He was especially speechless when he saw Lin Le’s. “Umm... this one is a modern arts exam...”

“Brother Lil’White, Brother Lil’Xiong, the homeroom teacher is rejecting me...” Lin Le’s ahoge drooped, feeling wronged.

“Lele, how is that possible. Teacher... sorry, I don’t know what you’re called...” Ye Cang rubbed his head, embarrassed. He looked at the philosophy department teacher, then smiled and put a hand on his shoulder.

“Just call me Zhou...” The glasses teacher looked at the smile under Ye Cang’s white hair, and shivered. This was a super popular king of the east district, the great general, white haired asura - Ye Cang.

“Teacher Zhou, can’t you be more flexible with Lele’s exam paper...” Zhang ZhengXiong bent the railing into a pretzel and then pulled it straight again repeatedly, as if playing with it. He watched as Zhou gulped and quickly nodded. “It’s fine, it’s fine. Just leave it to me...”

“Then we won’t bother you. Goodbye teacher...” Ye Cang nodded courteously. He brought the two of them and left the office. Teacher Zhou immediately collapsed weakly onto his seat, and wiped the cold sweat off his forehead. Everytime those three bad omens appeared, he would be scared to death. As expected of the crusader king. He looked at Lin Le’s art exam and smiled bitterly as he called his good friend’s number. “Please... I still want to see the day my son grows up and gets a life... Just because it hasn’t

happened yet, doesn't mean it won't... Hah”

Ye Cang's group met up at the train station and once again went north to the capital. When they got on the hovering train, they saw Ji Xiao sitting by the window playing on his phone. They revealed a good-willed smile. FrozenCloud sighed. Just how unlucky was he? Recently, every time he's gone to the capital, he would run into Ye Cang. If it was her, she would definitely start avoiding trains that stopped by Lin Hai... Sometimes inaction caused death.

Ji Xiao could feel his blood run cold. He immediately looked up and saw Ye Cang's group smiling towards him. His entire person was frozen stiff...

# Chapter 433: Liu Family Battle

---

Capital, floating train-station.

MistyVeil once again received a call for help from Ji Xiao and rushed over. She saw him hugging his own shoulders, a placard covering his lower half. On the placard were the words, “Sorry, friends shouldn’t be rude and jump out the window when meeting each other...”

MistyVeil turned and, as expected, saw that group of people walking out of the station. She waved at them, “I’ll give you a ride...”

“Alright...” Ye Cang directly walked towards the driver-side seat.

Ji Xiao put on clothes in the car and thought with a bitter face, don’t these guys go to class? They are always so idle, today should be a school day...

“Why are you here in the capital this time? If I remember correctly, Lin Hai should be starting classes today...” MistyVeil said with a smile while she drove.

FrozenCloud sighed. They almost made the professors cry, especially when explaining to the acting department head. Shaking Bear had played around with a several ton statue and had ‘accidentally’ dropped it beside them. Then he had threatened them in a tone that was threatening yet not threatening, terrifying yet not terrifying. Now, she was noted down as a special student by her professor. Her first semester had only just started and her marks were already filled with A’s. In the east district, those guys could do as they please... After the holy war, the east district student council would tuck in their tails and walk far around them whenever they see them...

“Since we’re too outstanding, the teachers have already finished marking us this semester...” Ye Cang said, looking out at the blue

sky with a trace of sorrow.

“Tsk, bull\*\*\*\*...” Ji Xiao whispered.

“A’Xiong, crush him...” Ye Cang said indifferently from the front seat.

From the back seats, sounds of a gang-beating could be heard.

“...” MistyVeil saw the back from her mirror and rolled her eyes. Hah, Smiley, Smiley, Smiley... “Today, our family is hosting a party. You should all just come to my place, since the Qin’s will be coming over anyways...”

“Alright...” Ye Cang continued to carefreely stare at the white clouds, while Ji Xiao’s screams continued to come from the back of the car.

Capital, Liu Family’s Side Courtyard.

Ye Cang leisurely strolled around the grove. Zhang ZhengXiong and Lin Le were at the gym training and sparring. Ye Cang came upon an elderly man fishing during his stroll. “Yo, Elder Liu, what a coincidence...”

“Haha, its the brat... This time I...” Elder Liu saw him and got up.

“Take this! Lightning Pla-Bolt!” Ye Cang directly acted without warning.

F\*\*k! Elder Liu quickly mobilized his qi to withstand it. This little bastard is always so sly! Watercloud Shield! Not good! His Lightning Plasma became a Lightning Bolt! Pity, my watercloud shield is breaking! The explosion from violent collision sent the numerous electrified water droplets splattering like bullets. Ye Cang moved like lightning, perfectly slipping between the drops of water, and released a punch containing the power of the Big Dipper, “Big Dipper God Fist (Hokuto Shinken) - Seven Star Points of Death (Shichishi Seiten)!”

Elder Liu furrowed his brows. The brat’s reaction time was

terrifying. Flowing Water Palm! Like running water, it flowed over and instantly intercepted Ye Cang's seven punches, but the punches contained no force! He felt alarmed! It was a feint! Fake! He heard a calm snicker by his ear, "Strong Diamond Finger..."

Crack! Three sharp pains pierced his waist, making Elder Liu gasp. F\*\*k! Cheater! That little bastard can't speak a word of truth! That's clearly the inner strength skill - One Inch Three Fold Force! Enraged, he increased to 60% strength, turned, and struck out with a palm but discovered that Ye Cang had already escaped over 10 meters through the trees.

"Elder Liu is truly unrivalled. I have important matters to attend..."

"Shut it! Today, I will have my revenge for this time, last time, and the time before that!!" Elder Liu pursued with flowing movements, but he was unable to catch up with the lightning-fast Ye Cang. He could only gnash his teeth. Isn't this brat's superpower too fast. Even at full power, I can only barely keep up.

In a pavilion, sitting on an antique chair was the head of the house, Liu FengSheng. He watched the scene of the flowing water and drifting cloud chasing the white lightning. "RuYan, that white haired young man is your savior and Qin San's son-in-law right?"

"Mm..." MistyVeil acknowledged.

"Such agility. White Lightning, as fast as lightning, with strength that can tear superalloys like paper. Lin Hai's honorary member in charge of discussions with the 10 Commandments. Good at interrogation, strength: unknown, danger: extremely dangerous..." Liu FengSheng looked through the top-secret file that he had someone bring him, "He's not simple..."

MistyVeil faintly nodded. How can someone who can catch a high-caliber armor-penetrating bullet be someone simple?

Elder Qin and Mr Qin brought ThornyRose to the Liu house and



saw lightning like flash pass by followed by a water like flowing figure. Elder Qin and Mr Qin smiled. With a step, the granite floor cracked, and they speedily pursued. Mr Qin didn't forget to shout out, "Bill Liu FengSheng for the damage to the floor!"

Liu FengSheng broke out in cold sweat. That shameless guy... He watched as the four of them fought, various rocks and gardens getting crushed. Even the pavilion was blown up by a kick from Qin Zhong. From upstairs, a voice burst forth, "Dammit! Such a good fight, how can you leave me out!"

"Second Grandfather..." MistyVeil smiled bitterly. This would be another expensive repair expense.

Ye Cang dodged past Mr Qin's Black Tortoise Trigram - Fire / Lightning - Yinless and Yangless, then shouted, "Super Lightning Plasma!!"

Suddenly, the entire area was filled with fist energy, demolishing the entire area including the other four!

"Revolving Spirit Steps - Yang!"

"Revolving Spirit Steps - Yin!"

Mr Qin and Elder Qin both unleashed their secret move, Revolving Spirit Steps, which collided against each other. The area within 100 meters was covered in airborne dust and debris. Elder Liu and Second Elder Liu also worked together to resist the destruction wrought about by Revolving Spirit Steps and Lightning Plasma. Ye Cang simply flashed away like lightning, fleeing.

"Qin Zhong! Are you and your son trying to destroy this place!?" Elder Liu looked at the ruins beneath them and roared.

"It's not like it's my house..." Elder Qin Zhong said calmly.

Mr Qin put on his scholarly air and smiled, "I should be more careful, apologies..."

Contrary to his words, Elder Qin activated his Black Tortoise trigram again and attacked Second Elder Liu.

“Damn brat, come at me! Nice Black Tortoise trigram! Cleansing Waves Turning Clouds!” Second Elder Liu struck forward with a massive wave like palm strike. The two of them charged at each other, and when their attacks collided, the resultant shockwave spread out around them. Ye Cang waved his hand like a blade, cleaving through the incoming shockwave. Like a lightning current, he suddenly appeared behind Second Elder Liu. Making sword fingers with his hand, he struck forth towards Second Elder Liu’s back, making some sparks. Second Elder Liu’s lips curled into a smile. Such a fast brat! He’s got courage!

Mr Qin squinted his eyes, coordinating with Ye Cang to first deal with the second elder. His White Tiger trigram made a tiger like roar emerge from his body. Old Liu raised his brows, the three generations of this Qin branch family were not easy to deal with! If someone didn’t help, second elder might be struck by Qin San and that damn brat’s pincer attack.

# Chapter 434-1: Frog in a Well

---

Second Elder Liu furrowed his brows. That white haired, beach shorts guy was too fast. He couldn't avoid his move and could only forcefully take it! He didn't dare divide his attention either as from the front, that brat Qin San was releasing an excessive amount of power, enough to definitely blow him up! Thus, he raised his qi to 70%!

Ye Cang's sword finger faced not the least bit of resistance and penetrated like a scalpel.

Not good!! Both Liu elders were astonished.

Just at that time, a hand appeared and grabbed Ye Cang's sword finger. "RuYan's benefactor, one should spare others when possible. How about we just let the four of them fight?"

"I never wanted to take part, it's all Elder Liu's fault for bullying me, I had no choice but to flee. I only managed to grasp an opportunity presented by Mr. Qin and Elder Qin... Actually, take this! Strong Diamond Chop!" Ye Cang showed a repenting expression and suddenly, a ferocious sword slash was executed by his fingers. Liu FengSheng was planning to let Ye Cang go, but discovered that it was all a feint leading to a surprise attack. His chest tightened. This brat was too f\*\*king nefarious! With a flash, the jade flute at his waist shot forth sword qi and the sound of swords colliding was heard.

Elder Liu narrowed his eyes. This brat is good. Whether it's a superpower or cultivation, to be able to train his body to such a degree that he can take on FengSheng's sword qi with his bare hands... He's hidden his strength deeply. So it turns out he's a swordsman... no, he should at least be at the Heroic Swordsman level or higher.

"Little Ye, you should be more honest..." Before Liu FengSheng could finish speaking, Ye Cang once again unleashed another

move, “Lightning Plasma Sword!!”

The sword shot out light a comet and exploded, filling the sky with sword streaks. It enshrouded Liu FengSheng like a net of light. Liu FengSheng raised a brow, “Good move!”

Sword qi rippled out of the jade flute, sweeping away the sword net, but Ye Cang had already disappeared. Second Elder Liu’s scream rang out, “My waist!!”

“Beautifully done!” Qin San watched Ye Cang use three moves and succeed with his surprise attack, making the second elder, whose strength was as deep as the ocean, scream out in pain.

Elder Liu’s heart trembled. Although they were holding back their true strength, using at most about 60%, but to still be able to deal with his sword key and surprise attack the second elder, the brat must be extremely proficient in assassination techniques...

“The banquet is starting!” MistyVeil shouted.

Ye Cang, Qin Zhong, and Mr Qin simultaneously pulled back, leaped out of the ruins, and walked towards the front entrance as if nothing happened. First and Second Elder Liu gnashed their teeth as they watched the three of them acting all cheerfully. They both rubbed their waist. This hatred, we will definitely take revenge!

“That brat is very skilled in martial arts. I don’t know why, but I cannot see through his feints at all...” Second Elder Liu said as he hissed from the pain.

“Speed. He might be the weakest one here, but his speed is the fastest, so he has the initiative. Qin branch family really picked up a treasure. The boy is definitely not just some frog in a well...”

Meanwhile, over by Mr Qin, they were already complementing each other.

“Good move, son-in-law. Tsk tsk, seeing Second Elder Liu bending over in pain feels so good...” Mr Qin said, entirely free of worry.

“It’s nothing, it’s all because Mr Qin’s Black Tortoise Trigram had him locked down...” Ye Cang said with his two hands in his beach shorts pockets and his flip-flops flopping on the ground.

“So refreshing. Did you see how I beat Third Elder Liu until even his mustache was crooked.”

“Of course. Elder Qin is truly unrivalled...” Ye Cang said with a snicker. The response he received was a Heavenly Dragon Arts - Skyfall! He quickly turned into a streak of lightning and disappeared, rushing towards the banquet hall.

“That damn brat. His personality is too hateful...” Those words reminded Elder Qin of his first time meeting Ye Cang, that punch right on his stomach. That time, he was in so much pain that it felt like his intestines were in a knot, yet he had to act like nothing was wrong.

“So fast, son-in-law’s potential is terrifying. Old Man, you didn’t suffer that fist for nothing, his foundation is dreadfully firm. Have you noticed that his every action is mind-numbingly steady? There isn’t even the tiniest bit of deviation. Did you know, Ren Long told me before that, without any superpower or qi, he can tear metal alloys apart like paper with just brute strength...” Mr Qin sighed at Ye Cang’s strange talent report.

“With just brute strength!?” Elder Qin couldn’t keep his calm.

“I think that is the reason why the Dragon Group’s leader personally scouted him. His potential is too terrifying. Before, I was curious why he had A’Xiong and Lele learn from me while he himself didn’t. It turns out that he already has his own style. A style that is just his. Only in that last exchange, we chanced upon a glimpse of his assassination technique, did I realize how much of a freak he is. Ignoring his strength, even the mind-numbingly cruel killing methods he performs without any emotions or guilt, can you believe that he is only 21?”

Elder Qin chose to remain silent. When he himself was 21, he was

still happily participating in those martial arts tournaments. Meanwhile that brat already bears the burden of raising his brothers and sisters while also carrying out missions. “Last time when he talked about his interrogation methods, I couldn’t feel any killing intent or malice from him. He has too many mysteries. Just what kind of person did that girl Zhen’er bring back...”

Mr Qin faintly smiled. Together with Elder Qin, they entered the banquet hall.

Ye Cang found Zhang ZhengXiong and the others, and sat with them. Many guests saw Ye Cang’s attire and frowned, but some guests that were often at the Qin family parties were already used to it. There were even some who were afraid of Ye Cang’s group. That incident, they had all seen Ye Cang easily catch a bullet and then easily apprehend the assassin in a state that he would be better off dead... Now, they felt a chill in their hearts when they saw him.

NalanPureSoul’s arrival made the entire banquet hall gasp. His exceptional complexion. graceful demeanor. The female guests could only lower their heads or become envious.

NalanPureSoul looked at Ye Cang’s group and directly walked over. Beside him was a 25 year old or so, beautiful woman. She had an egg shaped face, exquisite features, and wore a backless pink flower themed dress. This woman was NalanMoon.

“Brother PureSoul... how is the magic amplification device?” Ye Cang asked with a smile.

“It would be better if it was a bit cheaper...” NalanMoon interrupted unhappily.

“Ignorant woman! If it was cheap, how could it be worthy of Brother PureSoul’s status!” Ye Cang said righteously.

NalanMoon rolled her eyes, unable to refute.

“Many thanks, Brother PaleSnow. It is very useful...”

NalanPureSoul couldn't help smiling.

“It's nothing. You were the first one I thought of when selling it, since we're good brothers of the sword fighting association!” Ye Cang once again dragged NalanPureSoul into some sort of wretched group.

NalanPureSoul sighed, “Brother Ye Cang, could you stop bringing up sword fights, crossing swords, or sword fighting associations. This one really d...”

“Don't have a sword!?” Ye Cang cried out with great alarm, then suddenly understood, “so that's the case. I was inconsiderate. Next time, we'll play sword and shield.”

NalanPureSoul shivered all over. Can't we have a normal conversation! I didn't even finish speaking!! Hah. Sighing deeply, he said, “Sword and shield is...”

“I'll use my sword to penetrate your shield, until you can't take it anymore...”

Ye Cang didn't even get to finish before NalanPureSoul turned bright red and quickly interrupted him, “Cough cough. Brother PaleSnow, stop teasing me...”

“I'm serious though...” Ye Cang muttered.

“.....”

## Chapter 434-2: Red Dragoness

---

Following the start of the feast, Liu FengSheng, as the host, looked towards his guests, “Today, I would like to thank everyone who could make it despite your busy schedules. Previously, my daughter was nearly killed but was saved thanks to a noble man. Today’s banquet is to quell my daughters fright and also to thank this noble man...” Saying that, he looked to Ye Cang and offered a toast, “Little Brother Ye, the Liu Family owes you an immense favor...”

“It was nothing, this is unneeded...” Ye Cang returned the toast indifferently.

“To you, it might only be a slight effort but to me, it was worth a life...” MistyVeil also spoke up seriously, “The Liu family must return favors and enmity!”

Ye Cang sighed, turning his back to her, he whispered, “Go ahead and touch, Aunt Perky. I’ll let you have your revenge...”

“.....” MistyVeil immediately felt her legs go weak. Would it kill this bastard to not do these damn things!?

ThornyRose rolled her eyes. Once the damn low life becomes shameless, it’s impossible to guess what he’ll do next. If he dared to say that to me, I would do more than just stab him with my fork and knife! Thinking that, she gripped her fork and knife so tightly that her hands trembled. Revenge for my chrysanthemum, revenge for my chrysanthemum...

All the guests were moved. To receive such a big favor from the Liu family was a very lucky thing. The way they looked at the beach shorts wearing Ye Cang immediately changed, containing envy and admiration. Many who came over to worm their way into being his friend were intercepted by Little Ye Tian with only a few words.



“Today, there are also some honored guests that have come. I hope that no one will be lacking in manners...” Liu FengSheng continued speaking seriously.

The moment those words were spoken, someone said, “Uncle Liu, am I someone that unreasonable?”

A capable looking, short haired girl, wearing a black woman’s suit walked in. Her face was full of heroic spirit. This persona was the dragon group’s boss, Red Dragoness - Long Zhongyi, or as Ye Cang calls her, tomboy. Meanwhile, the baldy beside her was the leader of the 7th group, Ren Long.

Qin Zhong faintly raised his brows. The real monster has come. Head of her house by 18, leader of the Dragon Group by 26, she was said to be the strongest leader the Long family had ever seen. The Long family had always served the Chinese Federation. At least half of the Dragon Group leaders have come from the Long family. They were a low-key, yet unforgettable, family.

Entering after them was Hunting Flame. With a stern expression, he scanned the surroundings. Seeing Ye Cang, he faintly smiled. The Dragoness saw Hunting Flame enter and gave him a light nod. Hunting Flame returned the nod. This wasn’t the first time that the two had met.

The Dragoness looked at Ye Cang idling around in beach shorts, minding his own business. That bastard is messing around again. He’s obviously the one in the 10 Commandments with the strongest voice, yet he always wants to be behind the scenes. The 10 Commandments’ #1’s worst nightmare is this leader of the extremist faction. She thought of the battle where they wiped out the Anos family. If she hadn’t fought with him before, she wouldn’t know how terrifying and reliable the so called Silver Devil was. If possible, she didn’t want him as an enemy.

Everyone became silent. The Red Dragoness had arrived! Some were terrified. Although they didn’t know who Hunting Flame was

but the fact that they had exchanged nods meant that he was someone the Dragoness approved of. One after the other, they began to show their curiosity.

“You are one of today’s most honored guest. I don’t dare to offend you...” Liu FengSheng smiled.

“The most special is not me. It’s not like it’s my first time attending Uncle Liu’s banquet. Just do as you wish...” The Dragoness came to Liu FengSheng’s table and sat down. Ren Long also sat. With the Dragoness around, he didn’t dare stand out. He recalled how he was once the leader of an evil cult. Money, beauties, whatever he wanted, he could have. Now, bearing an official position, even if he had a mistress, he wouldn’t even be allowed to touch her. Sighing, he looked at the Dragoness respectfully.

“Then allow me to formally introduce this friend of mine. The 10 Commandments’ #4, Mr Hunting Flame. Thank you very much for coming...” Liu FengSheng’s words sent the quiet crowd into turmoil. The 10 Commandments!? None of them dared to speak. They looked at Hunting Flame somewhat fearfully.

Hunting Flame also came up to the main table.

Everyone looked to the people at the main table, feeling shocked. Dragon Group, 10 Commandments, Liu Family, what were they up to? Could it be related to the attack on the Liu Family’s eldest daughter...

The banquet began.

“I didn’t think you would attend this sort of activity, Hunting Flame...” The Dragoness was somewhat surprised, because Hunting Flame was specialized in assassination and information gathering.

“I’ve been behind the scenes for too long, I figured this was a chance to stand on the stage...” Hunting Flame faintly smiled.

“I just didn’t think you would directly kill Sky Burial. I suppose Pandora...” The Dragoness knew about this information, just not in detail.

“It’s fine, I’m in charge of things related to Pandora now...” Hunting Blade shrugged.

“Then I’m afraid Pandora’s got a headache coming...” The Dragoness couldn’t help smiling. She glanced at the nearby Ye Cang who was eating, drinking, and chatting; then sighed, “Your boss sure is free...”

“Leader has already done too much for Cold Moon and I. Both of us hope that leader can be more free...” Hunting Flame thought of the past and smiled. The Dragoness remained silent. No wonder #1 was so afraid. The power of those three could easily topple his reign. It wasn’t even possible to drive a wedge between them; especially Cold Moon, no one that has tried has ever returned. Now, no one dared to bother her.

“Hearing your words, I want to meet this Silver Devil even more...” Liu FengSheng smiled.

The two of them froze, then both smiled, “You will...”

“As for Pandora’s matters, I hope to discuss it with the Liu family. If you’re interested, we can make arrangements...” Hunting Flame recalled that Pandora also wanted to work with the Liu Family to develop new medicines.

“Then I’ll be imposing on your, Brother Hunting Flame.” Liu FengSheng said fondly. Pandora was also a globally known organization, one of the strongest underground medicine manufacturers, despite originating from poison. However, their medicine development was also first rate. They formed many cooperative relationships with the federation, but rarely associated with family clans. At least they rarely played with the Liu family.

The Dragoness didn’t say anything. Though Pandora had their

fair share of contact with the chinese federation but as the Dragon Group, it wasn't good to dabble in too many things.

The banquet gradually came to an end. That night left the guests witless as they witnessed the Liu family's connections as one of the capital's three great families. Ye Cang led everyone back to the Qin branch family's manor first before coming to the lakeside.

"The Liu family agreed to work together with Pandora..." Hunting Flame slowly walked out of the darkness.

"Then only Pandora's side is left. Go find Mandala, she probably won't refuse..." Ye Cang nodded.

"I got it, leader..." Hunting Flame turned. With a flash of flame, he disappeared.

# Chapter 435: Coaching the Three Goddesses

---

Ye Cang returned to the Qin Family and went directly to the bath. He opened the skylight and enjoyed the night's gentle moonlight. Raising his hand, he reached slowly towards the ring hanging on his chest.

...

The next day, early morning.

Ye Cang once again went to La HongYe's class and saw Mr. Qin disguised with a hat in the first row. Beside him was the first-timer, Zhang ZhengXiong and Lin Le. They felt like they had just stepped foot inside a virtual reality theater, as they followed the huge crowd inside. FrozenCloud facepalmed. She had only gone to Sister HongYe's class once. It was too awkward to be the only girl among a room full of horny men about to shoot off their...

After the class, Ye Cang's group returned to Lin Hai. They entered the game once the clock struck 12.

Since the other two temples were being completed and Little Ye Tian had already made plans for the other facilities, they had free time before the Goddesses descended. As for Bal Village, Granny Rica was there to take care of it.

"Where's Team Leader?" OldWangFromNextDoor had come a bit late.

"The two temples are about to be completed, so Team Leader is over at Mallows' temple, coaching etc..." FrozenCloud said with a strange expression.

OldWangFromNextDoor was immediately filled with jealousy and regret. He looked towards the three portraits of the Goddesses by the association doorway, "If only I were Team Leader..."

Mallows' Temple.

SpyingBlade watched as Ye Cang made the three Goddesses perform various shameful actions. Recalling how Ye Cang had been reading a fashion magazine in the morning, it seemed like he planned to mess with them to death...

“Jam! You’re too stiff! Relax. Show a bit more chest! Smile more sweetly! You don’t know how a smile can be sweet? Let me help... Your mouth should be like this and this. It’s hard!? Bear with it! I’m helping you adapt to the new age! If you don’t keep up with the times, then you’ll be abandoned by your believers...”

“Anya, why are you wearing such conservative pants! It’s too thick! Where’s the miniskirt!? It should be like this! What kind of shoes are these you ask? High heels! I specially ordered it from the tailor! You’re not used to them!? Well you still have to wear them! By today, I want you to be able to sprint in them as if you were flying, as naturally as being barefoot! Slap! Stick that butt out more!”

“And you! Mallows! Although your chest is your selling point, you still have to change things up in order to attract those hungry eyes. What do I mean hungry? I mean your believers... Now show more leg in that slit dress! Wear this too. What are these clothes you ask!? Stockings... an accessory that desperate men love... Hurry! No talking back!”

Wu Na covered her forehead. She directly turned and left the temple. She could no longer bear to watch. Looking outside at the devoted Maru Naya and other believers, she sighed, sympathizing silently...

ThornyRose and FrozenBlood came to the outside of the temple and saw Wu Na guarding the door, gazing at the clouds. “Why aren’t you inside?”

“Don’t go in, you won’t be able to bear watching...” Wu Na said with a sigh.

ThornyRose entered for not even five minutes before decisively

leaving. “I feel like those three sl\*tty Goddesses seem a bit excited...”

“...” Wu Na didn’t know whether to laugh or cry. The two woman began to happily chat about random things.

“Oh right, where’s Sister Icy?” Wu Na wondered why FrozenBlood hadn’t come out of the temple with ThornyRose.

“Should still be inside...” ThornyRose replied, unsure. The two of them entered the temple once again, and saw that FrozenBlood had completely taken up the role of the villain’s secretary. That woman was truly a super S. She could even play along with Ye Cang, the vilest of the vile...

The two women once again left the temple. It was a completely different world in there.

“Where’s Lele?” ThornyRose said as she sat on the ivory stairs.

“He said something about an armed chamber of commerce meeting. They’re talking about this quarter’s best salesthug...” Wu Na’s words made ThornyRose wonder just what in the world an armed merchant really was...

“Then Shaking Bear and Little Tian?” ThornyRose shook her head and stopped wondering about Lele.

“A’Xiong is undergoing his teacher’s trials. Last time I saw his teacher, I felt that he was sort of like an old gay guy. He was touching A’Xiong all over while saying ‘a healthy body is a healthy mind’. Too creepy...” Wu Na said with a complicated expression.

“You mean A’Xiong’s class instructor? Conrad Dove isn’t some gay guy. You should know that his position in the church is even higher than Arch-Bishop Magi. He’s a legendary hero. It’s just that right now, he’s enjoying his retirement life...” SpyingBlade also came out, being unable to bear it anymore.

“How do you know? Did Little Tian tell you?” Wu Na laughed.

“I am also part of the church...” SpyingBlade pointed to his own Dark Judges badge.

“I say, why were you so adamant about leaving Shooting Star back then? Those were your heydays. People were even comparing you to CloudDragon...” ThornyRose was curious.

“No reason. I was confused about something and couldn’t see clearly. I made a few mistakes, but it won’t happen anymore. I already have what I want most in the world... and conviction...” SpyingBlade said, then turned and smiled towards the temple, “Team Leader is such a mysterious guy. To be able to meet him is Gongsun Qian’s good fortune...”

“Hey, snap out of it. You’ve been brainwashed by that lowlife...” ThornyRose quickly got up and shook his shoulders.

“Right now, you do not yet understand what kind of person Team Leader is...” SpyingBlade smiled, feeling somewhat emotional. Team Leader’s contacts and relations extended from the 10 Commandments to the top of the Dragon Group. He was not only famous in the underground world, but he had absolute trust from his companions. SpyingBlade thought about why Team Leader didn’t just fight for #1’s position. With his strength, it was possible, but he doesn’t, all for the sake of some unknown promise.

“Pfft, a lowlife...” ThornyRose turned away, in a bad mood. She once again thought of the time, she, FrozenBlood and GreenDew were fighting a boss, when suddenly, a mysterious shot broke through her back door. Even worse, it was shot by a man! She had endured it for the sake of the guild but it had happened again! It had to be on purpose!!

Wu Na and SpyingBlade saw the fury in ThornyRose’s eyes, and recalled the story of their first meeting. They couldn’t help but smile. They couldn’t really blame her for her rage.

“What about that brat Fang Ci?” ThornyRose changed the topic, for a change of mood.



“Lately, Ye Cang let him be in charge of selling...” Wu Na stopped there, recalling that Ye Cang hadn’t told her yet.

SpyingBlade quickly helped to smooth things over, “selling equipment...”

“Oh~~ Is that right?” ThornyRose raised her brows. She looked to Wu Na, who was faintly avoiding her gaze, “Good sister, come chat with me...”

She grabbed Wu Na and took her for a chat behind a pillar.

“Hah, Team Leader’s women...” SpyingBlade sighed, then returned to the temple to watch the S&M.

# Chapter 436: Establishing Happy Firmaments

---

“Well done. You have to remember! Especially le sentiment~! Show them your most beautiful, most stimulating side!!” Ye Cang slowly walked out of the temple. The three Goddesses all waved him farewell.

SpyingBlade was puzzled. Why was he seeing three brothel girls in training instead of goddesses? They even appeared a bit like korean idols.

The moment Ye Cang stepped out of the temple, he was seized by ThornyRose. “Amplification Device and Soldier Food eh... You damn, conscienceless lowlife! You don’t come to me when you get something good! Aren’t we in the same club!!?”

“Eh... well it’s like this. I figured you couldn’t afford it...” Ye Cang said earnestly.

ThornyRose’s teeth latched onto his face.

“Ah! My face!!” Ye Cang’s scream echoed throughout the shrine. Wu Na sighed, somewhat sympathizing with ThornyRose. Every time they met, the woman would be angered half to death. She quickly worked with FrozenBlood to pull them apart.

In the end, Ye Cang notified Little Ye Tian that they would be giving 3 of each amplification device to ThornyRose’s team as well as 15 soldier foods. Looking at the distant red sky, he sighed. Lin Le’s lively figure appeared, “Brother Lil’White, I picked up a Guild Charter while walking down the stairs...”

ThornyRose, who was walking down the stairs, suddenly felt a pain in her chest and her legs lost their strength, nearly making her fall down the steps. F\*\*k! That can happen!!? Lele, is your father the GM!?

“Go! Let’s establish Happy Firmaments!” Ye Cang took the guild

charter and suddenly turned and looked heroically into the distance. He drew Assenroche and raised it high. It's transparent blade looked extremely beautiful.

Black Rock City.

In the player's marketplace, many groups were going about their everyday activities. Ye Cang's Happy Firmament's General Store was a very popular place, the space around the building had already become like a large shopping center. It was a place that most players would go to after returning to the city. Often, there would be good equipment, which made all the players who had made a bit of money come rushing over.

At this moment.

"A new guild has been established! Let us welcome [Happy Firmaments - Fraternity - Corporation - Conglomerate - Invincible in the firmaments - Always available for catering, medicine, engineering projects, equipment, and hairstyling. Our mini guild studio promises a fair price. Apologies, currently not recruiting. We wish everyone a happy gaming. PS: just a friendly reminder O(n\_n)O, you can shorten this name to Happy Firmaments Fraternity because we will be changing the name irregularly.] to Black Rock City!" The China System announcement played.

"What kind of damn name is that? Is it a tongue-twister!?" CloudDragon was dumbfounded.

LordAsked froze, then let slip a smile, "A bunch of dumbasses..."

ThornyRose facepalmed, "I knew it... those guys would never come up with a normal name..."

"Can it even be any longer..." MistyVeil didn't know whether to laugh or cry.

"Catering?" NalanPureSoul's face became pale.

Black Rock City was thrown into an uproar.

“Brother Hero has created a guild! Such an earth-shattering name! It’s so domineering in every way!”

“Of course! Do you see whose guild that is!? It’s Really New Village’s Three Brothers!!”

“A pity that they aren’t recruiting. My lifetime aspiration is to join the Happy Firmaments Fraternity in order to help the Three Brothers...”

“Covered in whites and only level 11, who do you think you are!? However, this not recruiting must mean they are walking the path of elites. Only the best of experts can get in!”

“So what if I’m covered in whites!? Hero won’t care!”

“Only idiots wouldn’t care...”

“Your seeking death! Triple Strike!!”

“Humph, I’m someone who has bought from the Happy Firmaments General Store. I’ll show you how terrifying distinguished equipment can be... Shadow Assault!”

“Bros, don’t fight. The Goddess Association has started recruiting again! Why don’t you hurry!”

“Wait for me! Bro, save me a spot! Since I can’t yet fulfil my life goal of joining Happy Firmaments, then I’ll first join the Goddess Association!!”

“Bullsh\*t! You still have the time to show off here. Hurry and rush over with your movement skills!!”

Ye Cang emerged from the city administration center and tidied up his tiger skin coat. “From now on, call me boss guild leader...”

“Boss vice guild leader...” Lin Le raised his chin proudly.

“Same...” Zhang ZhengXiong crossed his arms.

“Look at you guys acting all important...” Wu Na couldn’t help smiling.

“Lil’Dino, drag this rude person out and give her a beating. Death penalty...” Ye Cang said, but before he could finish, Wu Na reached out, pinched his cheeks and said with a smile, “What did you say?”

“I’m just kidding... You couldn’t tell? Haha,ahaha...” Ye Cang gulped. FrozenCloud also felt her scalp tingle. Nana was very scary when angry.

“Really, I’m now the guild leader. You should be more respectful, otherwise people will look down on our guild...” Ye Cang grumbled. Wu Na just rolled her eyes in response.

“Everyone get ready. The Goddess Association members will be following us to Jam’s shrine to wait for the three goddesses to descend...” Ye Cang said, then they each split up to do their task.

The grand procession arrived at Jam’s shrine at the top of the Ravine of Death. In the middle of the ruins was a reconstructed temple. A hint of life could now be felt from this miserable scene. On top of the flight of stairs, a beam of light shined, then three goddesses descended simultaneously. Immediately, the earth began to emit the fragrance of flowers, while the air became clean and fresh. Anya wore a wild looking tiger-stripe mini skirt, Jam wore an outfit made of green leaves, and Mallows had a high slit dress which showed off the see-through cloth around her legs. They all wore different coloured high-heels. These were designed with the help of Carry, who Ye Cang had invited. With their drop-dead gorgeous faces and their supreme temperament as Goddesses, the result was the scene of tens of thousands of people covering their noses and mouths.

“Thank you believers and heroes for helping us sisters rebuild our temples. Once again, please receive our blessing...” Jam said. She clasped her hands, closed her eyes, and began to sing a song full of life. Hundreds of flowers blossomed and butterflies frolicked about. Anya’s prominent and steady voice joined in. Everyone saw the mantises begin to hunt. The scene of predators and prey began to appear. When they heard Mallows’ dignified and

feminine voice, the cycle of growth and decline began to play out around them, completing the laws of nature. Everyone couldn't help but close their eyes to feel the spirit in the air. They were afraid to miss even a single beat of this wild and awe-inspiring symphony. Their stress from work and life was wiped clean. They were completely drunk in the melodies of these Goddesses of nature.

“Congratulations, you've received the three nature goddesses' permanent blessing. Gain +2 all attributes, +10 nature and poison resistance, and an accelerated health regeneration when in nature environments.”

# Chapter 437: Eagle Eye

---

For a long time, everyone was enthralled by the music. Even Ye Cang was affected.

Little Ye Tian recalled their documented information. The Goddess of Nature's three daughters each inherited one of her main roles and gained many of their own minor ones. Of course, the Goddess of Nature was still the supreme deity.

Suddenly, applause resounded. Everyone cheered and worshipped. The three goddesses were touched. It had been a long time since they had such passionate believers. Their gratitude for Ye Cang increased by a couple of points.

“Eh, is this their debut...” However she looked at it, FrozenCloud felt like this was a stage performance.

Soon after, along with the restoration of the shrine, the three goddesses' representatives took up their roles as class instructors. Later, a few more people came having received the goddesses' summons. Each of them was assigned to serve under the three class instructors. Many hunters and assassins placed themselves in the Anya faction. The spellcasters joined Jam and Mallow; the difference was that Jam leaned towards nature summons while Mallow leaned towards druidic spells and offensive nature magic.

Of course, as the Goddess Association's president, Ye Cang received both Linda and Maru Naya's guidance. However, he could mainly only learn Anya's skills. The rest he could only try and see. Maru Naya imparted on him a spear throwing skill while Linda taught him a new tactical skill.

Maru Naya's Spear Fundamentals (Maru Naya - Beginner Level)

Throw: Deal 115% damage to a distant target.

Pinning Pierce: Store power for two seconds, then throw a spear type weapon with all your strength at a target near a wall or floor.

Deals 215% piercing damage and snares the target. Cost: 30 energy. Cooldown: 3 minutes.

Spear Mastery: When wielding a spear type weapon, gain +30 proficiency and deal an additional 15% damage.

Puncturing Star: Store up strength and perform a short dash towards the target, then throw with all your strength. Deals 185% piercing damage, decreasing by 10% for each target that it pierces through. Cost: 35 energy. Cooldown: 1 minute.

Recall: Reach out and grasp at a thrown weapon, causing it to return to your hand.

Tactics - Attack / Defence: When acting as leader, your teammates receive +8% damage, +5% strength, +4% damage reduction and +5% constitution. Activate attack to increase the damage of all teammates by 30% and strength by 20%. Activate defend to decrease damage taken by teammates by 12% and increase constitution by 25%. Active buff lasts for one minute. Cooldown: 30 minutes.

As for the others, they also received pretty good skill rewards. Many people chose to start afresh. They left their original associations, discarding the skills they learned there, and chose to learn the goddess association's skills. In a short period of time, the goddess association became the upstart association. Of course, compared to those old veterans, they were still far off. Even just comparing class instructors, they were like newborns but as an association, they could at least rise from lower middle to upper middle class.

As for those loyal and devoted members, with Ye Cang's cue, Little Jade handed out the first issue of the Goddess photobook and a recording of the three Goddesses new hit single! Little Jade saw that the people all logged off the moment they received the photobook, making her facepalm.

ThornyRose covered her forehead and laughed bitterly. What



made her the most speechless was that among the die-hard fans, 20% were women! Many of them were Anya's believers and looked down on the 'manipulative bitch' Jam, saying that she was stealing the spotlight. Whatever the case, they were goddesses! Not idols! However, recalling how Ye Cang had brainwashed the three goddesses, it seemed about right...

The association was off to a good start. Little Ye Tian drew up the policies and passed them to the three class instructors as well as the supervisors, who would be in charge when they weren't around.

Little Ye Tian even made three copies of the Giant Owl No.2, but their quality was far from matching the two in Ye Cang's hands. However, they were still middle tier gold equipment, so were sold as the key attraction of their shop, instantly arousing an enormous amount of interest. Though fire-arms weren't exactly rare in this world, they were still very uncommon among the players. Besides the pair in Ye Cang's hands, there were no known gun users yet.

Meanwhile, Ye Cang had finished resupplying and brought everyone to continue leveling up. As a majority of people had come to Black Peaks, Little Ye Tian proposed that they head through the grasslands towards White Stone City. They could conveniently pass by White Stone City and finish up a hidden quest she had received from the church. The quest was to investigate the finances of White Stone City's church.

To walk from Black Rock City to White Rock City would require many days. Ye Cang and the others were mainly leveling. Along the way, they met many packs of prairie wolves, but they were basically just free experience to his party, which was decked out in godly equipment. OldWangFromNextDoor gazed into the distance. I've already transformed from a nobody to an expert...

What gave Ye Cang a pleasant surprise was that his partner, the cyan eyed falcon - Little Blue Feather, reached level 10 and entered its childhood stage. Its body grew quite a bit, and its slender crown

now extended all the way to its tail feathers. Its two eyes were exceptionally sharp. It spread its wings and leapt to the skies, overlooking the land from the heavens, serving as Ye Cang's second pair of eyes.

Animal Companion (PaleSnow): Little Blue Feather

Category: Variant Cyan Eyed Falcon

Grade: A+

Level: 10

Specialties: Proud Son of the Wind / Overlord of the Birds of Prey: Has a chance to directly see through illusions, increased effects with ice and wind skills, and greatly increase flying speed.

Attack: 36 - 40

Strength: 47

Dexterity: 71

Constitution: 45

Intelligence: 72

Wisdom: 80

Eagle Eyes: Extremely farsighted and can share vision with player.

Whirlwind: Instantly flap its two wings, creating tens of sharp wind blades.

Divebomb: From up high, rapidly spiral downward at a target, dealing heavy physical and wind damage. Damage is increased by flying speed.

Cold Wings: Fly past an area, dealing wind + ice damage to targets and cause slow.

Rapid Rush: Temporarily increase flying speed by 65%.

Ye Cang's left eye emitted a faint light, sharing the sight of the

airborn Little Blue Feather. He closed his other eye, focusing on the overhead view. Ahead of them was a hilly area. Oh~ There's a cave. He cancelled the ability, returning his left eye to normal, then pointed in that direction and said, "There's a cave over there. Let's go have a look..."

SpyingBlade looked at Little Blue Feather, who was flying high above them. Eagle Eye? It's a good strategic skill. Team Leader even got a new tactical skill recently. It seems to be another burst type, one that increases attack power. Ranger... in the hands of Team Leader, it has a completely different meaning. Though the rumors are a bit exaggerated, but perhaps a truly omnipotent Ranger will be born.

## Chapter 438: Solam Bandits

---

Ye Cang climbed to the top of the hill and carefully surveyed the terrain. The cave was very well concealed, lying perfectly at the basin between multiple hills. If he hadn't seen it from above, he might have never found it...

"Father, I think something's off. That cave isn't naturally formed..." Although Little Ye Tian could only vaguely see it, she was sure that such an orderly cave could not be natural. It was most probably man-made. As it was created in such a concealed place, if it wasn't a robber's den, then it must be the hideout of an evil cult.

"Wait, I'll go investigate..." SpyingBlade leaped down the forested path, while entering stealth.

After an hour, SpyingBlade returned and saw the already completed food. His legs went weak when he saw everyone's grave expressions. What has he made this time? While stealthed, he pinched his nose and said, "I've already confirmed that it's a den of bandits, and pretty strong ones too. There is a sentry tower near the cave entrance, I've already dealt with it."

"Very good. Come eat a bit and prepare. Today is bagu bug, kagu bug, and maggot soup. Although it doesn't look very good, but it should be delicious since its effects are so good." Ye Cang struggled to stay conscious and quickly served some on his rice, then grabbed a piece of fried insect viscera covered in withered ash.

SpyingBlade wanted to throw up just seeing it. He quickly covered his mouth, "Why is it only bagu bugs, kagu bugs, and maggots..."

"We have too much, so we should do our best to eat as much as we can. We have a few mountains worth of bug meat, it would be a pity to let it go to waste," Ye Cang said, then instantly ate the three foods in succession. He managed to finish just in time before

passing out onto the ground.

Everyone gasped. The difficulty had been increased. They might not be able to eat all three at once. It might even take two tries. As it turned out, though SpyingBlade, Lin Le, and Zhang ZhengXiong, were still ok; the rest weren't able to do it. They had to eat a second time.

Ye Cang put away his kitchen tools, and looked at his pale companions. He cast a Mark of Nature on everyone. Little Ye Tian also applied her two blessings. Then the two of them sat down and drank some magic spring water to replenish their lost mana.

After recovering, Ye Cang drew his two guns, "Let's go..."

Everyone skipped down the hill, one after the other. Little Ye Tian examined the entrance of the cave, "They are a gang of thieves wanted in White Stone City, the Solam Bandits. They have a bounty..."

"How do you now this?" FrozenCloud asked doubtfully. She even knows about White Stone City's bounties? Is there anything she doesn't know?

"It's because this gang is situated between the two areas. Black Rock City has them listed as wanted, so White Stone City must as well. It's obvious..." Little Ye Tian rolled her eyes at FrozenCloud.

That damn girl, FrozenCloud saw Little Ye Tian looking at her as if looking at an idiot, and clenched her teeth. She's only cute when she's quiet.

"As long as there's a reward. Let's go." Ye Cang said unenthusiastically. Zhang ZhengXiong took the lead and they all followed him in.

Following the downward path, they ran across 4 or 5 elite bandits around a corner.

"Don't let the one at the back escape! Take him down!" SpyingBlade shouted.

Ye Cang pulled out his pike from his shadow. A full strength Pinning Pierce nailed the robber to a stone wall. Then his ballista was retrieved from his bag. He leisurely began to aim at the robber's head, pulled the trigger, then insta-kill!

Putting away his ballista, he grasped the air and his spear once more appeared in his hand from out of nowhere. Straight Thrust! Shadow Frost Strike, armor break, stun!

Zhang ZhengXiong struck with a glowing fist, sending one of them flying into a wall. Wu Na's Ice Spear shot after it, killing it.

SpyingBlade's longsword flashed about like a dark whip, continuously striking the remaining Solam bandits' throats or hearts. FrozenCloud unleashed a Triple Strike Shoryuken, targeting the one which got blown back by Zhang ZhengXiong.

Wang and Fang Ci were basically unneeded in this battle; everyone else had instantly settled it.

Ye Cang sighed. Fighting crowded battles in this sort of narrow passage made ranged weapons and magic more difficult, he had to be careful not to hit his own people. He put away the big guns and decided to temporarily fight in melee.

As they went deeper, they soon arrived at the end of the tunnel. Ye Cang went over to look and found stone stairs going down about ten meters or so. As it widened up, it became an underground village. About a hundred meters away was an underground river and even a boat! Just where did that go? With the battlefield becoming larger, Ye Cang tossed his pike back into his shadow. He scouted around and saw that on a more level area, there was a sentry tower. He then retreated to inform the others.

SpyingBlade thought it over and said, "Team Leader, you and me should go take out the closest sentry tower first. Only the two of us have stealth skills. The rest of you, wait for our signal."

Ye Cang nodded and followed. The two of them left the tunnel

and activated their stealth. Ye Cang's stealth was his Hunter Imprint - Conceal; although it only lasted a few seconds, that was enough, after all, it could be activated twice in a row. Ye Cang only needed to use it once before he could see the target's shadow. "You go up first, I'll Shadow Step over."

SpyingBlade silently ascended the sentry tower just as the two guards looked away. Suddenly, he appeared behind one, snapping his head and launching a Heart Strike! Before the other one even realized what happened, Ye Cang had appeared from his shadow and struck with a Shadow Frost Strike!

Everyone received the signal and came to the sentry tower. Lin Le climbed up the tower. Ye Cang looked at the crude, wooden buildings behind the fences. He squinted, looking at the bandits around a bonfire. "Cang has a plan..."

SpyingBlade rolled his eyes. Again with that strange way of speaking. He's sometimes says lines that sound like they would come from a period drama.

"What?"

Ye Cang brought everyone back to the tunnel, "Later, I'll make two pots of delicious, poisonous food, then me and SpyingBlade will put on the bandit clothes and bring it in. Right now is around dinner time, so they are definitely hungry..."

It wasn't that SpyingBlade disagreed with the plan, but the food had to be both poisonous and delicious. Was last time really not a coincidence!?

"The premise is that, you can do it..."

"I have a delicious recipe, however it will waste some of our precious meats. Hah, this time I'll add some of the broodmother meat in. There is only a limited amount of that meat, luckily I have saved the best part for us..." Ye Cang begrudgingly took what appeared to be a human arm, just much larger. He then cut off a

few pieces, and carefully put the rest back. Wu Na and FrozenCloud were already covering their mouths, even though they knew it was only the top half of the brood mother and not a human. They suddenly recalled the most important part of his speech. Wait a minute, the best part, don't tell me, it's the broodmother's breasts!?

SpyingBlade couldn't help but look at Ye Cang with genuine admiration. The ease at which Ye Cang did these things was way beyond his imagination...



# Chapter 439: Repeating Old Tricks

---

Ye Cang began to cook. Various poisonous mushrooms and other poisonous substances were added into the delicious and juicy broodmother stew. Very quickly, a fragrant smell emerged from it. Wu Na and the others all stared wide-eyed. How was it that he could make edible poison for the enemy, yet for his allies, he makes nightmare level cuisine... They all sighed.

Ye Cang and SpyingBlade changed into the bandit clothing, brought the two big pots to the middle of the stronghold and sat them down. “Time to eat! Time to eat!”

“Eh, today is stew? It smells pretty good, that meat looks delicious...” The bandits complemented.

“Boss, come try it...”

Very quickly, the contents of the pot were divided. Ye Cang and SpyingBlade quickly retreated and hid in the sentry tower. From on top, they watched as the bandits happily ate and drank. Not long after, they started receiving a stream of system messages notifying them of kills.

“Aaaargh! It’s poisoned!!”

“Someone poisoned the food!!”

Ye Cang pointed, signalling Zhang ZhengXiong to bring everyone in to clean things up. He then took out his dual pistols and began to shoot from on top of the sentry tower.

Zhang ZhengXiong was like a tiger slaughtering his way into a crowd of sick cats, his heavy axe covered in blood. Lin Le’s used his huge sword to cut everything in his path into two. Everyone killed exceptionally easily under Ye Cang’s rain of bullets.

In the end, only the poisoned bandit chief - Kabas was left. He was pinned to the ground by Ye Cang’s pike. Ye Cang then summoned his shadow weapon and began preparations to shoot a

Meteor Shot with his ballista. The result was three spear like objects pinning him down, rendering him unable to move. Then, he breathed his last breath under a barrage of ice spears, ice arrows, and shadow arrows...

Lin Le casually looted the chief's body. Ye Cang had excitedly leapt off the sentry tower but his legs lost all strength when he saw that and he fell on his face. Luckily, there was a fence blocking everyone's view.

Ye Cang quickly got up and wiped his face clean. He even took out a mirror to fix his appearance before nodding, "Good, no scars."

"What is the bounty item?" Ye Cang came up to everyone, not letting anything show on his face or in his voice.

"You just have to prove that you killed their chief, so just take his head." Little Ye Tian said. Ye Cang simply chopped off Kabas' head and stuffed it in a bag.

Little Ye Tian paid no attention to the ones testing their luck by looting the elite bandits, instead she was looking at the boat. An underground river which seemed to flow towards White Stone City, while upstream was in the direction of Black Rock City. The Solam Bandits frequently appear and disappear mysteriously. Sometimes even committing crimes inside the city. Could it be!?

"Father, everyone, pack up. Let's go on the boat. If I'm not wrong, they still have strongholds by the underground river, near Black Rock City and White Stone City. Let's quickly eliminate them. Father, you should go get Mar Junior and have him help. We should do our best to turn this and any other possible locations into your private territory. That way, we'll basically control an underground transport station. Whether it's for transport or combat, it will be a must have. This underground river is very expansive. I estimate that a large boat can pass through. It seems like this place was created by the earthquake a few years ago, so it

is something recent, otherwise the officials would have discovered it.”

SpyingBlade froze. If they could secure this route and create a port, then they would be set for life!

“There’s no time to lose. All aboard.” Ye Cang brought everyone to rush towards the boat and they sailed in the direction of Black Rock City. Ye Cang, SpyingBlade and FrozenCloud wore bandit clothes, and stood on the deck. The underground river was pitch-black. Besides Ye Cang, everyone was basically blind and could only see around the torches.

Ye Cang stood alert at the ship’s bow.

After sailing for about an hour, Ye Cang saw a flame in the distance and warned, “We’re arriving. Everyone get ready. A’Xiong, you guys prepare to ambush and standby in the ship’s hold. SpyingBlade and I will continue with the food delivery strategy. It is still around mealtime, so most of them probably haven’t had enough to eat. We’ll poison as many as we can...”

Ye Cang passed a large iron pot to SpyingBlade as they slowly reached shore. SpyingBlade saw the inspector approaching and passed the pot over, “Smell it, this is good stuff. Boss had us specially bring it as a reward for our brothers.”

“Thank you, brothers from mid-river.” The assigned inspector bandit arranged someone to carry the iron pot over, then invited Ye Cang and SpyingBlade to the bonfire which was their outdoor dining area.

SpyingBlade sighed in relief when he saw that they had just begun eating. He watched as they dipped their bread in the poisoned stew and straightforwardly enjoyed the taste. Ye Cang saw that even the guards on the sentry tower had smelled the scent and come down for a snack. The two of them made their way to corner of the base and checked out the boss of this place, Dulian. Then began to sneak back to the ship.

They shed their bandit disguise and changed into their equipment. Ye Cang put two freshly poisoned magic crystals into his pistols and put his ballista beside him so that it could be used at any time. Zhang ZhengXiong and the others had also come out on deck and got ready to launch a surprise attack. The tigerkin Little Ren leapt onto the boat's mast with a single jump and couched there, his two claws ready on his blades and his tiger eyes shining in the dark.

“The food is poisoned! Who sent it!!!” Dulian spat out blood, becoming weakened. He looked around at his subordinates who were foaming at the mouth, then waved his short saber, blocking Ye Cang's energy bullet. “Who is it!!”

“Since you're asking so courteously, then I can only respond in k...” Ye Cang suddenly stood up, but before he could finish, Wu Na smacked the back of his head. “Still showing off in this situation! Hurry and finish them off!!”

“Lil'Dino, have this ignorant woman walk the...” Ye Cang said, maintaining his indifferent expression, but before he could finish, he was forced to swallow his words by Wu Na's glare. “Go!”

Ye Cang used his Eagle Eyes, instantly locking 20 targets and unleashed Anya's Berserk Shot! Multishot! Enchant Fire - Explosive Shot! Explosive Energy Bullet! Rapid fire under overload mode!

In an instant, bullets fell like rain, causing continuous explosions.

After the rain of bullets, the others didn't have to spare much effort to clean up the rest. Ye Cang was about to act but FrozenCloud and Zhang ZhengXiong intercepted him while Lin Le looted the corpse. While sighing, Ye Cang chopped off Dulian's head and grumbled, “You should know, this victory is all because of my strategy and exquisite cooking skills. Letting me loot the boss should be a given. You ungrateful...”

“Team Leader, this is all for the greater good of the team...”  
FrozenCloud consoled.

“If it was really for the good of the team, then you should let me loot. I’ll definitely get a godly artifact!”

Everyone rolled their eyes, too lazy to retort.

Together, the chief’s dropped a piece of dark gold equipment, three gold equipment, as well as a skill that can forcefully remove a negative affect! The skill book was given to SpyingBlade. The dark gold metal belt, due to it’s damage reduction and constitution, was directly given to Zhang ZhengXiong. A gold quality light armguard was given to Fang Ci. A physical attacker ring was given to FrozenCloud. As for the final heavy axe, since no one needed it, it was directly put in the cart and pasted with a price-tag.

# Chapter 440: White Stone City

---

Everyone looted the stronghold, then walked out of the tunnel to the outside.

Little Ye Tian looked at their surroundings and immediately recognized their location. This was a part of Ye Cang's territory, the south-west region of the Callor Hills. Confirming their location, everyone went back underground and sailed the ship downstream to the middle area. Calculating the time, they continued downstream and arrived just in time for dinner.

The disguised Ye Cang and SpyingBlade learned that the bandits had once again robbed a caravan today and were celebrating. Thus, those two pots of stew became their last supper. A surprise attack and ranged bombardment ended what should have been a dramatic battle. What made everyone sigh was that Ye Cang managed to loot the boss' corpse, and got nothing as usual. Wu Na watched as Ye Cang vowed to get a godly artifact next time. He showed no signs of repenting, instead was looking at his divine hand, filled with confidence. This made her so angry she stamped her feet. Their painstaking work was for nothing.

Everyone came out from underground. It was currently nightfall. Climbing up the sentry tower, Little Ye Tian calculated that this should be somewhere deep in the hills near White Stone City. They could even see White Stone City's area after climbing to the top of a hill. This area was rarely traveled and had few monsters.

"Lastly, let's see where the underground river ends..." Little Ye Tian said. Everyone once again returned underground, and continued to sail down the river. Not even half an hour later, Ye Cang saw a fault in front of them. Continuing on would result in them falling down, and he didn't dare see how deep into the abyss it went. They forcefully stopped the boat and had Little Blue Feather scout ahead. Ye Cang activated his Eagle Eye skill, and using his shared vision, he looked down the bottomless waterfall.

“It probably goes towards the core of the planet. For the current us, it would be sure death. Let’s turn back...”

“To the planet’s core is it?” Little Ye Tian began to map it out in her mind. If it really went towards the planet’s core, then there would probably be another underground river down there, however there was still a chance that it would just lead to a dead end filled with water. Well, it was a matter for the future, “Father is right, let’s go to White Stone City first...”

Everyone hurried through the night towards White Stone City. White Stone City’s construction style was similar to Black Rock City’s, but it was mainly composed of warm colors. Many players saw Ye Cang’s group entering the city, and gaped in astonishment. CloudDragon quickly learned that Ye Cang had entered White Stone City and instructed people to keep track of their activity.

Ye Cang went directly to White Stone City’s city hall. Using his status as a viscount of the Planetary Empire, he spent a large amount of money to purchase two pieces of land far from the city. When he saw the employee give him a weird look, he sneered. Just wait until you realize the value of that land.

He then looked at White Stone City’s remaining store locations. There were still large stores that require viscount rank to purchase, but only 2 were left, costing 400 gold. Without even thinking, he bought them. Then arrogantly left the city hall with a swish of his tiger skin coat, giving off an ‘arrogant young master’ like feel...

Meanwhile, Little Ye Tian quickly settled the church’s financial problems by finding the perpetrator. She obtained the healing skill Circle of Healing (Perform AOE healing on targets in an area). White Stone City’s archbishop - Kara, tried to urge Little Ye Tian to stay, even showing disdain for Archbishop Magi. Little Ye Tian broke out in cold sweat. It seemed like the two women had some sort of feud.

As for Lin Le, he reported to White Stone City's armed chamber of commerce, showed off his skill which made him a money collecting expert, winning him the vice-president - Carlos' favor. "As expected of someone Adosna thinks highly of, very promising..."

As for the rest, they toured around White Stone City's class associations. Ye Cang was no exception, except he directly used one of the stores and stuck the goddess association's trademark on it and flipped the sign to: 'Open For Business'. Then he notified Little Jade to have them send over some class instructors and receptionists to please guests. He also had Rica send over some people to open up another Happy Firmaments General Store.

"Um, Team Leader, isn't saying to please guests a bit inappropriate..." Little Jade said quietly, super afraid of Ye Cang. She had also witnessed how Ye Cang had ravaged the goddesses.

"You dare to refute me..." Ye Cang's words made Little Jade quickly shout out praise for Team Leader, even comparing him to the gods.

"Good, the goddess association over here also have to be handled well... Ask Linda to take care of it." Ye Cang said, then hung up the call, satisfied.

Little Jade passed on Ye Cang's words. Linda faintly frowned. They had yet to have a firm footing in Black Rock City. Although Black Rock City and White Stone City weren't too far from each other, but let alone travelling back and forth, they didn't even have enough instructors. Yet he wanted to open a White Stone City branch just like that? Wasn't it too rushed... She shook her head. As the goddess's representative, he should have his own ideas.

On the contrary, Rica's side was very efficient. She quickly found some promising shop assistants, as well as some experienced and somewhat reliable store managers and rushed them over. Rica was more worried about transportation of goods. Recently, caravans



have been attacked or disappeared. The investigating teams had yet to find anything.

Ye Cang thought about who in Black Rock City he should inform. They had to be trustworthy enough to entrust with the task of bringing Rica's personnel to his territory in the Callor Hills, and board the boat he had left there and come to White Stone City. That would allow them to at least cut the travel time in half. With a sigh, he could only think of that crazy woman. "Hello, how are you..."

"....." ThornyRose felt her chest tighten and said unhappily, "What?"

Ye Cang told her about the underground river, then sent her the coordinates and had her bring Rica's people over to White Stone City.

ThornyRose raised her brows. An underground river!? This guy must want to start a dock and transport business. This will be a huge profit. However, besides Callor hill, the other exits shouldn't be his territory. If word was to get out, no one would ever sell it.

"The other two stops..."

"I've already obtained the territories..." Ye Cang's words made ThornyRose immediately think of Little Ye Tian. With that girl around, there was no way for him to make a loss. A whole family of villains...

"I got it..." ThornyRose replied.

"Oh wait, help me secretly tell Mar Junior. It has to remain private..." Ye Cang told her.

"Ok, see you in White Stone City." ThornyRose said, then hung up the call and began to head to Rica's general store.

Now feeling somewhat idle, Ye Cang decided to take a stroll. He first looked for White Stone City's high-end auction, where a late night auction happened to be taking place. These auctions usually

had good stuff... so he wanted to go check it out when a heroic voice called out from behind him, “Brother Pale Snow, I trust that you have been well...”

Ye Cang turned and smiled when he saw the person, “Brother CloudDragon, long time no see...”

# Chapter 441: Liliana

---

“Brother CloudDragon is as fabulous as ever...” Ye Cang’s words made CloudDragon feel somewhat disgusted. Where would you find someone who compliments a man with the word fabulous?

The passing pedestrians looked at the two strangely. “It’s BL...”

“I’ll get straight to the point, I want to invest in White Stone City’s goddess association...” CloudDragon felt the hot gaze of the pedestrians around them, especially from the fujoshi. They were surrounded by a huge crowd and it was still increasing without limit. The power of gossip and rumors was more potent than he imagined.

“That’s no problem. Later, I’ll have Little Tian discuss it with you. For now, is Brother CloudDragon interested in the high-end auction?” Ye Cang’s words attracted CloudDragon’s attention. The high-end auction house? With his current status, he couldn’t enter yet but Ye Cang’s status was actually high enough as a viscount. He nodded.

The two of them walked up to the high-end auction house. The guards took one look at Ye Cang’s viscount medal, saw nothing wrong, and allowed the two of them in.

The current auction was not selling items, but people. Ye Cang frowned. White Stone City still has slavery? He had never seen it before in Black Rock City.

“White Stone City and Black rock City are both on the edges of the Planetary Empire, so slavery is still common...” CloudDragon had seen some unfortunate elves and humans being transported before, while leveling.

“We’re now auctioning a female elf, surely no more explanation is required. Starting bid of 200 gold!” The auctioneer pointed at a female elf dressed in dregs. Though her long green hair, body, and

face were all dirty, it was still obvious that she was a very attractive female elf.

“200 gold.” Ye Cang took the initiative to bid.

CloudDragon crossed his arms and smiled. A gamble? Gambling whether or not there will be a hidden quest? This guy sure is rich, 200 gold didn’t even make him hesitate. He immediately recalled the amplification devices and soldier food, then shook his head, smiling bitterly.

“300!”

“310!”

Looking at the pitiful female elf, Ye Cang recalled how his granny had picked him up by a riverside. Clenching his teeth, he called out 500 gold. This was most of the funds he had on him, the rest was still with Rica and Little Ye Tian.

No one bid after that.

“Congratulations, you’ve obtained a follower.”

The guards sent the female elf to Ye Cang. Ye Cang grabbed the iron shackles and tore them off. The female elf examined Ye Cang with her two eyes and exclaimed in fright, “You are...”

“Don’t say it!” Ye Cang shouted lightly. The female elf quickly shut her mouth and nodded.

CloudDragon raised an eyebrow. Oh, something’s up? You are... they know each other? No, then it must have to do with race. He recalled Ye Cang’s night vision and language abilities. Half elf? That must be what she wanted to say and it’s true that half elves are relatively taboo. Though it is much better now than in the past but they are still existences that are discriminated against.

“What’s your name?” Ye Cang asked.

“Liliana,” The female elf said her name.

“Mm, for now, work for me. I’m conveniently lacking a

receptionist at the association, I'll doll you up and train you..." Ye Cang said, not planning to listen to her life story. He could imagine how tragic it was.

Liliana didn't understand, but still nodded. "Thank you..."

Follower Name: Liliana (Family Name Unknown)

Loyalty: Savior

Race: Sunfury Elf

Characteristics: Graceful, Lazy

Grade: A+

Non-combat Slave: very low fighting capability.

Specialites: Yet to be discovered.

Ye Cang broke out in cold sweat. She wasn't good at anything, and her power level wasn't even 5. How was her friggin grade A+? How could Little Blue feather endure this humiliation!?

CloudDragon didn't pay attention to the two of them. He looked at the next item and raised a brow. Boxes?

"Next up are three mysterious boxes. Truth be told, not even I know what is inside of them. Starting bid of 20 gold." The auctioneer said with a smile.

"So that's it. Something like a lucky box..." CloudDragon thought about it and was about to bid, when suddenly Ye Cang's two eyes became abnormal. Damn, there is a corpse looting monster beside me.

"20 gold!" Ye Cang roared.

"25!"

"30!"

"35!"

"40!" In the end, Ye Cang paid 40 gold to get the 3 mystery boxes

and instantly opened them. There was nothing at all inside. He looked at the auctioneer and roared, “Fraud! There’s nothing at all in the three boxes! I demand an explanation! This is clearly a scam!”

The surrounding people all looked over. There was really nothing in there. “Hey, that’s too much. To actually dare to sell empty mystery boxes, who would buy anything from here in the future?”

The auctioneer rushed over to confirm, and they were indeed empty. He broke out in cold sweat. This place was filled with important people; with something like this happening, if he didn’t handle it well, it would affect the auction house’s reputation. He looked towards Ye Cang, “Dear customer, this was all due to our negligence. We will return your money and give you a big gift at the end... Dear guests, our White Stone City auction is definitely fair, please don’t worry.”

CloudDragon wiped the sweat from his forehead. He looked at Ye Cang who was humming a little tune. This was clearly a problem of this bastard being too unlucky to draw anything, to the point that even the auction house felt that they did something wrong. They’re even giving him a gift as compensation.

In the end, CloudDragon spent nearly 100 gold, which was considered cheap, to buy a dark gold quality ring. Of course, it was only cheap when compared to the player’s market. Ye Cang also received the auction houses apology and obtained a dark gold magic tome.

Advanced Magic Tome (Dark Gold - Mage’s Tower)

Category: Tome on a Chain

Requirements: 150 Intelligence, 110 Wisdom

+20 Intelligence

+10 Wisdom

+20 Spell Power

+10% Magic Damage

Recover 2 mana every 10 seconds.

Incantation Recording: Can store three 5th level spells or lower. After use, requires one natural day to re-record.

Divine Flash - Advanced: Everyday, the tome will automatically refresh with three level 3-4 spells.

Ye Cang was very satisfied. It was perfect as a replacement for his current magic tome. CloudDragon looked at Ye Cang holding a magic sword, carrying a tome, two guns on his waist and probably many more weapons. Was he really building to be omnipotent? Looking at Ye Cang's sword, he could tell it was a good sword. He sighed at how Ye Cang managed to get dark gold equipment without spending a dime.

After that, Ye Cang notified Little Ye Tian to have her negotiate with CloudDragon and they quickly came to an agreement. CloudDragon waved goodbye, and Little Ye Tian began to size up Liliana. Although she was completely tattered, her bearing was still graceful; clearly someone from a good household.

Ye Cang had been carrying around some tailored clothes in his bag. He made Little Ye Tian wash her up and change her into the new clothes.

Little Ye Tian looked at the peerless beauty in the mirror; Pointed ears, breasts that weren't milk-jugs but still above average, a simple one shoulder long-dress; even Liliana herself was stunned.

Afterwards, Ye Cang arranged for her to live in the goddess association, then logged off to eat.

## Chapter 442: Marquis Azshara's Brand

---

Once Rica heard, she quickly swapped the personnel to her most trusted workers. She thought to herself that this secret must not be revealed to others and even personally brought them to Callor Hills.

After Mar Junior's private conversation with ThornyRose and learning of the underground river, he hesitated for a moment before immediately becoming cheerful. He looked at ThornyRose. Since that brat had her deliver such an important message, then he must trust this person quite a bit. He brought ThornyRose, some instructors, receptionists from the goddess association and Rica's group with him. ThornyRose led everyone to the coordinates shown on Little Ye Tian's virtual map. In a place with nearly no signs of human activity, they entered Callor Hills.

Mar Junior saw the size of this underground river. Good man, it would even be possible to sail a battleship through here. The water is also not too fast. Climbing onto the Bandit vessel that Ye Cang had left behind, he saw the mark of the Solam Bandits. So it turns out there den is here. They were using the underground river. No wonder the investigation team was never able to find them, everything was underground!

Sailing down the river, they passed the middle stop, and without stopping, went directly to Alonzoia Hills. Climbing to the top of a hill, White Stone City was already in site. This location was simply amazing! It was definitely a strategic transport route! Why had no one ever discovered it? He suddenly recalled the earthquake a few years back. Many places had collapsed; it was probably then... otherwise, there was no way such a convenient location remained undiscovered. Travelling from Black Rock City to White Stone City, they managed to save about 70%! Of course, returning against the stream would take a bit longer, but it would be no problem with a magic crystal powered boat!



As for Little Ye Tian, she planned to use wind power to return. During the night, the tailwind would go from Black Rock to White Stone, but at certain times, the wind would change directions and flow from White Stone to Black Rock. Then, even a normal boat would be able to make the trip, it would just require some planning.

Mar Junior arrived at White Stone City, and immediately found Ye Cang.

“About the other territories, have you dealt with it!?” Mar Junior chopped through the iron and went straight through the door.

“I’ve already bought it.” Ye Cang said indifferently.

“That’s good. Don’t tell anyone for now, I’ll go consult with sir Marquis. If you want to keep them, then you need to be at least an earl, otherwise you’ll be hit with a heavy tariff. Obviously, even if it isn’t possible, the Marquis and I will do everything in our power to spare you from the tariff, just that if it comes to that, there will be too many people taking a share of the profits.” Mar Junior slowly nodded, “Your appointment to earl should be in the next two days. I’ll speed up the process as much as I can, after all you’ve opened a prosperous trade route, removed the tumor to the north, and are even the president of a new association. However, before you are appointed, you can’t let any power other than myself know about it! Otherwise it will be trouble!”

“Father, Grand Knight Mar is right...” Little Ye Tian agreed.

“I know...” Ye Cang didn’t seem to care.

“Anyways, hurry back to Black Rock City with me...” Mar Junior pulled Ye Cang along with him as he energetically rushed back to Alonzoia Hills while doing his best to avoid being spotted.

“I still haven’t gotten my reward for killing the three bandit leaders...” Ye Cang looked towards White Rock City and grieved.

“You can get it back in Black Rock City! It’s a bounty jointly

offered by our two cities...” Mar Junior glanced at Ye Cang, somewhat dumbfounded. In this situation, he still cared about that tiny reward.

Marquis Azshara’s residence.

Mar Junior brought Ye Cang to visit in the middle of the night. Azshara was still in his pajamas, very puzzled over what was so urgent. To insist on waking Marquis Azshara in the middle of the night, he was about to ask who when he saw Mar Junior made a gesture indicating the walls had ears. He quickly closed the window shutters and checked the surroundings for people. Once they were sure, he roughly heard about the underground river dock plan. Azshara’s sleepiness was immediately gone. “Really!?”

“Unmistakably. I’ve already taken a boat down to Alonzoia Hill near White Stone City. It saved at least 70% time! Moreover the underground river cavern is large, there will be no problem sailing a battleship!” Mar Junior confirmed earnestly.

“Then the territory’s legal owner is?” Azshara quickly asked. This was the most worrying part.

“It’s my good friend from our hometown, viscount PaleSnow. Moreover, the docks had been occupied by the Solam Bandits, but they have already been eradicated by Viscount PaleSnow and my regiment’s Priest HeavenShakingMight and Paladin NightSky...” Mar Junior smiled.

“Very good! Very good! However, it will be difficult protect it as a viscount. It would be fine if it was just us, but if that rascal Clay makes a fuss about it. Since we have lawful ownership, I’ll send an urgent magic message to his highness at Red Moon City with the Book of Appointment! We should be able to carry it out tomorrow.” Azshara quickly began writing in the Book of Appointment, exaggerating Ye Cang’s exploits, adding in the three goddesses recovery, new association, clearing up prosperity hill, and eradicating the Solam Bandits.

“Little Brother PaleSnow, for Mar Junior to have a friend like you is like giving wings to a tiger. Don’t worry about the pier’s construction, good or bad, I was once in the navy. We just have to confirm each’s benefits. The empire will definitely take 30% as tax, that is inevitable. The remaining will be ours. For our share, we can slowly discuss it...” Azshara reached out and patted Ye Cang’s shoulder, while Ye Cang broke out in cold sweat. He hadn’t even spoken a word. Thinking about the division, being here, he was actually included as part of Mar Junior’s faction. Of course, sharing it with him is a must. Thinking back to how Old Mar was choking with tears and wouldn’t even turn around when he left. He declaration to rise up to become pope as a half-elf, he couldn’t help nodding, “Then I’ll be troubling Marquis Azshara...”

Azshara narrowed his eyes, seeing Ye Cang in a whole new light. Neither humble nor overbearing; dividing benefits was the time when most would turn on eachother or have change of hearts. If Ye Cang really went to Clay, he would have treated him as a lost cause. Mar Junior, seeing Ye Cang’s compliance, recalled his father’s letter. This really was someone he could trust. It was probably just for him... no, for his father... Truly an interesting guy.

Ye Cang waved goodbye and logged out of the game.

“Your friend is very interesting. The first time I saw him, his expression left a deep impression on me...” Azshara looked at the direction Ye Cang had disappeared in.

“Indeed...” Mar Junior opened up a bottle of wine, “I guess you can’t sleep either...”

Azshara faintly smiled and drank a toast with his son-in-law. His pajamas slightly loosened revealing the nape of his neck and a brand. And this brand was something that only a half-elf prisoner from about 10 years ago would have. Mar Junior looked at the brand and smiled, “That’s where you met my mother right...”

“Yeah, at that time, us 7 children were planning to escape, but only 3 of us succeeded. The rest all became food for the humans...” Azshara thought till there and began to grip the brand on his neck harder before slowly releasing it. He sighed, “Actually, if it weren’t for the other four attracting their attention, none of us would have escaped. I bet you’d never guess what their final declaration 10 years ago was. Your mother was even younger than me, so probably doesn’t remember...”

“What did they say?” Mar Junior asked.

“Alukas, roccas, alona, donenar...” Azshara looked out the window and muttered.

“Half-elves, the fire in our hearts will not stop burning. The darkness has past, and the light is upon us...” Mar Junior said quietly, then lowered his head in a silent tribute.

# Chapter 443: Earl PaleSnow

---

Azshara raised his hand and touched the brand on the back of his neck. He looked at the moonlight and said respectfully, “That’s exactly why all of us half elves must unite and survive, so that the tinders will not be extinguished... The tragedy following Vivian’s uprising and defeat cannot be repeated.”

“Right...” Mar Junior recalled when he first arrived at the holy church and the cold attitude he received when they found out he was a half elf. If not for archbishop magi’s and uncle Azshara’s support, it would have been hard for him to advance.

LinHai, half-moon lake.

Ye Cang found that Zhao XiangYu improved pretty quickly, so he could let her try out vibrations. He motioned her over, “You can start trying one of the two variations, ‘vibration’.”

Zhang XiangYu raised her brows in delight. She could finally learn something new! She recalled the words Ye Cang had once spoken, vibration is making use of the air’s resistance, opposite to the usual negation of air resistance.

Ye Cang reached to the bag on his back that looked like it held a long flute, and took out his thin, unmarked sword with the spiral flower handguard.

Zhang XiangYu looked at the streamlined structure. This sword’s speed was undoubtable.

“First, draw your sword...” Ye Cang began to demonstrate, slowly drawing his sword, “in such a way that it resonates with the air. Remember to use the method I taught you before to isolate it from the air but reverse it...”

Now, his sword began to shudder and release a resonant ringing. Ye Cang turned and faced the lake. One swing of his sword and the air boomed violently, like thunder beside her ears. Zhao XiangYu

saw that the water blasted from the lake wasn't in the form of droplets but was blasted by the vibrating sword qi into tiny vapors. It looked extremely beautiful under the moonlight; she couldn't help but sigh at how formidable her teacher was and the ease at which he executed that move. A seemingly simple variation had such terrifying destructive power.

"Understood?" Ye Cang sheathed his sword and replaced it into his bag before sitting back on the rock.

Zhao XiangYu nodded and tried to do as Ye Cang did, however, she couldn't get anything right. She frowned, feeling anxious.

"Don't rush, slowly feel it, one swing at a time. Only that way, can you truly grasp the resonant frequency. This isn't something that can be done overnight. This is the true test..." Ye Cang said with a calm smile, then grabbed a willow branch and instantly appeared behind Zuo Yiyi.

Under the whip of the willow branch, Zuo Yiyi screamed out in pain, then fell into the water, "The angle is wrong..."

Zuo Yiyi got out of the water and spat out some that got in her mouth. She laughed bitterly in her heart. He could even discover that, wasn't he just guiding Zhao XiangYu? Although she wasn't very good at martial arts, yet she could still see how plain and unembellished it was. It could be said to be a very fatal killing move. It vibrated so fast that even the water was separated. If it hit a person, their guts, blood and flesh would be instantly smashed apart.

Returning to the seaside cottage, Ye Cang discovered that he had nothing to do, so he lied down and slept.

In his sleep, Ye Cang dreamed while behind him stood Wu Na, ThornyRose, Little Tian, A'Xiong, Cold Moon, Hunting Flame, and the others. Not knowing why, he had to leave them one step at a time and throw himself into the darkness; an infinite darkness, without sound, without sight, he couldn't even feel himself.

Suddenly, Ye Cang woke up and brushed his sweat covered hair off his forehead. Heading into the bathroom, he splashed fresh water onto his face to clean himself up, then looked at himself in the mirror. “A dream?”

Ye Cang arrived at the seaside and looked out at the sea which had past its prime season for viewing the sea of stars. He slowly regained his usual indifference. The sea breeze gradually picked up, blowing his messy white hair, making it dance madly.

Ye Cang calmly looked out to the sea...

“Brother Lil’White, can’t sleep?” The sleepy Lin Le was planning to pee when he saw Ye Cang on the beach. The white hair was too conspicuous, so he walked over to Ye Cang’s side, stretched, and began to pee into the sea...

Ye Cang also loosened up his trousers and joined him. “A bit, just want some fresh air. Lele, do you still dream of your mom and dad?”

“Mm, I even dreamed of them just now, but their faces were black so I can’t see them...” Lin Le pulled up his pants, backed up two steps, and sat down on the beach. He watched as the waves came and washed the place he had peed.

Ye Cang patted Lin Le’s head. His parents had clearly abandoned him. “Hah, let’s go. Back to bed...”

Lin Le was totally oblivious to the fact that Ye Cang had just touched his head with the same hand he peed with. This was because Ye Cang had recalled the first time he shook hands with Lin Le...

The next day.

Ye Cang received the message and arrived at Marquis Azshara’s mansion. He saw them waiting for him, full of smiles and knew the Book of Appointments had gotten through.

Clay was puzzled as to why Azshara was supporting an outsider

that had just arrived, and had even recommended him as an earl. The most important point though was that the man's baronship was personally conferred by himself, so he wasn't even able to refute. While doubting, Ye Cang's earlship was sealed. That white hair's promotion speed was truly fast. Thinking of his status as president of the nature faction, supporting the construction of shrines and clearing Prosperity Hill, he could only sigh. There was nothing to nitpick at.

Mar Junior looked at Clay's doubtful expression, as well as the other three marquis's astonishment. Soon, you will know.

"Now we have a enormous piece of good news to celebrate, which is that our Earl PaleSnow has discovered a large underground river under his territory. It connects Black Rock City to White Stone City..." Azshara explained the plans for the underground river pier to them, especially emphasizing the words 'his territory'. Soon, he told everyone that the pier was being prepared.

Clay frowned hard. So that is their scheme! That damned Azshara! Well, what's done is done, it's too late to complain! With a snort, he became a smiling senior, "Such a big thing yet you didn't consult with us? Marquis Azshara, Earl PaleSnow, that's a bit improper..."

"It's nothing, we only just received the news ourselves. We weren't intentionally concealing it..." Azshara sneered in his heart, but smiled gracefully on the surface. He hinted at Ye Cang to remain silent and to let him take care of it.

Ye Cang calmly stood at Azshara's side.

Clay sighed. Azshara, as well as the other Marquises reached an agreement. In exchange for participating in the pier, they would obtain a small share. This was part of Azshara's plan. It was impossible to keep them out, since Clay had a lot of influence in Black Rock City. As for the rest of the marquises, he wasn't afraid. They were just three idiots who would be consumed eventually.



“The benefits that come with this underground river are great, we must be careful. Pulling in the holy church is unavoidable and I’ve already talked with White Stone City’s side. As for the construction of the pier, I’ve already inspected it. The land could be considered blessed by the heavens, it would be easy to expand. Both sides will need a large-scale trading port, we will be in charge of this die, while the empire will be in charge of the military port. I’ve already drawn up how the land will be divided...” Azshara took out a construction blueprint. Ye Cang stared blankly, not understanding at all. Little Ye Tian glanced over it. It was a pretty good plan but still a bit dull compared to her’s. She passed her blueprint to Ye Cang, who passed it on to Azshara, “This is our blueprint. What do you think?”

“Good. Very good! Then we’ll go according to yours. Such ingenious design!” Azshara exclaimed while looking at the detailed and exquisite designs on the blueprint.

# Chapter 444: Battlefield Opening

---

Little Ye Tian arranged the data. The new pier, Bal Village, the facilities surrounding the three goddess' shrines, White Stone City's goddess association branch; they had many gold sinks. Luckily, the labor force was considered cheap, so the plans laid out in her documents were quickly implemented.

And as the Happy Firmament group's leader, Ye Cang was training his elf servant Lilian. He began his plan to train her potential as a public relations expert! FrozenCloud only went in for a moment before decisively retreating back out. A long time later, she finally spit out a few words, "Very Team-Leader-esque..."

The Solam Bandit leaders' heads gave everyone another talent point.

On CloudDragon's side, he was heavily in favor of the goddess association branch. He allowed many newly arrived level 10 players in White Stone City to go there and change to new classes. Afterall, every class has their uses. He took into account the diversity of the team and also the fact that Goddess Jam had a branch class called Plant User which could obtain a very good, early level, aoe healing summon - Healing Flower Spirit. This made many holy church priests envious. It became a fairly popular support class. Nowadays, people looking to go to dangerous areas would shout, "Looking for flower fairies. If no flower fairies, then priests... Hah, we'll put up with priests..."

Ye Cang sighed when he watched the income from the general store arrive just to be immediately spent on the construction costs. He couldn't help but feel like finances were tight. While laden with grief, he pulled his elf servant Liliana over, "How's work?"

"Everyone is very friendly and kind..." Liliana said, somewhat embarrassed.

"You'll slowly get used to it. Raise your head, stick out your chest

and tighten your butt! Hair! Shake it up!” Ye Cang saw her slightly slacking off and quickly shouted.

Having gone through Ye Cang’s hellish training, the moment Liliana heard his orders, she immediately recovered her svelte public relations officer appearance. Ye Cang nodded, very satisfied. He patted her shoulder and spoke meaningful and heartfelt words, “Very well done. Follow the association and you will eat and drink well...”

“Ok, president!” Liliana nodded heavily, but when she saw a new member come in, she still ran over somewhat bashfully and said in a lovable voice, “Do you require my assistance?”

Ye Cang saw that the new member who had just come was immediately confused. Not bad, that girl has talent. She appears shy, but is actually concealing hidden danger. Normally, those who snare wealthy people are the one who are pure and endearingly silly, but are actually vicious man-eaters...

“The Planetary Empire, Steel Empire, and Elven Kingdom are all ruling over their lands, but the three countries often war with each other. Brave Warriors, come fight for your country! Large scale instance dungeon system is now formally available! Opens once a week. Each player can choose to join once a week and death will return you outside! Successfully occupy or destroy the enemy’s fort or kill the enemy’s leader to gain victory! Achievements, equipment and treasures are all waiting for you~~” The system announced. The player’s began to boil. The battlefield is opening!

“The fun stuff has arrived...” CloudDragon gripped his iron knuckles and smiled coldly.

Ye Cang stroked his chin and pondered. Hearing the system begin to talk about the rules, he didn’t continue pondering for even a second before beginning to call everyone to assemble.

“Bro! Hurry! Let’s go kill people. Recently we’ve only been killing parasites and bugs, I can’t take it anymore!!!” Zhang ZhengXiong

urged.

“Lele too!! Lele too!!” Lin Le was becoming excited.

“True, recently, besides a few dying bandits, there was nothing interesting. We should go vent a bit.” SpyingBlade had his hand on his sword. Thinking the CloudDragon would also go, though they were both from the same Planetary Empire faction... but accidentally killing someone shouldn't be a problem.

“Let's go in first...” Ye Cang said, then brought everyone into the battlefield instance transfer.

Looking at the surrounding densely packed players, he couldn't help but sigh. Little Ye Tian turned and saw an armoured man with a mustache in the army camp. That was probably their superior officer.

“Soldiers! The trash of the steel empire has already arrived at Batos hill! I will guard the rear! Everyone better return with good news! For the glory of the Planetary Empire!!”

Most of the players rolled their eyes. What do you mean guard the rear and wait for good news!? Does he think that we're idiots!? However they still raised their arms and shouted weakly, “Glory!!”

Ye Cang's group didn't follow the crowd, instead they stayed in a small group and kept their distance, advancing alone. Luckily they had a map of the terrain and Little Ye Tian had begun to create a virtual map of the area.

Meanwhile, CloudDragon had already reached the frontlines and brought his people to guard a ravine. What made CloudDragon raise his eyebrows was that he discovered ThunderShock from the League of Tyrants! There were people from the League of Tyrants! That meant that on this battlefield, he would definitely meet FlameEmperor... Things were becoming interesting.

LordAsked hid in the jungle and managed to ambush the people from Hundred Flowers, making them suffer disastrous losses. He

slayed FieldLily with a few strikes of his sword, then turned and said with disdain, “Women will always be women, so weak. Where is that brat, FlameEmperor?”

NalanPureSoul sighed. His assigned battlefield was different than Ye Cang’s. He had been sent to assist the battle against the Elven Kingdom. He looked at the woman on top of a distant ravine - MistyVeil. Facing her in a battlefield like this one was the worst, however, NalanPureSoul’s raised his shapely eyebrows and his lips faintly curled into a smile. It seems like it will be interesting...

By contrast, Ye Cang’s side was guarding a twisting path. Half an hour had already passed, yet it was completely devoid of life.

“Bro, we’ve already been sitting here and playing board games for over half an hour...” Zhang ZhengXiong said as he played with his holy sword card, activating its effect and removing Lin Le’s Earth Bear’s evolution.

“Haste makes waste...” Ye Cang said indifferently.

An hour passed, a cold breeze blew past them. There was still no one that had chosen to take this path. Everyone was becoming restless.

“Brow, let’s go to the front lines. Then we can kill as we please...” Zhang ZhengXiong had already given up.

Ye Cang sighed, crossed his arms and entered his one second thinking mode, then he clapped and said, “Good plan! To the front lines! Where’s SpyingBlade?”

“Team Leader, he left when you started playing board games...” FrozenCloud replied.

“Such an anti-social guy. Let’s go...” Ye Cang sighed once again. Everyone followed the sighing Ye Cang and rushed towards the front line.

At that time, CloudDragon had already confronted Flame Dragon Union’s legion. Lord’s Reign, League of Tyrants and Heavenly

Oath were in a chaotic melee. The war was extremely devastating.

CloudDragon looked at the long red haired, heroic man holding a two-handed sword in the distance. He had a grandeur as if he was looking down on the world and brought his lackeys with him as if taking a stroll. CloudDragon clenched his fist and brought VastSea and a few others over.

FlameEmperor glanced up and saw the oncoming LordAsked and CloudDragon. Resting his sword on his shoulder, he motioned for the two of them to come...

The Archer of Death - Fireworks faintly smiled. He was Flame Dragon's strategist, adviser, and also main archer. One of the federation's top three archers.

The League of Tyrants and Heavenly Oath were also part of the Steel Empire. If Flame Dragon fell, then it would also affect them. Afterall, no one wanted to lose their first battle. He aimed at CloudDragon and his arrow shot out like a beam of light, arriving instantly. CloudDragon's figure swayed. Ding! The arrow was knocked out of the air. He actually chose not to dodge. "Have your master come play with me and prepare to be defeated..."

# Chapter 445: Chaotic Warfare

---

CloudDragon! Fireworks clenched his teeth and glared at VastSea. If it weren't for him...

FlameEmperor stepped forwards and swung his sword. CloudDragon dodged sideways and performed a revolving kick. FlameEmperor sneered, freed one hand and grabbed his food. Taking a step to defuse the force, he swung his sword again. CloudDragon quickly pushed off the ground with his hands, twisting in midair to dodge and his head tried to headbutt FlameEmperor's jaw. Their bodies were pretty much tied together.

FlameEmperor laughed. As expected of a genius, it's a pity but you're still not my match. His sweeping sword seemed to defy physics and stop, then struck CloudDragon's forehead with a pommel strike. He then raised his two-handed sword high. VastSea quickly charged over to defend, blocking the fatal blow, then swung his sword, cutting down an incoming arrow.

FlameEmperor looked at VastSea who had knocked CloudDragon out of his attack range, and then entered a defensive posture. That guy always appeared at the most opportune moments. Sidestepping BlackIce's Icicles, he performed a backhand swing to block LordAsked's surprise attack and said with disdain, "He's finished and you're next? Trash..."

LordAsked frowned. Only FlameEmperor dared to treat him like that. He laughed, without getting angry, "Is that right? You arrogant brat..."

LordGrinned spoke while foolishly pinning down ColdFront, "Bro, he's only one year younger than you..."

Veins throbbed on LordAsked's forehead. That bastard! !@#\$\$%! Just whose side is he on...

CloudDragon recovered from the stun and his battle intent

surged. As expected, FlameEmperor was strong. He brought VastSea and YellowSprings to assault with him. BlackIce provided support from behind.

“CloudDragon’s earlier ambush resulted in the loss of many of my brothers. I have to repay the debt...” ThunderShock rushed up to intercept. Heavenly Oath also helped Flame Emperor suppress the Lord’s Reign forces. LordAsked and FlameEmperor struck back and forth, but it was clear to see that FlameEmperor held the advantage...

F\*\*k, this freak. LordAsked could only defend and occasionally counter against FlameEmperor’s invulnerable attacks, making him feel sullen.

FlameEmperor sneered and raised his two-handed sword high. Then suddenly, he raised his brows and turned to strike behind himself. Clang!

SpyingBlade was a bit shaken by his instant reaction. Such keen intuition! Since his sneak attack had failed, he was instantly put at a disadvantage! His two swords crossed in front of him, blocking an attack, then taking advantage of that to leap back into the crowd and hiding himself. In the end, he disappeared. FlameEmperor raised his brow. DarkBlade, his agility is not bad. It’s impossible to catch him in this sort of situation. He continued to confront LordAsked, while staying vigilant against an assassin’s sneak attacks, especially DarkBlade. Just from that one exchange, FlameEmperor could tell that DarkBlade’s equipment was unusually good; perhaps even better than his own.

CloudDragon kicked StrongBlondy away with a Rising Dragon Kick and was about to pursue when he sensed an assassin. He turned his body to dodge and performed a sweeping kick, knocking ClearMoon out of her stealth. At that time, a long sword stabbed through ClearMoon’s throat, then slashed, brutally beheading her.

“It’s you...” CloudDragon watched as SpyingBlade smoothly



slipped back into the melee and hid. Where did those guys go? If we had ShakingBear's auras, how would we be having so much trouble. It seems like ThornyRose's group has Heavenly Oath's reinforcements under control. This battle is too chaotic and too sudden.

An eagle cry sounded out from the distance.

FlameEmperor split his attention from LordAsked and raised his head to look at the falcon with the long, slender, beautiful crown. This wasn't a creature who should appear here. Whose pet is that?

Far away, one of Ye Cang's eyes was glowing, observing the battlefield through Little Blue Feather. "Everyone go to the frontlines. I'll go find a sniping point."

Saying that Ye Cang headed towards the northwest hill that he saw from Little Blue Feather's eyes. When Zhang ZhengXiong arrived, his allies at the front line were suddenly twice as strong. FlameEmperor frowned. What was going on? There's an aura! Who is it!? His gaze landed on Zhang ZhengXiong who had sent someone flying with his heavy axe. "I'll finish him off first..."

"HeavenShakingMight, back up! They will definitely focus fire you!" CloudDragon shouted.

"Who's afraid of them! I have more than enough life saving skills!" Zhang ZhengXiong grinned. With a swing of his huge crystal armguard, rainbow lights shot out, immediately blinding a large group of people. He then activated his axe's skill, releasing a ferocious moon-shaped horizontal chop, beheading tens of people. Resting his heavy axe on his shoulder, he looked to FlameEmperor, made a taunting gesture, and issued a furious challenge, "Weren't you going to focus me down? Come if the have the guts!!"

"Come!!!" Zhang ZhengXiong's astonishing roar made everyone tremble.

Seeing the instant boost in morale, CloudDragon trembled with

excitement. This was a top-level frontline general. He couldn't help thinking of a historic person... Zhang Fei...

FlameEmperor smiled malevolent, "Just a piece of trash! Dare to bark at me!? Charge! The world is FlameDragon's."

The two sides began a ferocious attack. Little Ye Tian continuously healed Zhang ZhengXiong, CloudDragon and LordAsked; their three frontline generals. Zhang ZhengXiong's terrifying defence and health left everyone intimidated. This whole time FlameEmperor's two-handed sword had only taken about half his health.

Zhang ZhengXiong also sighed. This guy called FlameEmperor was truly very strong. His axe had not touched him once! However, FlameEmperor also had no way to deal with him!

Desperate Prayer! He instantly unleashed a large-scale healing skill, healing majority of CloudDragon's and LordAsked's health back.

FlameEmperor frowned. This HeavenShakingMight's defence and life were too high. And he even had so many life-saving skills. Damn! Focusing on him is exactly what he wants! They had wasted so much firepower! They hadn't even killed CloudDragon or LordAsked! He turned and saw Lin Le's unstoppable massacre. He had brought a group of swordsmen and breached their rear! Not good! "ThunderShock, BlackForestMoon, ColdFront, Fireworks, you all guard here. I'll go intercept them!"

"You want to leave!?" Zhang ZhengXiong activated Fearless Charge. Super Speed triggered, and he instantly crashed into FlameEmperor. FlameEmperor was a bit startled. Such a fast charge!? He blocked it with his sword but was still knocked flying. Flipping in the air, he stabbed his sword in the ground and slid for nearly seven meters. Some holy light was faintly burning on his body. He looked at Zhang ZhengXiong disdainfully. "You... Very good."

Saying that, he suddenly felt the ground had become somewhat hot and quickly shouted, “Disperse!!”

FlameEmperor activated his movement skill and felt raging flames rush past his back. In a moment, nearly a hundred people had died. After regaining his balance, he raised his head to see a person on a distant hill. He had a wolf head hood, tiger skin cloak and raging flames in his hands. “The head of the three brothers...”

Ye Cang’s Flame Burst shot forth. FlameEmperor quickly avoided but was still hit by the shockwave and lost a bit of health. His brows raised more than ever and he said in a cold voice, “Really New Village’s Three Brothers...”

Ye Cang saw that he hadn’t gotten a direct hit and shrugged. Pulling out his two guns, he instantly locked onto 20 targets and activated Anya’s Berserk Shot, Multishot, Explosive Bullet, Explosive Energy Bullet and then shot rapidly in overload mode. FlameEmperor sensed the rain of bullets. He attempted to block with his two-handed sword, but was still hit by a few. He squinted his eyes. He couldn’t allow him to continue dealing damage from high grounds! “Fireworks, bring some people to restrict him...”

Fireworks brought some elites and rapidly circled around to the back of the hill.

# Chapter 446: Humiliation

---

“Oh, someone is coming around...” A light flickered in Ye Cang’s left eyes as he removed the magic crystals which had their energy exhausted and replaced them with new ones. With his two guns ready, he put them back at his waist, then pulled out his ballista from his bag and pointed it at Lin Le’s area. The one called FlameEmperor wasn’t easy to deal with. He was too powerful, perhaps even more so than himself in a duel. He had really taken the virtual world too lightly. Whether it’s LordAsked, CloudDragon, or NalanPureSoul, any of them could proclaim themselves among the best but this FlameEmperor... He was even more troublesome. Ye Cang decided to think of a way to take him down...

Ye Cang found some cover, loaded his ballista, then commanded Little Blue Feather to use Divebomb at FlameEmperor. Little Blue Feather dived down with a spiral. FlameEmperor quickly activated an jumping skill and avoided the dive but the people behind him weren’t so lucky and were hit by Little Blue Feather’s Divebomb. Just as FlameEmperor jumped, Ye Cang’s finger pulled the trigger, instantly unleashing a Meteor Shot...

FlameEmperor was alarmed as he turned to look at the shooting star that was about to pierce through him. The guy on the hill was waiting for this... With a cold laugh, he left behind an afterimage and once again dodged. While at it, he killed a few of Mad War’s core members while he continued to pursue Lin Le.

Ye Cang shook his head and smiled bitterly. Truly very strong. He could even dodge that. Even after all that, he was still saving such a fast movement skill. Putting away his ballista, Ye Cang recalled Little Blue Feather. The people who had circled around were about to arrive, so he had to at least leave them a nice surprise. Pulling out his magic sword, he activated Hunter Imprint Conceal and began to move towards Fireworks and his group while

stealthed. Standing on the hillside, he could see the ascending people. Suddenly, he became visible and pointed his finger. Fireworks was startled and quickly leapt onto one of the rocks by the road. As for the swordsmen that he had brought, they were blasted off the hill and annihilated by Ye Cang's Assenroche's finger.

Ye Cang sidestepped an arrow and began to shoot back with his guns. He shot while leaping backwards and while diving to the side, evading everything. His firing never stopped though. This made the accuracy seeking Fireworks too sad for words. He couldn't keep up with the fire-rate so could only evade and shoot an arrow back from time to time. Ye Cang was unexpectedly fearlessly shooting while advancing. In the time between arrows, he shadow stepped to Fireworks' back. His hand was already ready to pull out his shadow pike. With a pike covered in shadow frost, he struck at Fireworks' heart from behind. Multiple Straight Thrusts, Shadow Strike - Multiple Straight Thrusts! Fireworks was insta-killed! Walking up to the unwilling Fireworks, he pet his head and imparted some heartfelt teachings, "Next time remember not to walk on the path. Also... your shooting could be improved, it's too slow. You can thank me..."

"You..." Fireworks felt his chest tightened as he disintegrated into white light.

Ye Cang arrived at the overhanging cliff, jumped off, and grabbed onto Little Blue Feather's claw. He then began to glide while shooting with his right hand, looking very awesome. ThornyRose, who was assisting Lin Le, saw the gliding Ye Cang. That bastard's boasting is getting better and better.

When he arrived above the frontlines, he let go and fell. In midair, a green light flashed, then a wave of flower fragrance brushed past Zhang ZhengXiong and the others. Their health began to continuously heal. Then a watery light flashed, and a Healing Stream was cast on Zhang ZhengXiong. Seeing him once

again restore over half his health and that it was still healing, everyone besieging Zhang ZhengXiong just wanted to die. He was already hard enough.

“I’ll go help Lele. A’Xiong, Lil’Dino, Fang Ci, Wang, you guys help guard here...” Ye Cang said, then began to run in Lin Le’s direction.

“Don’t worry bro! With me here, there’s nothing they can do...” Zhang ZhengXiong sneered and looked at ColdFront and them contemptuously, giving rise to a demonic aura.

CloudDragon raised his brows. FlameEmperor is mine! “VastSea, take over!”

Saying that CloudDragon also followed. LordAsked began to swear, “It will never be you brats’ turn to !@#!!\$!! Smiley, watch this area for me!”

“Ok bro! Cloud...” Ji Xiao didn’t even get to finish speaking before LordAsked shouted ruthlessly, “F\*\*k! This time I’m not waiting for your bullsh\*t! Watch this area for this boss! If you embarrass this boss again, watch me tear you apart!”

LordAsked brought a few elites to break out of the encirclement, then immediately rushed away.

BlackForestMoon and BrilliantZhuge noticed something was wrong so sent some reinforcement to FlameEmperor from the back.

Lin Le looked at the pursuing FlameEmperor and co. They all looked really strong, but he shrugged and shouted, “Everyone who chases me is a stupid head!!”

FlameEmperor looked at incoming tens of bottles. “Disperse!”

Immediately Lin Le had thrown out molotovs to interfere with his pursuers’ path. Many people were hit by the oil and started burning. It managed to separate the pursuers who didn’t manage to cross.

“Go around!” FlameEmperor said, but ThornyRose, who had come to help, blocked the way. “Lele, leave this to us! You and Little Ren, don’t stop!”

“Don’t overestimate yourselves! HeavensDomain, kill them! You guys over there continue chasing...” FlameEmperor snorted, then raised his sword and charged. FullFlame followed.

ThornyRose’s heart sank. FlameEmperor, China’s strongest active athlete. Seemingly perfect. If one had to choose who was closest to the Golden Generation, then it could only be FlameEmperor, ChildOfLight and those people. With a tender shout, she activated her weapons’ ability. Various sword slashes shot forth. FlameEmperor laughed disdainfully, easily avoiding them. He looked as relaxed as if he was taking a walk. His hilt smashed into her chest and then a blade stabbed at her throat. FrozenBlood instantly appeared, blocking this attack. FlameEmperor smiled. His hand whipped forwards. Though it appeared slow, but it instantly struck FrozenBlood’s jaw, stunning her. With a spin, he knocked her flying with a Rising Dragon Kick, then taking advantage of the motion, he avoided ThornyRose’s shield slam and slashed at her shoulder followed by a punch at the back of her head. He slowly reached down and pulled her up by her hair. He readied his sword and sneered, “Trash will be trash. Second rate will always be second rate. Your struggle is futile. Rose, don’t you see?”

FlameEmperor looked at ThornyRose. Despite being stunned, but her burning fighting spirit had not extinguished in the slightest. “Obstinate, die...”

There was a cold flash. FlameEmperor raised his brows and held his sword up to block the suddenly arriving pike. Ye Cang grasped the pike and jumped, saving ThornyRose. His hair billowed in the wind, and he faintly smiled, “Hello, your opponent is me. FlameEmperor, is it...?”

“Head of the Three Brothers... So FireWorks is dead?”

FlameEmperor narrowed his eyes. He didn't bother paying attention to ThornyRose going to help FrozenBlood take on FullFlame. "Full, I'll leave those two to you, don't disappoint me..."

"You're looking down on me too much. For better or worse, I'm still your elder cousin." FullFlame smiled as he seemingly easily took on ThornyRose and FrozenBlood.

ThornyRose recalled the disgrace from earlier and felt extremely sullen. She gnashed her teeth. FrozenBlood was also not in the mood to smile. The two of them concentrated their attention completely on taking on FullFlame.

Ye Cang saw the struggle in ThornyRose's eyes and his heart trembled. As long as you continue to fight, there will come a day when your dream will be fulfilled. I don't know when, but at least right now, this bastard, even if I have to die to do it, he better not think of leaving. However... It's been a long time since I've felt this excited. He narrowed his eyes, and tightened his grip on his pike, pointing it at FlameEmperor...

The two of them faced off. FlameEmperor's lips curled into a smile. Let me see your abilities... you so called brother hero.



# Chapter 447: Flame Emperor

---

Ye Cang gripped his pike which had begun to burn, bringing up the temperature! Flame Lotus activated!

Flame Emperor stood sideways with his sword in front of him. He mocked Ye Cang with his easy going attitude.

Streaks of shooting stars flashed by. Ye Cang had struck with a Straight Thrust. Confronted with a rapid thrust, Flame Emperor knocked it aside with his blade. Flames exploded out in the shape of a lotus, so he quickly raised his hand to protect his face. After knocking the flames away, he made a fist and smashed towards the back of Ye Cang's head. Ye Cang quickly shadow stepped to his back. Multiple Straight Thrusts! Three flame lotuses bloomed but a black flash cut through the three flowers.

“Clang clang clang!” Flame Emperor easily and accurately knocked all the fast as light thrusts away! The flame lotuses were also reduced to withered flame fragments by his sword dance.

Through the shredded flame fragments, Ye Cang saw Flame Emperor's easy going attitude. So this was China's number one gamer? As expected... he really deserved that title. Multiple Straight Thrust comboed with Flame Lotus actually didn't do any significant damage. It had been completely blocked! Shadow Strike - Multiple Straight Thrusts!

The moment the shadows appeared, without even turning around, Flame Emperor pressed his hands on the shadow pikes and performed a spinning jump attack, dispersing them. Taking advantage of his momentum, he instantly launched a Full Moon Counter at Ye Cang. Ye Cang quickly deflected it, dispersing the force but his heart still sank. Something felt off about that attack. It was seemingly slow yet actually fast, throwing off his intuition. Truly too powerful. Drawing back his pike, he activated a Dashing Straight Thrust! Striking directly at his throat! Shadow Frost

Strike!

FlameEmperor slightly leaned and confidently dodged the attack. The blossoming ice flower was simply blocked by his hand and sword. Ye Cang's moment was also obstructed by this move! FlameEmperor shook the ice off his frozen hand, flinging off the countless ice fragments, and smiled, "A bit numb..."

Saying that, he held his sword in one hand and struck violently towards Ye Cang. One sword met one pike. Ye Cang didn't dare relax, because he knew that a single slip was all it would take to die to that sword. This FlameEmperor was a freak! What the heck! His reaction speed wasn't any better than CloudDragon! But... only after fighting him would one know that, this red-head was too strong! That sort of absolute suppression, even though it had no effect on Ye Cang, but that invulnerable intuition was truly...

With a shout, he activated Mirror Image, leaving behind a water clone. While stealthed, he launched a surprise attack from the side. The moment he stepped out of stealth, he felt a dangerous tingle on his neck. He pulled back like a spring and a cold glint flashed past his nose. A few of his white hairs were cut. Looking at the sword that had cut them, he saw it once again turn back. Holding a pike in one hand and a tonfa in the other, Ye Cang activated counter! FlameEmperor raised his brows, surprised. Good guy, his reaction is better than mine! Being successfully countered by Ye Cang, he leaned back. A shadow spear passed by and he also felt it brush past the tip of his nose. A few strands of hair that had been cut by the sharp point fell. This guy isn't simple... He instantly stood back upright while also launching a Rising Dragon Kick! Ye Cang protected his jaw with his hand but was still kicked away a short distance.

The two of them simultaneously flipped back. While backflipping, Ye Cang stabbed out with his pike which FlameEmperor spun his body and caught with his hand. Suddenly, with a yank, he pulled the unbalanced and airborne Ye Cang over.

He swung his sword with one hand, striking forth with three slashes. Ye Cang twisted his wrist and his body twisted like a dancer's, positioning the pike above his head.

Clang! Clang! Clang!

The sound of three sharp strikes rang out.

ThornyRose watched the two's hair-raising exchange. Although Ye Cang was at a disadvantage, but he still had the energy to counter... While she herself had not even been able to retaliate. Perhaps, against a once in a century genius like FlameEmperor, herself and FrozenBlood would never enter his eyes. However! One day, she would win against him! Even if, only just once!

FrozenBlood was knocked back by one of FullFlame's attacks. She smiled gently, "Rose, we might look like geniuses to normal people but compared to true geniuses, we're only normal people. Although we can study, but we're only at the level of substitutes when compared to those geniuses. However, after seeing you defeated time after time and standing back up time after time, finally, barely defeating Qin ZhongYue, I discovered something; actually, I've always known since we were young but I only confirmed it at that time; you're really a complete idiot..."

"Get lost!" ThornyRose shouted unhappily. Gripping her longsword tightly, she looked at the frivolous FullFlame, and took a deep breath, "Icy, thanks..."

FrozenBlood froze for a second, before turning away and whispering, "So evil..."

This woman... ThornyRose's hand trembled as she suddenly blocked FullFlame's chop. Then her sword chopped forth as she once again, together with FrozenBlood, countered with all their strength.

CloudDragon hurried over and saw Ye Cang and FlameEmperor's exchange. Good guy! That hero bastard really has a distinctive

fighting style.

After Ye Cang blocked the three slashes, he pulled his pike out of FlameEmperor's hand. As he was thinking about attacking, he saw the sword hilt coming at him again. I know what's wrong now. This guy doesn't seem to follow the rules of physics. Smiling bitterly, he directly detonated his water clone. Water fiercely struck, separating the two of them. Ye Cang was knocked by, doing his best to maintain his balance in midair. His pike stabbed into the ground, as if pole-vaulting and he once again flipped to the ground. Pulling back his pike, he aimed the tip at FlameEmperor, then turned and saw the incoming CloudDragon. "Go! I'll give you a boost..."

CloudDragon was originally intending to engage but hearing these words, he felt a bit disgusted.

FlameEmperor protected his body, the moment, the explosion happened, but was still launched back over 10 meters. Landing with a flip, he steadied himself by stabbing his sword half a meter into the ground. Brother Hero, interesting... Super fast reaction speed, clean style, fiery nature. Against him, even if I win, I would take some damage. He looked dull but is actually a leopard. He looked at the two and stretched his neck. He pointed his two-handed sword at the two and said in a belittling tone, "Come together. One is not enough for me to enjoy myself..."

CloudDragon frowned. Although he was discontent but the man in front of him was qualified to say that. Ye Cang faintly smiled, "This is pointless. SpyingBlade, you're here!!"

The moment FlameEmperor split his attention, Ye Cang once again struck with a Dashing Straight Thrust.

FlameEmperor smiled. This guy.. He deflected the pike with his sword hilt and followed up with a Heavy Strike. His body leaned sideways while performing the heavy strike, dodging CloudDragon's Wyvern Kick. At the same time, he suppressed Ye

Cang. Facing the two of them, FlameEmperor became excited. It had been a long time since he'd been so happy. Qi strikes, pike shadows and sword slashes; the three of them seemed to interweave with each other. CloudDragon and Ye Cang worked together flawlessly, while FlameEmperor's defence and counter-attacks were flawless. Both sides were evenly matched, locked in a desperate battle.

LordAsked saw the three of them fighting, and trembled all over. "F\*\*k, I'm late. If I go now it will be unfair! This boss still can't afford to lose to that person! Hah, seems like I can only join that Crazy Lele..."

LordAsked shrugged and charged towards FullFlame while cursing. His shield smashed all three of them away, then he turned and continuously pushed FullFlame back with his sword. Then, a flying kick smashed FullFlame into a wall. LordAsked spat to the side contemptuously, "I'll take my anger out on you. F\*\*k, how can a grown man bully two women. Grow up..."

LordAsked didn't continue attacking. Instead he cursed some more as he walked away.

ThornyRose and FrozenBlood watched LordAsked's back, somewhat speechless. The Tyrant - LordAsked, his individual strength was definitely no lower than CloudDragon's. Looking at how FullFlame glared at his back but was unable to do anything, the two women sighed. So this was the gap between them...

# Chapter 448: Victory

---

Lin Le slid to a stop. Carrying his enormous sword, he strode forwards leading a team of swordsmen as well as Mad War's second tank - MadShield, HateToTheBone and BlackIce, who had to listen to his orders for the greater good.

Greeting them were tens of fighters. MadShield didn't even have time to intercept them before Lin Le unleashed his three-strike sword drawing arts. His enormous blade created three cold flashes as it instantly beheaded nearby besieging enemies. He didn't even slow down, killing his way forwards. Little Ren would leap to those who hadn't die and send them off with his dual blades. BlackIce sighed, she breathed heavily but still had to follow and bombard the stronghold. She turned and cast an area of effect ice spell. Just as the ice passed, Lin Le followed up with a few molotovs.

BlackIce looked at Lin Le. This guy might not be so stupid. He even knew these kiting and mobbing tactics. However she saw it, it wasn't something a random primary school kid could do. What she didn't know was that, he never thought about tactics. He just wanted to delay for a bit and wait for Ye Cang to arrive.

As for Ye Cang's side, they were currently in a deadlock, completely unable to escape. The three of them only got braver the longer the fight went for. Ye Cang's two eyes focused and he let slip a malevolent smile; his pike dancing like a dragon. CloudDragon raised his brows at this. This guy, this is the first time I've seen him show such battle lust. The corner of his lips also curled into a smile. As expected of a good rival! And a good teammate! Taking advantage of the gap Ye Cang created, he struck out with an Ax Kick.

FlameEmperor raised his shoulder and used it to guard against the Ax Kick receiving significant damage. The moment he was stunned by the skill, he activated his debuff removing skill. His two-handed sword stabbed into CloudDragon's shoulder. Ye

Cang's pike decisively stabbed through CloudDragon's other shoulder and into FlameEmperor's chest. Meanwhile, FlameEmperor stepped forwards and thrust his two-handed sword, stabbing through both of them. CloudDragon spat out blood, one hand grabbing FlameEmperor's sword arm, the other hand smashing towards his chest which was pierced by the pike.

ThornyRose saw the three of them had fought until they were this desperate, yet still didn't let relax in the slightest. They were all still striving to take out the enemy. Meanwhile, on her own side, she was not able to clinch victory after such a long time. FullFlame's strength should be at a Heavenly King's level. It was unlikely that they would be able to kill him quickly.

SpyingBlade was actually hiding the entire time, controlling his breath the entire time. Until now! He suddenly appeared behind FlameEmperor.

FlameEmperor raised his brows. Danger! His shoulder struck at CloudDragon, who was pierced by both the pike and his two-handed sword and smashed him in the jaw. The moment CloudDragon relaxed his grip, he pulled his sword back and with a reverse grip, he stabbed it behind him from under his arm. The angle was perfectly aimed at the attacking SpyingBlade's chin.

SpyingBlade twisted his body, giving up on attacking. Landing on the ground, he began to combo with his weapon. FlameEmperor kicked away CloudDragon and Ye Cang who was behind him. Using the reverse force, Ye Cang pulled out his pike and backed up a few meters. Tossing his pike into his shadow, his right hand grabbed Giant Owle No.2's right hand pistol and his left hand remained ready on his tonfa in case FlameEmperor decided to attack him.

While falling back, CloudDragon took out and ate a soldier food. After stabilizing himself, he charged in once again.

SpyingBlade moved like a ghost. After exchanging a few moves

with FlameEmperor, he could feel some sort of strange pressure, putting him at a disadvantage. CloudDragon's assistance helped to reduce the pressure. Meanwhile Ye Cang furrowed his brows. I can't increase the distance! If he attacks me, I'll be alone! Putting away his gun, he once again drew his pike and joined the three man melee with a Dashing Straight Thrust. Being attacked by three people, FlameEmperor slowly lost the wind in his sails but still had the room to counter attack. The three of them didn't dare to relax one bit.

ThornyRose watched this scene and could only force a smile. FlameEmperor...

As for FrozenBlood, she dodged FullFlame's triple strike and spat out the words, "Three heroes vs Lu Bu..."

"....." ThornyRose blushed with shame, it really was a fitting description though.

"You should look after yourself before talking about someone else..." FullFlame swung his two blades, becoming three whirlwind like strikes. ThornyRose quickly protected FrozenBlood, raising her shield to block the gusts of cutting wind. FrozenBlood took this chance to consume a Soldier Food, explosively increasing her health.

FullFlame frowned. Not good, they have a powerful health potion! He began to attack even more fiercely.

ThornyRose relaxed. Now that he was becoming anxious, it was their turn to fight calmly and steadily! She faintly squinted her almond-shaped eyes, looking for an opportunity to launch a fatal attack...

Lin Le saw that only HeavensDomain and some strangers were behind him, as well as some normal soldiers. Changing a few pieces of equipment, he activated his lifesteal aura, and stopped advancing. When he turned around and charged, HeavensDomain and Instant couldn't help but freeze up. BlackIce also couldn't



react. Without saying a word! A counterattack! You could have at least warned us!

“Mad Devil Le, this time I will get you back for that previous disgrace...” HeavensDomain held his longsword firmly.

BlackIce looked questioningly. Oh right, HeavensDomain was insta-killed by the primary schooler back during the cemetery battle.

Lin Le directly killed his way into the crowd and began a massacre. The tigerkin Little Ren also fearlessly followed him, his two blades reaping lives like wheat. His speed and jumping power made it hard for people to target him.

Instant entered stealth, hiding himself. The tigerkin Little Ren opened his eyes wide. He leaped back a large distance and also entered stealth.

The moment Instant approached Lin Le, he suddenly appeared and went for the killing blow. Instant attempted to block with his daggers but with the large disparity in strength, Little Ren’s left saber directly slashed at his throat. Then a powerful knee strike arrived, knocking him flying into the air. In a single leap, Little Ren arrived and slashed numerous times. Instant... watched his health fall and heard the hiss of a tiger by his ear. This tiger was clearly the bane of assassins...

Meanwhile, HeavensDomain never would have thought that he would once again get killed by Lin Le in a single strike. Although BlackIce’s magic had trapped him but seeing Lin Le not put him in his eyes, not even turning back to look once to make fun of him, it was as if Lin Le had just killed a bandit. This was the worst humiliation he had ever suffered since he was born. He spontaneously looked at the carnage Lin Le left behind. Mad Devil Le! I’ll definitely make you remember me!! Then turned into white light and disappeared.

LordAsked saw that Lin Le’s side had finished their battle and

began to shiver. He directly walked up to a Flame Dragon Union swordsman. “No one come!”

Stunning him with his shield, his heavy longsword directly cut him in half. Then raised his head and roared, “\*\*\*\*! Do I only get to idle around!? Impossible!! Dammit!”

LordAsked looked at BlackIce and Lin Le, in a terrible mood. “You guys continue! I guess I’ll go back and f\*\*k up FlameEmperor and them!!!”

The moment LordAsked arrived and saw FlameEmperor slowly losing the 1 vs 3 battle, “The third legion led by HappyAndCheerful and BlackIce have successfully slain Aluna, ending the battle. The Planetary Empire Wins!!”

FlameEmperor glanced at the three of them. His lips curled into a smile and he waved, “See you next time. Hopefully you can still make things fun for me...”

“Definitely...” Ye Cang’s pike stabbed into the ground and he waved back.

“Humph...” CloudDragon snorted, waiting for a chance to settle the score. Though this battle was a victory, but he was not happy at all.

“Dammit. F\*\*k! F\*\*K!!” LordAsked began to flip out.

Ye Cang looked at LordAsked speechlessly. ThornyRose shrugged. “He’s just like that. Win or lose, crushing defeat or decisive victory, he can accept it all. The only thing he can’t accept is being useless...”

# Chapter 449: Goddess Tea and Cake

---

Ye Cang shrugged. He looked at the place FlameEmperor had disappeared from, his eyebrows erect. First?

After calculating the battle results, Ye Cang's little party as well as CloudDragon, BlackIce, and the others managed to get the most outstanding achievements. The top ten spots received 30% experience, equipment between DarkGold and Distinguished. Achieving first place, CloudDragon got a dark gold ring. Second was LordAsked. Third was Ye Cang, who had skipped the first 2 hours of the war. Each of them obtained a gold ranked equipment, however Ye Cang directly threw his reward into the cart and stuck a price on it.

Over at NalanPureSoul's battlefield, they had suffered a defeat. MistyVeil won a dangerous victory.

Ye Cang looked at his own achievement points. It was enough to make him a 100-man commander. The army gave him a reward and medal for his promotion. He sighed, vowing to work harder. Good or bad, he was an earl that was also a puny 100-man commander...

On the battlefield, Ye Cang and the other's deeds became a hot topic. Zhang ZhengXiong ferocious roar and his charge that even knocked FlameEmperor flying. Standing at the front to take all the heat. Super many life-saving skills and healing abilities. Completely unkillable, and can protect the people around him. He was like an unmoving king, standing there an intimidating everyone. Lin Le leading the troops, killing HeavensDomain, Instant, and also taking out the stronghold. Even the tigerkin Little Ren became famous for that arial combo against Instant.

Ye Cang and FlameEmperor's short duel was also brought up endlessly.

Ye Cang sat at Allie's house, drinking tea and pondering over his

battle with FlameEmperor. As long as he could adapt to that physic-defying tempo, it wouldn't be hard to kill him... He began to contemplate it.

Allie sat beside him, smiling without a word. After a while, Ye Cang suddenly thought of something. "I almost forgot. Allie, what do you think about me opening a restaurant..."

The hot tea Allie had just sipped was spat all over Ye Cang's face as she burst into a coughing fit. Then with a strange expression, she said, "Cough cough... cough cough, you... should give up. However, I plan to open a tea house to supplement the family's expenses, and to find something to do. Father is always out doing administrative things. He only comes home for a few days at the end of each year."

Ye Cang took a handkerchief and wiped his face, appearing extremely calm. Such a treacherous woman. She clearly wants to open her own, yet is afraid that my cooking skills will threaten her business. Humph humph, I've already seen through your plan.

"Oh... is that right? Where?"

"I haven't decided yet..." Allie smiled.

Ye Cang carefully thought for a moment. He himself often had to go out to fight monsters, level, and loot equipment, so he couldn't look after the store. Then why not let Allie do it? That way, when he's free, he could make an appearance. He recalled a coffee shop he had seen at the night market before. He, A'Xiong, and Lele had gone there. They had beauties to keep you company and play with you, and their business was very popular. It often required reservations! Yes! That's it!

Ye Cang explained the maid themed coffee shop to Allie. Allie looked at him strangely, "It sounds really weird. You sure it's ok?"

"It'll definitely work!" Ye Cang said confidently.

"Alright then. The store's location..." Before Allie could finish

speaking, Ye Cang smiled and interrupted, “How about in the goddess association. Two birds with one stone...”

Saying that, Ye Cang began to take care of it. He had Rica hire many cuties, started some simple training and then opened for business. Clothing-wise, he selected a pure but short skirt type. As the store manager, Allie was shocked by the scene of a line forming even though they just opened for business. She was even more dumbfounded by the customer’s generosity. Simply letting a cute girl chat and play some games could earn her an extra 10-30 silver. Her pastries that originally only costed a silver, which she planned to sell for three silver, Ye Cang directly packaged them into a 30 silver set meal and 15 silver a-la-carte. Some of the more expensive deserts even sold for up to two gold.

Ye Cang saw that the things Allie made also gave attribute bonuses and they weren’t low either. Obviously, he had to increase the price. This was also Little Ye Tian’s idea. Not even one day later and White Stone City’s goddess association branch also opened the same tea house. The store was called Goddess tea and cake. The moment it appeared, it was instantly a player favorite. However, the expensive price and the fact that it was only open to goddess association members had many players complaining.

Little Ye Tian quickly pushed out a membership card system and this membership card wasn’t only for the restaurant. It would also give preferential treatment in the association. Even ThornyRose coveted the two store’s popularity. This was no different than a maid cafe! She looked at the portrait of the three goddesses hanging in the store and thought of the schedule in the planner. The three goddesses’s next appearance would be at Mallows’ shrine’s public square. The ticket prices had already been announced. They were seriously using them like idols; it was basically a concert... More importantly, the three goddesses really liked it! ThornyRose sighed. Those three ‘korean’ idols who were being sold by Ye Cang yet even helped him count the money...

LordAsked looked at the maid cafe inside the goddess association and couldn't help smiling. He looked at it contemptuously and said, "Such a scam..."

Yet out of the corner of his eyes, he caught Ji Xiao playing extremely happily with a cat-eared, short skirted, elf cutie. He immediately began to tremble, "That bastard..."

White Stone City.

"That guy is unexpectedly skillful at making money..." CloudDragon looked at the maid cafe like tea house and smiled.

BlackIce took a look inside, then rolled her eyes because she saw VastSea and YellowSprings inside joking around with a blond bunny girl. She facepalmed, feeling somewhat ashamed for them. She heard some employees gossip, "It's those two. Two big men only requesting one girl. Not only are they miserly, one is even making boring sex jokes. Hah! Luckily little bunny is a native so she's more innocent."

"Don't say it. This is the customer's request, we should just act as requested. President pays us very well. I make more here in two hours than I do in an entire day at a maid cafe. And that's when the business is good too."

"True. Someone's requesting you, hurry over."

BlackIce decisively ignored them and rushed out of the tea house. CloudDragon saw her strange expression and asked, "What happened?"

"Nothing..." BlackIce shook her head.

The scene returns to Black Rock City. With his core member discount, OldWangFromNextDoor was playing joyfully. He felt like he was in heaven.

"Brother Wang, can he really find a girlfriend?" Fang Ci looked at Wang's wretched appearance as he played games with a native waitress, and muttered.

FrozenCloud shook her head fiercely, “Impossible. Completely impossible... No one would like someone who...”

Before she could finish speaking, the two of them saw Ye Cang’s group of 3 also playing games; especially Ye Cang who was playing seriously. He had an extremely earnest expression, without any improper thoughts. Zhang ZhengXiong’s his desperation was showing through, appearing completely different than on the battlefield. As for Lin Le, he was naively and innocently lifting skirts.

“President, Vice-presidents, pervert~~” The cuties screamed

SpyingBlade and the others broke out in cold sweat as they watched the three. FrozenCloud forced a smile and changed the topic, “Pretend that I didn’t say anything...”

Saying that, FrozenCloud felt a bit displeased as she watched Zhang ZhengXiong. Humph, damn pervert.

# Chapter 450: Continue Exploring

---

For the next few days, Ye Cang brought his party to level in the Black Peaks mountain range. Along the way, he met many players who would either bow or salute while greeting him, “Greetings President!”

Ye Cang waved his hand and their group advanced towards Anya’s Ghost Peak. He had employed the local hunters in the northern guardpost to be in charge of safety for the workers there. Regarding Anya’s recovery, many hunters were extremely thankful, because after Anya fully recovers, they would be able to go there and gain enlightenment on the hunt...

Ye Cang stopped at the base of Ghost Peak, “Last time, we stopped exploring here. There are very few players who can make it this far, and those who could would have run out of supplies by now so wouldn’t want to come. While Anya’s shrine and the stop-over villages are still under construction, let’s go check out the south-western mountains... “

“Father’s idea is not bad. The Black Peaks mountain range is very large. The players and ourselves together have at most explored 30%! It could be said that a majority of it is still unknown. Of the remaining 70+%, one part lies past Ghost Peak, with another two parts lying east of Jam’s shrine and north of Mallow’s shrine. All three of these directions still lead to the unknown. The levels of the creatures and demon beasts there are nearly doubled, so most players are still at the three shrines...” Little Ye Tian took out a pen and connected the three points, marking the safe area. She then marked the few guard posts in the Black Peaks, which were practically all within this area. There were only two guard posts situated deep within the mountain range. One of them was at the south-west of Ghost Peak and the other, far north past Mallow’s shrine. The two of them were called guard posts, but they were really just hunting villages conscripted by the Planetary Empire,



becoming guard posts in name only. “The region around the three shrines is where a majority of player activity is concentrated... Past that, the demon beast’s strength becomes too much for ordinary players...”

“Sister Rose and the others went towards Jam’s shrine.” FrozenCloud pointed to the area east of Jam’s shrine.

“It must be related to their quest...” SpyingBlade smiled.

“In these few days, I want to break through to level 20!” Ye Cang looked at his experience bar which was 50% away from level 20. At level 20, he would be able to return to the association and learn a second set of skills.

“True, let’s first help boss obtain his second set of skills and talents, then go back to Black Rock City’s association. Hehe...” OldWangFromNextDoor began to laugh like a creep. Everyone glanced at him sympathetically, then sighed. They directly circled around Ghost Peak into the depths of the mountain range, leaving behind the somewhat embarrassed Wang.

“I’ll definitely get a girlfriend this year!” OldWangFromNextDoor shouted in humiliation at everyone’s back.

“Who wants to bet?” Ye Cang said without even looking back at the others, as he scouted a path for them.

“2 million federal dollars on him not getting one this year...” FrozenCloud directly laid down her bet.

“I’ll also bet 2 million... on him not getting one.” Wu Na said, somewhat distressed over her wages.

“I’ll bet, I’ll bet. I bet that Wang can do it! I’ll bet, I’ll bet, umm, 3 million federal dollars...” Lin Le went all in with his allowance money.

Ye Cang and Zhang ZhengXiong raised their brows in surprise. “We’re with Lele! 3 million!”

“I’ll bet 1 million federal dollars, betting against...” Fang Ci took out his first month’s wages and bonus.

SpyingBlade smiled with his arms crossed, “3 million, also against.”

Wang saw from the back that none of them had paid him any attention and were each making their bets. He sighed heavily. Boss is really too cruel.

Then he caught up, “I’ll bet 1 million that I can!”

“You’ve got guts! A true man!” Zhang ZhengXiong approved of Wang for the first time.

“Do you have a target yet?” Wu Na teased.

“Little Jade!” Old Wang said seriously. Everyone froze, then all turned around.

“Yesterday, My chaotic youth romantic comedy got shafted...”

“Oh I heard about that. Sisters season 2 has entered its preparatory stage.”

“The earlier they start on Sisters 2, the better. Lele can see A’Jiao and the others again.”

“It’s said that Sister 2 will have a new character, someone called Lily...”

“You mean that man who loves A’Xiang!? Apparently he went to get plastic surgery somewhere. So it turns out that that was foreshadowing...”

“Can we please not talk about that drama.”

“Ignorant woman...”

Wang watched everyone chat about the drama as they walked. Hellooo, we are teammates, right? Can’t you give me some encouragement...

While chatting, they heard a roar. Countless trees were snapped,

revealing a dark brown hide and a single eye. A six meter tall, ape-like creature appeared. From the fact that it could completely sweep aside the trees, it must have been a strength type.

Ye Cang identified it.

One Eyed Ogre (Elite - Abyss): Ogre is a very generic term. This one should be classified as a type of rock ogre. They taste good raw and both their attack and defence are extremely strong, giving them extremely destructive power! According to the legends, they are offspring of the cyclops and female ape type creatures. Extremely low intelligence.

Ye Cang began shooting with his guns. Looking at the resulting damage, he saw that his damage was reduced by at least 50%! “Everyone be careful. This guy’s defence and strength are both very high, but its intelligence is low!”

Zhang ZhengXiong charged up, sidestepping the rapidly approaching fist and crashed into its crotch. A howl of pain immediately followed his Holy Judgement.

Wang gasped. Being hit like that, in a spot like that, just looking at it hurt...

SpyingBlade slashed, and looked at the resulting blade scar that showed no damage to the flesh. Sure enough, it’s defensive power came from its rock like skin! He launched a combo, focusing all his attacks on the blade scar, instantly causing a spurt of blood to shoot out.

Ye Cang watched as everyone besieged it and pulled out his ballista. Against guys like this, this type of weapon was best. Aiming at it, he began to charge up a Meteor Shot. Summoning his Shadow Weapon - Heavy Crossbow, the queen and king bee bolts both locked onto it, then the two bolts pierced through it, killing the ogre.

“This thing is just an elite? It feels like fighting a miniboss.” Wu

Na said.

“Indeed. However, that was mainly because of its strength and defence. Since a creature like this has appeared, it means that somewhere in this area should be their lair...” SpyingBlade analyzed.

“If there’s a lair, then there’s a boss...” Little Ye Tian said calmly. SpyingBlade slowly nodded. At least based on his experience, things such as these rarely broke this pattern.

“If there’s a lair, then there’s treasure. Hurry, hurry. Onwards, onwards... Explore, explore...” Ye Cang’s two eyes began to redden and he could feel an itch in his hand.

SpyingBlade saw that he was full of fighting spirit and decided that next time he found a chest, he would directly tell Lele. That guy’s boss and chest success rate was still 0% up ‘til now. Just how unlucky does one have to be to accomplish that. And he wasn’t even including the chest type things that he found when exploring individually. Just thinking of that made SpyingBlade laugh bitterly...

# Chapter 451: Aboriginals

---

Everyone combed through the mountain. They went all the way to the top then looked down. A very wide stone forest caught Ye Cang's attention. He signalled Little Blue Feather to fly around it once. Little Ye Tian began to rapidly process this area into a scaled copy on her map. "Father, besides the stone forest; the lake, the swamp, and the pit, are also worth exploring... This is a basin among the mountains, a very important buffer, in other words, it's exploration value is high..."

"Little Blue Feather saw some of the previous creatures at the stone forest..." Ye Cang heard the falcon cry and said excitedly, as if he were looking at treasure chests and bosses beckoning to him. He slowly pushed aside his wolf-head hood and pulled out his longsword. Taking a step forwards, he pointed to the stone forest and shouted, "Our target! Set off!"

"Set off!!" Lin Le echoed.

FrozenCloud and Wu Na facepalmed. Hello, everyone here is on our side, there's no need to show off.

Creatures like demon rock bears were unable to pose any threat to them. They fell quickly to Ye Cang's ballista and then were flayed for materials. Not a single herb or interesting vegetation could escape Ye Cang's hands. What made SpyingBlade, FrozenCloud, and the others rejoice was the fact that these things were to be planted and grown. However, as for what they would become after they grow, no one knew.

Having already finished her virtual map from the mountain top, Little Ye Tian led everyone to the rock forest. She had marked their exploration route, from the rock forest, to the lake, then the swamp and finally the sinkhole like cave.

Arriving before the rock forest, everyone felt that looking at it from the mountain top and from up close were two completely

different experiences. Every rock pillar was at least 30 meters tall, while the tallest towered over 100 meters. They pierced out of the earth like spears; slanted, vertical and even horizontal.

Everyone walked into the rock forest. As they went, they discovered some violent movements from deeper inside, so they quickly drew their weapons and increased their pace. The closer they got to the sound, the more intense the quakes became.

Ye Cang was in the lead and was the first to see a group of what appeared to be aboriginals; black skinned humans. They worked with a 20 meter tall, enormous stone giant to resist the dozen or so, one eyed ogres. Among the ogres, there was one which was only a tad smaller than the stone giant.

“Bro, which side do we help?” Zhang ZhengXiong asked while lowering his stance and holding his heavy axe, ready to charge.

“Isn’t it obvious? It’s definitely the human side!” FrozenCloud said sharply.

“Not necessarily. Thinking from different point of views is important in games. If we help the one eyed ogres and earn their approval, we have a chance to lead the story in a completely different direction. Even if we succeed in helping the aboriginals and stone elemental, we might not get a reward. You can’t use race to differentiate between good and evil...” Little Ye Tian analyzed seriously.

“There’s another possibility...” Lin Le acted like a wise man, and stared off at the sky.

“Which is?” Wang asked.

“Idiot, it’s killing both sides...” Lin Le rolled his eyes.

“True, there is that choice.” Little Ye Tian nodded, but there probably wasn’t anyone who would make that choice. Normally, helping the aboriginals and getting a reward would be better than helping the one eyed ogres, which was was better than eliminating

both sides. The difficulty was also in that order. Finally, another option was to take advantage of the time when both sides have suffered.

“Make a decision, team leader.” SpyingBlade appeared indifferent.

Ye Cang looked up and thought for not even a second, then said calmly, “Precisely speaking, there is still one more option, which is to stop both sides, but it doesn’t fit this situation... Let’s help the aboriginals. Those creature’s aren’t intelligent enough, so will be difficult to communicate with or handle. Moreover, they are extremely quick to anger...”

Ye Cang took out his ballista and jumped onto a slanted pillar. Climbing to the top, he chose a sniping spot, then summoned his shadow weapon - heavy crossbow. The queen and king bee bolts were ready. He aimed at the one eyed ogre boss and began to channel power for a Meteor Shot.

Zhang ZhengXiong took the lead to launch an attack. He crashed into the back of one, knocking it onto another. Activating his axe’s ability, a crescent moon flashed, then blood shot out. After the last battle, while dissecting, Ye Cang had discovered that only the skin around their waist was thinner. Their other weakness would be their eyes.

Among the aboriginals, was a sexy woman whose face was covered in tribal paint. Her beautiful face was filled with a wild determination. She wore animal bones as jewelry and held a bone spear in her hands. Seeing Zhang ZhengXiong and the others coming to their aid, she slightly lowered her vigilance. Jumping along the stone giant’s arm, she struck at the enormous one eyed ogre boss.

The stone giant’s punch smashed into the one eyed ogre’s chest, slightly stunning it and knocking it back. Just at that time, Ye Cang pulled the trigger. A shooting star shot out, accurately hitting

the bosses only eye. The shadow weapon's bolt also hit. Hearing a violent howl, Ye Cang hung his ballista on his back and drew his two guns. Taking advantage of the heavy injury he had caused, he unleashed a violent barrage.

The aboriginal wild woman suddenly turned and looked at Ye Cang on the top of a rock pillar. Wearing a wolf-head hood, tiger-skin robe, his cheeks that were hard to see under the scorching sun and his dazzling eyes, it all worked together to give him a heroic aura, making her heart tremble.

Taking advantage of the heavy injury that Ye Cang had caused, Lin Le rapidly leapt up to its shoulder. Holding his handcart, his Handcart Home Run smashed onto its eye. He then drew his enormous sword and slashed wildly. Zhang ZhengXiong saw that the boss was about to awaken, and rushed over with Fearless Charge, triggering the ring's Super Speed. Arriving instantly, he crashed into its foot, knocking it off balance onto the ground.

"Ados!!" The aboriginal woman shouted. The stone giant's fist smashed onto its head, making the ground shake fiercely. Ye Cang steadied himself and put away his guns which had just finished overload mode. Opening his magic tome, he drew out a spell that he had recorded inside - Flame Burst. He immediately started casting alongside his own flame burst. One fireball, followed right after by another, exploded.

After the explosions, SpyingBlade charged into the smoke. His swords danced in the smoke, dispersing it with blood.

Wang wretchedly controlled his Water Elemental to cast speed reducing spells. Wu Na also used control abilities. The moment the boss had fallen, she casted her Ice Spear which stabbed right into the back of its head.

Fang Ci, besides casting curses, was mainly helping Wu Na and Wang control the smaller ones.

As for FrozenCloud, she was intercepting the one eyed ogres that



went towards Wu Na and the others. Wyvern Kick, Shoryuken, Assault Charge; as the second tank, she displayed her finest.

Just as the boss wanted to try and get up, it felt the ground becoming hot. Before it could even react, flames shot out, instantly engulfing it. The aboriginal woman looked at the raging flames before her eyes, then once again looked to Ye Cang on the rock pillar. The light of flames still flickered on his hands, as the blazing embers continued to scatter.

“Congratulations, you’ve slain a large one eyed ogre. Obtaining 3800 experience.”

## Chapter 452: Lianna

---

Ye Cang took the ballista off his back and put it back in his bag before drawing his pike and clearing up the last few one eyed ogres. With the large one dead, the pressure on the aboriginals was greatly reduced. Each of them cried out and attacked violently. The battle gradually leaned towards Ye Cang and the aboriginals.

In the end, the aboriginal woman watched as a one eyed ogre who had climbed up the stone giant was stabbed to death by a pike, nailed by its neck to the stone arm.

Ye Cang leapt off the rock pillar. He reached out, grabbed Little Blue Feather's claws and glided downwards. When the distance was about right, he shadow stepped behind the woman. He lightly patted the aboriginal woman, who was wondering where the warrior gliding on the falcon had gone.

The aboriginal woman abruptly turned around and saw Ye Cang's faint smiling expression. She saw him push aside his wolf-head hood and extended a hand to her. "Nice to meet you, I'm Black Rock City's Earl PaleSnow..."

The aboriginal woman froze for a moment. She looked at Ye Cang's fluttering white hair, with some black highlights. His faint smile made him look exceptionally handsome. Even though she didn't know what his extended hand meant, but she still grabbed it emotionally, "I... I am Familia tribe's chieftain, Lianna. Earl PaleSnow from Black Rock City, thank you for your assistance..."

"I never thought team leader would be such a lady-killer. Of course, that's only if they don't know how vile he really is and how much he loves to show off..." FrozenCloud couldn't help but feel some admiration for Ye Cang. Saving Gina Vivian from mortal danger at the cliff and now this. However, it was only when he was showing off that he forgets about looting corpses. She turned and confirmed that Lin Le had jogged over and looted the corpse...

Wu Na couldn't help nodding. She recalled when she was in danger and how Ye Cang's slender white hands, that could tear apart an alloy door, held her. Her face started to become red.

"As expected of Boss, my role model..." Wang worshipped.

"Impossible. Team Leader can be roguish with a deadpan expression, and no one would feel that he's wretched. As for you, just looking at you and I can see your wretched aura..." FrozenCloud shook her head fiercely.

Wu Na felt somewhat bad, but she still sincerely patted Wang's shoulder, "Good luck..."

"Respected warriors, thank you all for your assistance. Please come with me to the tribe and allow me to entertain you all and express my gratitude..." Lianna smiled, showing her canines.

Wang felt a wave of envy. She was a healthy styled beauty with pronounced canines. He couldn't help but hold a secret grudge.

"We just happen to be weary from our journey. I'm grateful, chieftain Lianna..." Ye Cang smiled completely naturally. This made Lianna even more sure that Ye Cang was her type. He was not pretentious, unlike many of the nobles from Black Rock City. After flashing her a smile, Ye Cang quickly packed up the corpses, and while the aboriginals were all amazed at the capacity of Lin Le's handcart, he hopped onto the stone giant and headed towards the other side of the rock forest with Lianna.

When Lianna found out that Ye Cang had already recovered Anya's shrine and was in the middle of reconstructing the residences, tourist buildings and shopping facilities; she very sincerely requested to become Anya's guard. Only now did Ye Cang's group learn that this tribe was composed of the descendants of people who had escaped from Anya's shrine and chosen to live in seclusion. Even though they wanted to revive the religion, but they didn't have the capability nor the resources. Moreover, they have always been resisting against the one eyed ogres' invasion, so

have always lived here, unable to do anything.

“Sir Early PaleSnow, you will forever be the Familia tribe’s benefactor!” Lianna bowed.

“Congratulations, your prestige with the Familia tribe has reached worshipped!” The system announced.

Everyone else also received a message about getting revered status, and were very excited. It meant they could trade for uncommon goods.

“I am the president of the goddess association, and naturally the spokesperson of the three goddesses. Goddess Mallows’ and Goddess Jam’s shrines have been successfully restored. Black Peaks will once more be under the goddesses’ care...” Ye Cang looked into the distance as he spoke. Then he reached out his hand and used his killing move, the head pet, “Now you are also a member of the association, chieftain Lianna...”

“President, I, Lianna, pledge my loyalty to the three nature goddess association!” Lianna said unswervingly.

It’s here! Team Leader’s three korean idol goddess training mode! FrozenCloud and the others all thought to themselves.

Everyone felt that his calm smile was incomparably worse than a malevolent one. Come come! Innocent lamb! Become my toy! Ahahahaha! Ahahaha! They could imagine him thinking that.

As for what Ye Cang was truly thinking. The three goddesses are so useful, but lately Mallows has been resisting my teachings. I have to give her more guidance. Hah, so old and yet she’s still throwing tantrums for being a bit less popular than Jam.

Everyone followed Lianna to the tribe consisting of simple stone huts. The people here mostly lived the lives of savage hunters. The one eyed ogres and the unsuitable terrain meant that it had been a long time since they had seen an outsider. On top of that, there was the threat of the Steel Empire, making this place even more

unimportant. Even if anyone knew about them, a group of aboriginals would just be ignored by the nobility.

Lianna announced the fact that Ye Cang was reviving Goddess Anya's shrine. She declared, with dignity, that they would be moving to Ghost Peak to help with the revival and check in. Her announcements were met with abnormally excited cheers. Little Ye Tian looked at the surroundings. There were many starving children due to the presence of a predator like the one eyed ogres. Though she didn't know much, she could still guess that they were calamity like existences and were extremely brutal. Even an ordinary one would take a team of 10 above average players, and that might not even be enough to win. According to Lianna, the one eyed ogre's main dwelling was the Thousand Peaks Mountain to the north. It was a rock forest too, but the scale wasn't something that this one could compare with. Even from here, they could vaguely see the distant, so called, 'Thousand Peaks Mountain'.

“What we're most afraid of is not those ones from before, but the ones deep in Thousand Peaks Mountain. Even I've never seen them. They never come out, because their main food source is each other. According to the records left by the 121st tribe chieftain, there was a one-eyed ogre whose head reached the mountain's peak. His roar can cause hurricanes and his steps crush mountains beneath them. Even though it is a bit exaggerated, but the possibility is terrifying...” Lianna looked at the distant Thousand Peaks Mountain and muttered.

A large-scale event boss. This sort of boss might not even fall no matter how many people you pile on it. It usually required all the regional powers to join forces. It wasn't something they could try right now. Little Ye Tian shook her head, “Anyways, first migrate to Anya. You should leave here, you'll be under the goddesses protection there...”

Ye Cang and the others once again turned back to escort them,

guiding the nearly 300 people of the Familia tribe to Anya's shrine. It just so happens that the area around Anya's shrine wasn't as populated as the other two.

Little Ye Tian settled everyone in and distributed work. She had them all join the construction effort, provided them salaries and food was transported from Black Rock City for them. What made Ye Cang sigh was these aboriginals' energy and craftsmanship. Their ability to construct with stone was extremely advanced. Just give them a blueprint along with a simple explanation and they would get to work. Ye Cang already could anticipate that Mallows and Jam would complain to him about how Anya's shrine was a bit better than the rest. At the same time, he also thought of what he would say in response...

# Chapter 453: Magical Leatherworking

---

About the Thousand Peaks Mountain, Ye Cang didn't speak a word to ThornyRose, NalanPureSoul and the others.

“Earl PaleSnow, thank you for everything you've done for Goddess Anya and our tribe. Lianna is truly unable to return the favor. Whenever and wherever you need me, please just call.”

“Congratulations, you've completed the hidden quest, ‘Return of the Fermianna tribe’. Obtained 3000 experience, a random class talent, and a skillpoint.”

Advanced Shooting (Epic - Beginner Level, Ranger Hunter Other ranged classes): +15% penetration, +20% bullet speed, +15 shooting speed.

“Very good, the goddess association has gained more strength. Just protect your tribesmen well...” Ye Cang faintly smiled.

Lianna lowered her head, “Your spirit wolf fur cloak, I can remake it for you. Just treat it as my goodwill...”

Ye Cang took off his wolf cloak. Recalling that he still had some leather from killing the wolf god, he took it out. Lianna happily said, “With such high quality spirit wolf leather, it will be even better. Earl PaleSnow, I didn't expect you to have such rare leather...”

Ye Cang observed from the side. He saw that Lianna's leatherwork ability was very awesome. She could even add magic to the leather. “Can you teach me leatherworking?”

“Of course...” Lianna was very happy that Ye Cang wanted to learn the leatherworking which was passed down from back when the tribe lived with Anya.

“Then please, chieftain Lianna.” Ye Cang bowed. Lianna quickly stopped him. She really admired his humble attitude. To be able to work for such a sagacious person is my honor. I, Lianna, am

willing to pledge my heart to the goddess association's cause.

After that, Lianna worked while explaining the intricacies of leatherworking and how to leave behind suitable magic. She even taught him some weaving techniques, passing on everything she knew the Ye Cang.

“Due to obtaining Lianna's complete teachings, you've learned Fermainna's Magic Leatherworking.”

Lianna passed the newly remade wolfskin cloak to Ye Cang.

Dina's Protection (Dark Gold - Dina)

Category: Cloak

Requirements: None

+29 Defence

+20 Strength

+20 Dexterity

+21 Intelligence

+10% Dexterity

+15 Spell Power

Magic damage received is reduced by 20%.

Physical damage received is reduced by 15 points.

Wolf Totem - Dina (Passive): Surrounding allies gain +10 damage, +5 defence, and +5% movement speed.

Ye Cang saw that the new wolf god cloak was even better looking than the old one. The fur was very soft, and a faint, cold light flickered in the wolf-head hood's two eyes. He draped it on and tied it securely with the two wolf limbs. He was very satisfied. As for the tigerkin coat, Ye Cang planned to upgrade it himself. He arranged for Lianna to go to Black Rock City to receive the first phase of her management training. Soon, a puzzled Lianna was already sent on her way.



Everyone gathered at the Fermianna tribe's military quarters and purchased some uncommon goods. SpyingBlade and FrozenCloud noticed yet another aura effect and it clearly appeared when Ye Cang approached. They saw Ye Cang wearing a new and improved, awesome looking wolfskin cloak.

Wang managed to obtain the uncommon summoning spell - Earth Elemental - Barto, making him very excited. Wu Na saw that there was only earth element magic and felt disappointed, but still bought a Boulder Strike.

Zhang ZhengXiong saw an Earth Shield skill (create an earth shield around oneself with 3 stacks. Every time you receive an attack, one stack is consumed to heal you for 30 health) and directly bought it.

As for Ye Cang, he saw the 'Familia Tribe's Great Mystery Box' which required worshipped prestige, 100 water elemental hoops and 500 gold. But what were water elemental hoops?

"What is a water elemental hoop?" Ye Cang inquired.

"Bracelets worn by water elementals." The quartermaster briefly explained.

Ye Cang thought of something, then turned to look at Wang with a goodwilled smile. "Summon your water elemental out."

When Wang saw that familiar smile, he quickly summoned his water elemental. Before it could even stand steadily, Ye Cang violently stabbed it with a Flame Blade. He reached his hand out to search the water elemental Tobira, then turned away and said unhappily, "Tsk, nothing at all. I can't even take the bracelet off."

Wang saw his beloved Tobira die right in front of him. Team Leader... you... you're really too cruel.

"What do you want a bracelet for..." Wu Na asked. She was already covered in cold sweat.

Ye Cang posted the mystery box for everyone to see. SpyingBlade

raised his brows. Something that required 500 gold would definitely have some good stuff. However, it needed 100 water elemental hoops.

Everyone all looked at Wang, “Summon it again...”

Wang saw everyone staring at him and gulped. He started the summoning ceremony and the moment Tobira appeared, everyone ganged up and beat it to death. Lin Le looted the corpse and shook his head, “Nothing at all...”

“I guess that makes sense. You can’t continuously kill your companions for loot.” FrozenCloud crossed her arm and explained.

Ye Cang asked the quartermaster again, then turned to everyone, “At the lake, there are wild water elementals there. Our second exploration point is there anyways. Let’s go. Set out! The treasure is calling for my hand...”

Everyone looked at Ye Cang’s back and rolled their eyes. The treasure chests calling to you are all empty...

On the road, Ye Cang took some of the piles of leather in the handcart for practice, turning it into a large pile of leather armor. Finally, he upgraded his tiger-skin coat to dark gold grade, and sighed at how skillful his hands were. Seeing that Ye Cang had learned the uncommon Magic Leatherworking, SpyingBlade thought that he would no longer need to worry about some of his leather armor pieces, especially along with Shaking Bear’s forging. The premise being that they had enough rare materials; but for this team, that was something he didn’t need to worry about. After all, they had Team Leader, the super public sanitation expert...

The closer they got to the lake, the more frequently wild animal and demon beasts appeared. However, to the already treasure crazed Ye Cang, they were just weaklings. Everyone also worked especially hard, sure that the treasure chest would have something good.

The lake gradually appeared in their sight. Ye Cang stopped and began to light a fire. Everyone, originally brimming with enthusiasm, immediately sighed. It's finally come.

“Innovation is the soul of cooking. After careful deliberation, I've come up with a new recipe!” Ye Cang threw the one eyed ogre's meat, zombie flesh, rat meat, skeletal demon bones, and various herbs and mushrooms that even he himself did not recognize, into a pot.

“Let's see how the one eyed ogres taste...” Ye Cang covered it with a lid, then began to prepare a fried dish. He sliced some one eyed ogre meat and rock boar faces, covered them in slime fluid, and added some stink shrooms. Then he began to stir-fry it. Everyone saw that even Ye Cang himself couldn't keep his eyes open while stir-frying, relying completely on feel. The stink made the demon beasts, who were originally intending to ambush them, disappear like wisps of smoke.

## Chapter 454: Meeting Pastor Again

---

With the addition of the ogre meat, the original affects leaned more towards constitution, giving everyone a large boost to health. The downside was that they all fell to the ground, twitching.

“Sure enough, the dangers that come with inventing new recipes are especially big...” Little Ye Tian woke up first and calmly analyzed.

Having refreshed their food buff, everyone arrived at the lake. It was already night time, and they could see ghostly lights flying out the lake like fireflies. Behind that, everyone could see the lake give off a faint glow, making it look exceptionally beautiful.

Suddenly, a lump shaped water elemental rushed over. On its arms, or what they suspected to be its arms, there was a pair of bracelets. Ye Cang readied his two guns and said to everyone, “Everyone ready?”

Seeing everyone nod, Ye Cang inserted two flame crystals into his guns, then directly activated overload. Under the boost of his new talent, the fire bullets began to pour out. Zhang ZhengXiong and the others guarded at the edge of the lake. SpyingBlade frowned. Team Leader didn’t have enough fire spells. They needed to find a fire-element mage to make up the difference. They couldn’t keep depending on team leader, that jack-of-all-trades, to be their main fire mage! After all, he wasn’t a specialized fire user! This team needed to recruit quite a few people; such as the goddess association’s plant summoner and other support classes! For fire, obviously NalanPureSoul would be the first choice, but that was clearly not happening...

The fire element bullets dealt considerable damage. They continuously poured out on the water elementals, making them emit steam. Upon reaching shore, the elementals either clashed with the front-line or were finished off by Lin Le’s fatal molotovs.

Very quickly, the group obtained 30 water elemental hoops. Here, Wu Na and Wang were not of much use as the water elementals were immune to water element magic.

Ye Cang changed out his magic crystals, and checked his reserves. There were still many fire crystals left. He originally intended to scam NalanPureSoul and LordAsked with them, but embedding no longer made as much money and the mystery chest was calling for him!!

Walking around the lake, Ye Cang noticed a dock. It seemed familiar. Seeing the uncle resting on the dock, he immediately remembered. It's Pastor! He shouted, "Uncle Pastor!!"

Pastor was in the middle of contemplating how he would catch this lakes most precious fish. When he saw Ye Cang, Zhang ZhengXiong, and Lin Le, he grinned, "Haha, it's you guys. I never thought you would really leave Really New Village and come to the outside world... I'm really surprised..."

SpyingBlade had not been around when Ye Cang completed the fishing quest, so was confused. They know each other?

Ye Cang brought everyone over to the dock.

Pastor saw Lin Le come over and squeezed his shoulder. "Did you catch any rare fish?"

Lin Le thought hard and replied, "I don't know, I forget..."

Pastor broke out in cold sweat.

Zhang ZhengXiong quickly stood out. Watch this! Number 1 of the 100 Quest Accepting Sentences! "Uncle Pastor, seeing your worried face, you must have something you need help with."

SpyingBlade, FrozenCloud, and the others were all speechless that Zhang ZhengXiong had used one of the beginner 100 Quest Accepting Sentences. He was just surprised by you, just how does he look troubled?

“Correct. Lake Kozawi is a spiritual lake. In it, dwells a super rare fish called the Thunder Fish, however there are too many water elementals. They hate fishermen. Although I don’t fear these water elementals, but they’ll disrupt my fishing... I hope you all can once again protect my ship and keep away distractions so that I can concentrate on the catch...” Pastor nodded.

“Uncle Pastor, leave it to us.” Ye Cang smiled indifferently.

Pastor looked at Ye Cang’s clothing and the medals on his chest with interest. “Not bad, it’s only been how long? You’re doing pretty well, earl...”

“It’s nothing.” Ye Cang said modestly.

“You all get on the boat and prepare. We’ll set out in half an hour. I need to adjust my state of mind.” Pastor sat on the dock and stared at the surface of the lake, sinking deep into thought. His mouth continued to mutter, “Fish a mermaid to warm my bed. Fish a mermaid to warm my bed...”

SpyingBlade looked at Ye Cang doubtfully. FrozenCloud whispered, “This is a random event NPC that me, team leader and them met back in Really New Village. It rewards generously. This is probably an irregular world-travelling NPC...”

SpyingBlade recalled that Lin Le could fish and immediately understood. He walked onto the small boat and stood by the railing to enjoy the breeze. Little Ye Tian got on and examined the equipment, prying into its structure as she pleased. She used her engineering skill to enforce her analysis, then shook her head. She was still lacking a core skill, otherwise she would need to take apart the magic engine and retractors to understand them. But the rest had been completely inferred by her. She played around with the controls for a bit.

Ye Cang jumped onto the top of the boat and checked his gun’s energy crystals. He replaced the half used crystals with unused higher quality fire crystals. FrozenCloud looked all over the boat.

When the time comes, she would be guarding the back. “A’Xiong, you’ll be in charge of the front. You have to be careful...”

Zhang ZhengXiong wrapped an arm around FrozenCloud. “Lil’Dino, It’s me we’re talking about. Are you still worried? Hehe, I’ll be depending on you to get closer to Sister Lily...”

FrozenCloud suddenly looked ill. Her elbow struck his chest, but it didn’t hurt Zhang ZhengXiong one bit. Feeling somewhat hurt, she turned away, “I don’t need you to tell me! Damn playboy...”

Zhang ZhengXiong once again grabbed FrozenCloud. He put his forehead to hers, their eyes looked straight at each other and he smiled, “Lil’Dino, I actually don’t care about your appearance or your past, because I’m also someone who picked himself up from the ashes. But I can’t be together with you right now. I have a bad feeling that if I get together with you, I will lose something important. Can you give me a bit more time?”

FrozenCloud looked at Zhang ZhengXiong’s foolish smile, felt his big strong hands against her cheeks and immediately turned red as a tomato. Her voice was reduced to a squeak. “Who... Who would like you. Definitely not me...”

“You’re a good woman, a lot like my big sister. Lil’Dino, whether you like me or not, I just hope that you’ll stay healthy. If you’re healthy, anything else is fine. Health is the most important... The rest is fine. Even if we’re just friends, that’s fine too, because only when we’re alive do we have a future, have... joys... and... sorrows...” Zhang ZhengXiong let go of FrozenCloud and carried his heavy axe to the front of the boat to gaze at the moon.

Hearing Zhang ZhengXiong’s words, FrozenCloud didn’t know why but her nose had become runny. She stared at Zhang ZhengXiong back in a daze.

Wu Na wrapped an arm around FrozenCloud. “Don’t think that A’Xiong is all brawn and only knows how to beat people up. He’s actually very gentle and attentive. He’s a guy that’s good at

understanding others. Once, a little girl was selling daffodils. Each flower was only worth 200 federal dollars each, but the girl was selling them for 20,000. He didn't hesitate to buy a lot of them, spending all his own and practically all of Ye Cang's money on them. At that time, I thought he was just some pedophile bastard, but I only found out afterwards that the girl's family was very poor. Her father was ill and needed money to be cured. Can you guess who that little girl's father is?"

FrozenCloud shook her head.

"Actually, you've met him often recently. It's the night market's Old Wang. Old Wang originally wanted to wave all their bills, but Ye Cang and them insisted on paying, otherwise they wouldn't come back... A'Xiong is more kind-hearted than even a little girl, it's just that people are usually scared of him." Wu Na recalled Zhang ZhengXiong's tough outer shell and smiled.

Meanwhile, Zhang ZhengXiong was gazing at the moon. Bro, I'm also slowly understanding the art of picking up girls. Sister Lily, wait till I take out the big guns!



# Chapter 455: Guarding Pastor Again

---

Pastor slowly got up. He brought his fishing tools up onto the boat, then looked at Little Ye Tian in the control cabin, “Far north, the heart of the lake.”

The journey was dead calm. The water elementals only appeared from time to time. Gradually, they arrived at the heart of the lake. Pastor motioned for a stop, took a deep breath, then prepared some special bait. With a swing of his fishing rod, he entered sitting mode. His two eyes never left the surface of the lake, completely concentrated.

The surface of the lake began to ripple.

“It’s starting...” SpyingBlade drew his longswords and muttered.

Ye Cang drew his two guns and swept his eyes over the bubbling water. Zhang ZhengXiong stood guard by Pastor. Fang Ci quickly summoned out two withered ashes.

“Wang, can your water elemental make ice?” SpyingBlade asked.

“Yeah, with ice magic.” Wang nodded.

“Later, turn some of the lake’s surface into ice so that me, Lele and Little Ren can use them as springboards.” SpyingBlade pointed to an area.

“They’re here!” Ye Cang warned. Over ten larger water elementals emerged from the water.

He began to shoot with his two guns. Coming out of his gun was an Enchanted Bullet - Fire - Explosive Bullet. The fiery energy bullet struck the middle water elemental, causing a violent explosion. The gun in his other hand store up fire energy for a Explosive Energy Bullet. Lin Le flung out numerous molotovs, turning the surface of the lake into a sea of flames. Waves of heat and steam continuously rose up. The water elementals’ bodies slowly turned smaller, but as one dissipated, another would rise to

take its place. Wang and Wu Na began to support the melee attackers by creating icy surfaces by the sea of flames. Ye Cang turned to look at FrozenCloud, who was at the back. There were a few who had gotten onto the boat, so he began to shoot at the back. The few melee attackers threw their weapons into a pile, and Lin Le ignited them with a molotov. Grabbing their blazing weapons, dodging the water bullets and ice arrows, they jumped onto the ice and took on the water elementals that made it through the flames.

Everyone assisted each other with great coordination, especially Ye Cang's ranged suppression. The flames didn't last as long as they did on land. Gradually, under the water elementals' charge, the flames became smaller. Light Strike Array's blaze struck at this time. Due to the terrain, its might was greatly reduced, but it still caused very considerable damage and stun. Lin Le took this opportunity to set the water surface ablaze again.

SpyingBlade finished off quite a few with his flaming sword. He turned back and shouted, "The ice is breaking! Continue! Don't stop! Don't think about attacking, just focus on paving us a path!"

Wu Na quickly continued to create a path with ice magic. Wang simply had Tobira go onto the water and spam ice.

Fang Ci shot Shadow Arrows from his staff like a machine gun. He ordered his servants to help attack while also casting curses on newly arrived water elementals. He thought to himself, how high the water elementals' curse resistance was, that their effects were only so-so.

Little Ye Tian continuously healed the front line fighters. Brandishing her mithril staff, she casted a Holy Shield on everyone, then sighed. It's still better to find one or two more trustworthy supports. Brother A'Xiong main duty is tanking. Although he can also serve as support and his Desperate Prayer is very useful, but he's inevitably inferior to a dedicated support.

The water elementals started to emerge faster and faster. There

were a few who circled around to the side. SpyingBlade looked at Lin Le and said, “Lele, have Little Reng go back and assist A’Xiong. Although A’Xiong can handle it but we must keep Pastor absolutely safe. If a water elemental manages to attack him...”

“Ok. Little Ren, you go help Brother Lil’ Xiong!” Lin Le commanded. The tigerkin Little Ren charged back with his two flaming blades. Under SpyingBlade’s envious gaze, with a few mighty leaps, he returned within range of the boat. “Give Little Ren and A’Xiong an ice surface!”

Wu Na felt so busy. Seeing her mana continuously drain away after casting so much ice, she quickly sat down and began to drink spring water. “Wang, be more careful for a bit...”

Wang was also awfully busy but he could still manage. He couldn’t help rejoicing that his water elemental not only had so much mana, its recovery speed was also impressive. It could still hold on a little longer.

Zhang ZhengXiong jumped off the boat and stepped on the ice. Together with Little Ren, he prepared to take on the swarm of water elementals. He directly received the water bullets and ice arrows, completely covering Pastor.

At the back of the boat, with Ye Cang’s assistance, the pressure on FrozenCloud was greatly alleviated. His ranged suppression was really too awesome. She turned back and said, “Team Leader, I can take it from here. Go help the front!”

Ye Cang turned and began to rapid fire in overload mode. Fire energy bullets began to pour into the sea of flames. Experience continuously came in. SpyingBlade sighed in satisfaction. Gaining experience like this felt too good. These water elementals that had come out due to the event were all elite grade, thus gave high experience!

Gradually, the rate at which the water elementals emerged declined. The surface of the lake started to regain its calm. The sea

of flames stopped burning and the lake's surface was covered in water elemental corpses (bracelets). Everyone sighed. SpyingBlade frowned, "Don't let down your guard..."

"That's right..." Ye Cang examined the lake with his eagle eyes. The thunder fish appeared, swimming out from where Pastor had cast his bait. Just at that time, the lake began to boil even more violently than before and radiated a powerful spiritual force. SpyingBlade and the others who were nearby even noticed an enormous whirlpool. Everyone quickly stepped off the ice, which was getting sucked in, and began to quickly withdraw to the boat.

Being the closest, SpyingBlade felt himself getting sucked in but Ye Cang made a piercing whistle and Little Blue Feather, who was perched on the boat, suddenly flew over. SpyingBlade jumped; the ice under his feet disintegrated into the whirlpool and grabbed Little Blue Feather's claws.

Little Blue Feather began to speed up. It forcefully dragged SpyingBlade and glided back towards the ship. SpyingBlade leapt over a few pieces of ice and boarded. So close. Luckily, we have a war falcon. He smiled at Little Blue Feather, "Thanks..."

"Stupid! Stupid!" Little Blue Feather spoke like a parrot.

SpyingBlade broke out in cold sweat. Just what is he teaching this bird all day? Out of the corner of his eyes, he saw that on the shore, dancing and cheering was the lesser demon Weak Sauce. Team Leader's pets are really...

Everyone quickly looked at the whirlpool. Pastor was still as focused as ever on his fishing, he simply continued to stare at his bait. His calmness made SpyingBlade and the others gasp.

The whirlpool shot out an enormous jet of water. A nearly 16 meter large lump of water appeared. A pair of enormous bracelets emerged from the water and the lower half of its body was still connected to the lake.

Ye Cang squinted to identify it.

Lake Water Elemental Lord (Advanced Boss - Elemental - Abyss):  
An elemental boss that dwells in lakes. Its attacks are ordinary but once it's angry, it becomes extremely dangerous. It is good at water magic. Of no usable value. The water constituting its body is of decent quality, if it can be isolated.

The water elemental lord swung its fist, sending an enormous wave rushing towards everyone. Ye Cang quickly began to cast Tidal Wave. A smaller wave shot forth towards the bigger one, breaking up. The big wave split and passed by the two sides of the boat. The hull rocked a bit but there was no major problem.

“Make a path of ice! Lele, cover our weapons in fuel again!” SpyingBlade quickly threw out his weapon. Lin Le covered their weapons in fuel. Wang and Wu Na quickly cast at the water's surface. A few patches of ice appeared. Everyone jumped off onto the ice and rushed towards the water elemental.

“FrozenCloud, you and I will stay and guard Pastor.” Ye Cang had FrozenCloud stay behind. He wasn't certain that he could handle it alone. Nana and Wang had practically no way to affect the water elemental.

# Chapter 456: Fierce Battle on the Lake

---

Ye Cang spoke to FrozenCloud as he quickly retrieved a fire crystal. He equipped the boss level fire crystal to his ballista, then slung it over his back.

Zhang ZhengXiong brandished his flaming heavy axe and directly collided with the incoming liquid hand, causing a burst of steam. Lin Le also began to enthusiastically throw molotovs at the water elemental boss. A large amount of steam burst to the skies following the ignition of the molotov fuel.

Wu Na and Wang kept eyes on the continuously moving pieces of ice, replenishing them while somewhat flustered. SpyingBlade furrowed his brows, this boss was an event boss. His flaming weapons attacked violently, looking like falling stars.

Although the thunder fish was a bit startled, it still slowly swam towards Pastor's bait.

FrozenCloud jumped off the boat to deal with the water elementals that had started emerging again, jabbing with her flaming fists. After her initial triple strike, her two fists continued to combo. Ye Cang saw that FrozenCloud had no trouble taking on three of them. Retrieving his ballista, he began to prepare an Enchanted Arrow - Fire - Explosive Arrow. After the fire crystals' energy poured into the queen bee bolt, the bolt immediately began to burn.

A flaming Meteor Shot instantly shot through the water elemental lord's chest, then an explosion turned its chest into a couple meter large hole, which continued burning. Ye Cang took this chance to throw out a Flame Burst, once again hitting the same spot, expanding the hole. Then he activated the Rapid Fireballs from his magic tome. Five balls of flame flew out one after the other. Light Strike Array also just got off cooldown. Bright flames burst out of the whirlpool, rising tens of meters

high, completely covering the boss.

Ye Cang didn't stop at that. Simultaneously drawing his two guns, he began to fire rapidly. He sighed inwardly. All his fire spells were pretty much on cooldown, so he could only rely on his weapon. Hopefully they could take advantage of this burst to turn the tides.

As time passed, everyone realized that the boss actually looked somewhat tired. However, the part of its body that was blown away was very quickly filled in with the lake water. Its health regeneration was frightfully fast. Luckily they had Lin Le's molotovs to counter it. However, they were using up the molotovs very quickly; it might not last till the end.

The water elemental boss produced countless water balls. FrozenCloud quickly moved to the front of the boat and forcefully blocked three of them, losing 80% of her health. Luckily, these water balls were scattered, so although they dealt quite a bit of damage to everyone, it wasn't enough to kill them. Little Ye Tian quickly healed FrozenCloud, Wu Na and Wang. The front lines was supported by Zhang ZhengXiong's Desperate Prayer.

Zhang ZhengXiong continued to attract aggro. He felt a tremble under his foot and quickly kicked off, jumping to an adjacent floating piece of ice. A torrential fountain shot out, smashing the ice nearly thirty meters into the air.

The tigerkin Little Ren was like a dragonfly, attacking while continuously leaping from floating ice piece to ice piece. SpyingBlade didn't have its jumping power, but was also continuously moving. Following the exhaustion of Wang and Wu Na's mana, the space between ice blocks became larger and larger. SpyingBlade's heart sank, they were out of mana! "Hurry and recover! We can still hold on for a while! Little Tian, calculate the time and have them recover as much as possible!"

Little Ye Tian nodded. Even without SpyingBlade telling her, she

was always making calculations. She looked at the electric currents crackling on the water around the thunder fish. Just seven more seconds until it arrives! Even if they couldn't kill this boss! They had to at least complete the quest and retreat! They had to hold on until then!

Ye Cang made a piercing whistle again. Little Blue Feather flew over, creating a burst of cold air which left a path of ice for everyone. The flowing currents instantly snapped it into over ten blocks of ice which circled the boss.

SpyingBlade sighed in relief. He was just about to run out of footholds. He quickly flipped away, dodging the sudden blast of water.

Now, the whirlpool under the Water Elemental Boss began to spin increasingly faster. Its range also continued to increase. Very quickly, everything within a hundred meters was enveloped by the whirlpool. The ship also followed the current and began to revolve around it. Everyone's heart sank. It was unavoidable! The range was too massive!

The thunder fish bit onto the bait. Pastor's brows suddenly jumped. Reel, drag, reel, then forcefully pull! He pulled out a club and while the fish was in the air, stunned it with a hit and threw it into a basket. He then calmly took out a notebook and began to draw and document it. Suddenly, the enormous whirlpool shot out a gush of water, knocking everyone, the boat included, up into the sky. Pastor was completely unaffected, sitting there continuing to jot notes into his fishing diary.

Ye Cang's health plummeted but he couldn't help admiring this sort of single minded concentration. It was worth learning from. Once they reached over 50 meters in the air, Ye Cang stabilized his body, stepped off the boat, activated Cloudwalk, then leapt to a block of ice. He rapidly dashed between the airborne ice blocks like in the movies. FrozenCloud saw Ye Cang pass by her while she was still feeling weightless. He was even eating a soldier food. Team



Leader's bodily control is too abnormal, he can even do this... However, it's probably only possible with the help of a speed skill.

Having been blasted till he only had 20 health left, SpyingBlade also noticed Ye Cang take action. He watched as Ye Cang turned into several streaks of shadows that charged towards the water elemental boss. Zhang ZhengXiong activated the Desperate Prayer stored in his ring and once again pulled up the melee fighters' health. Everyone who was still alive took out and ate a soldier food. SpyingBlade sighed. Desperate Prayer + soldier food. As long as they didn't die, there would be no problem.

As for Wu Na and the other spellcasters, they weren't so lucky. Without mana to protect themselves, even with their equipment, they were still blasted to death by the gush of water. Little Ye Tian rose to the sky with the boat. Seeing her remaining 5 health, she broke out in cold sweat, quickly healing herself and consuming a soldier food. Luckily, I had my staff's improved holy shield casted on myself in that instant, otherwise I'd be like sister Nana and the others. She looked to the three casualties, their bodies were still being pushed by the water.

Ye Cang's Flame Lotus was instantly unleashed with his Multiple Straight Thrust, creating three flaming flowers. The three blossoms created three small holes. Stepping off a nearby airborne ice block, he began to return. "Retreat, the quest is probably complete..."

Ye Cang dived into the water and began to swim back to the boat as fast as a fish.

SpyingBlade sighed. They had no other choice. Lele had nearly used up all his molotovs yet it still had quite a bit of health. With its health regeneration speed, unless they had Lele's suppression, it was practically unkillable.

Pastor didn't react at all to the boat hitting the water and the violent rocking. He didn't even lose his balance at all. He simply

took out what everyone suspected to be a cannon which shot an extremely explosive flame. Ye Cang and the others quickly leapt into the water to avoid it. Little Ye Tian and FrozenCloud saw that the water elemental boss was quickly reduced to steam by this super flamethrower thing. All that it left behind was a pair of enormous bracelets.

“Congratulations, you’ve slain Lake Water Elemental Lord. Received 4500 experience.”

# Chapter 457: Fishmen Shaman's Acknowledgement

---

“Lele! Hurry and loot! Or it will be too late!!” Zhang ZhengXiong roared as he saw Ye Cang rushing with big splashes over like a crazed swordfish. FrozenCloud felt that Team Leader's speed in the water was too damn terrifying. Any faster and he would practically be flying.

“Oh...” Lin Le finished praying and slowly reached towards it. Ye Cang's hand was only a ruler's length away. Everyone felt their hearts rising to their throats. Would they make it!?

“Eh, why isn't there anything?” Ye Cang searched the bracelet and asked doubtfully. Everyone's heart sank. SpyingBlade floated on the water powerlessly, staring at the moonlight. Such a beautiful moon. We fought for nothing again...

FrozenCloud fell weakly to the ground, feeling like she was going to cry. Once Nana revives and finds out, Team Leader is going to get lectured to death.

“Brother Lil'White, we got four items. Three equipment and one skillbook.” Lin Le's naive and innocent smile shines with the light of hope. Ye Cang looked at the items in Lin Le's hands and blinked. He then pounced over and bit down on his head, “Damn Lele! You dare steal from my divine hand while in my presence!?”

“Aaah, Owwww, It huuuuurts! Brother Lil' White, it's not my fault! Brother Lil' Xiong told me to...” Lin Le said, avoiding responsibility. Ye Cang stopped gnawing on Lin Le's head and suddenly glared at Zhang ZhengXiong, then rushed over at full speed.

Zhang ZhengXiong immediately broke into cold sweat. He quickly swam towards the boat, but was still overtaken by Ye Cang and got bitten on the head. “This is for giving bad orders! And for

the godly artifact!!”

“Bro, it was actually Lil’ Dino’s idea!!” While in pain, Zhang ZhengXiong quickly pushed the blame to FrozenCloud.

FrozenCloud’s chest felt stuffy. F\*\*k! You sure this guy is as kind hearted as a little girl!? Seeing the incoming, angry Ye Cang, she gulped, then turned to run. Unable to compare with Ye Cang’s speed, she was still caught in the end and had her head gnawed on for a long time. When Ye Cang felt his temper cool down, he jumped onto the boat and sighed, “You missed another chance to get a godly artifact...”

SpyingBlade and the others rolled their eyes. Luckily, Lin Le had protected the fruits of their victory.

Pastor had seen Ye Cang and the others’ activity and looked confused. Young people these days make no sense at all. Putting away his flame thrower, he passed the fish basket to Ye Cang. “Take it. I can’t use it anyways...”

Ye Cang took and identified it.

Thunder Fish (Super Rare - Fish): Dwells in lakes containing spiritual energy. Their bodies can produce electricity and their swim speed is extremely fast. Consuming will give a permanent +3% speed and a chance to learn a lightning element spell.

“Then thank you very much, Uncle Pastor.” Ye Cang received it with a smile.

Little Ye Tian revived the three.

“Thank you for this time. Here is your reward.” Pastor smiled.

“Congratulations, you’ve completed the hidden quest ‘Protect Pastor - Thunder Fish’ and received 4000 experience, a random dark gold grade class equipment, a specific epic talent (uses attributes, known skills, experience, and titles to generate the talent), and one skill point.”

The class exclusive dark gold equipment and epic talent was enough to make everyone delighted, let alone the fact that there was also 4000 experience and a skillpoint.

“Our journey here has come to an end. I’ll be leaving. Oh right, I’ll gift this boat to you guys. I’ve ordered a bigger and better portable magic crystal powered steamer. Let’s meet again if fate permits. Lele, you must also work hard.” Pastor grasped and retrieved his dock and cabin. He patted Lin Le’s head before turning to leave.

“I will! Goodbye Uncle Pastor!” Lin Le waved his hands. FrozenCloud and SpyingBlade thought to themselves that this boat would be very useful in the future. Since it was portable, they could put it away into the handcart at any time, or into their bag.

Everyone returned to the boat. Little Ye Tian began to fiddle with the steamer’s kinetic system. Seeing that the core technology had been sealed tightly, she didn’t dare open it up because she saw a copyright protection seal on it. If it was opened, it would become scrap. She unhappily chose to leave it alone.

Lin Le and everyone jumped off and began to clean up the water elemental corpses, receiving an abundant harvest of over 20 distinguished equipment, 2 water element skill books, over 130 water elemental hoops, a large amount of water element crystals, a pair of water elemental lord hoops, and a high grade water element crystal. They returned to the deck and began to sort and distribute.

Lin Le passed the boss drops to Ye Cang.

Ye Cang looked at the items. A dark gold magic ring, a gold water element magic robe, a dark gold dagger and the Source Water Shield skill. He looked at Wu Na and Wang, then passed the two Dark Gold mage equipment to Wu Na, “You two pick one each. They are both water element, decide amongst yourselves...”

Source Water Shield (Water Elemental Lord - Beginner Level): Create a shield of water around a target. Absorbs 65 damage and

lasts for 10 minutes. While the shield of water exists, the target recovers 2 mana every 10 seconds. Cost: 30 mana. Cooldown: 10 minutes.

“Give the skill to Sister Nana, then have her cast it on me. It will give me both protection from damage and a very good mana regeneration effect.” Hearing Little Ye Tian’s proposal, Ye Cang directly gave it to Wu Na. As for the gold dagger, Ye Cang glanced at SpyingBlade. SpyingBlade shook his head, so it was directly thrown into the cart and given a price tag.

“What talent and class equipment did everyone get...” Ye Cang revealed his own talent and extended his hand to show his new ring.

Fishmen Shaman’s Acknowledgement (Epic - Beginner Level): Water and Lightning magic effect increased by 25%. Intelligence increase by 10%. Will be treated courteously in any fishman tribe. Most aquatic races will not attack you. Plus, you can go to an approved agency to obtain a Shaman subclass.

PS: You are already friends with all fishmen...

Green Jade Ring (Dark Gold - Class)

Category: Ring

Requirements: Ranger

+12 All Attributes

+14 Spell Power

+10% Ranged Damage

+20 Armor Penetration

+5% Movement Speed

Everyone felt that the ring was alright but their attention was mostly on the talent. Fishmen Shaman’s Acknowledgement. FrozenCloud and SpyingBlade were most concerned about that final line. Subclass... a class on-top of your current one. This was

extremely rare...

“Bro, mine is... it’s another f\*\*king aura talent. At least the equipment is alright. I can replace my bracelet.” Zhang ZhengXiong showed his own Aura Control (+10% aura effects. Makes auras harder to suppress or dispel.)

Imitation Elune Prayer Beads (Dark Gold - Class - Imitation)

Category: Class Accessory

Requirements: Priest

+15 All Attributes

+10% Holy Effects

+10 Defence

Hand of Elune - Imitation: Melee attacks against spirits and demons will deal an additional 25% holy damage.

Elune’s Prayer - Imitation: Activate to reduce damage taken by surrounding friendly targets by 30%. Lasts for 5 seconds. Cooldown: 3 hours.

# Chapter 458: Armed Crystal Drive

---

SpyingBlade laughed bitterly. Even more powerful auras, and protection against suppression or dispelling. Was he going to improve his aura's to the peak?

“And you Lele?” Ye Cang nodded, then turned to Lin Le.

Lin Le revealed his own class equipment and talent.

Armed Alchemist - Sort (Epic - Beginner Level): Your bag, handcart, and other containers gain 35% increased capacity. Ranged consumables gain 50% increased area and range. Increase the number of consumables used at once by 3.

Armed Crystal Drive - Captain Level (Dark Gold - Class)

Category: Glove Support Device

Requirements: Armed Merchant

Equip Crystal: Your attributes will be influenced by the equipped crystal. This armed crystal drive can only equip up to three 4th level crystals. They can be swapped out only once a day.

Enchant Weapon: Depending on the equipped crystals, two different magic skills will become available.

Ye Cang looked at the strip like thing with three grooves. Lin Le equipped it on top of his gauntlets.

“Try equipping fire, water and earth crystals.” Ye Cang took out three elite grade crystals (level 3).

Lin Le inserted them into the drive one after the other. The fire crystal gave him 15 strength, water gave 15 intelligence and earth gave 15 constitution. He also obtained two hybrid magics.

Swamp: Turn a target area into a swamp to trap your enemies. Can snare and slow.

Lava Ball: Throw a ball of lava at your target, dealing 70 fire



damage, some burn damage over time and can stun.

“Fire is strength, Water is intelligence, Earth is constitution...” SpyingBlade muttered. If he equips three fire crystals, that would be 45 strength! Damn, too strong. It seems the two spells are a mix of the crystals’ properties. Swamp is water and earth. Lava is fire and earth.

“I can only change them tomorrow. Lele wants three fire crystals.” Lin Le smiled.

“Try taking them all out...” Ye Cang was envious. His own ring was too normal. Little Ye Tian’s epic talent was one that increased her constitution, wisdom and mana regeneration. Her equipment was a coat of arms shield which had a large-scale healing and defense increasing skill. Ye Cang also looked over the rest of them, they were all quite good. Only his ring didn’t have a skill. Wu Na’s enchanted crystal, Fang Ci’s necronomicon, SpyingBlade’s shadow claw. What made Ye Cang the most unhappy was that Wang’s summoning stone ring was more dazzling than his own. Flying into rage, he snatched it and threw it as a skipping stone, making it skip across the water over ten times...

Wang quickly jumped overboard and fished it up. Everyone broke into cold sweat. He was really angry.

Wang came out of the water and protected his summoning stone. He looked at Ye Cang innocently, “Boss, you...”

Seeing Ye Cang’s smiling eyes, he immediately swallowed his complaints and sighed heavily. This was bare and unconcealed jealousy.

SpyingBlade didn’t know whether to laugh or cry. The ring was actually pretty good. Although it didn’t have a skill, but the attributes were very suitable for him. He was just jealous that everyone else’s seemed cooler.

FrozenCloud wiped her forehead. I am not even complaining.

Mine is another martial artist robe. I already got a Dark Gold one from the holy church and now I get another. And the old one is actually better for me. This is too much. Hah, why can't it be a bracelet. "Team Leader, my martial artist robe is better than this one. See if you can find someone to exchange it with, or just sell it and buy something for me."

Ye Cang took the martial artist robe and thought for a bit. An expert grappler... his lips curled into a smile.

Everyone could guess who he would call.

"Brother CloudDragon! Long time no see. I've missed you so much... We just met on the battlefield? You're too cold. I don't know why, but not seeing you for a day feels like we've been apart for years." Ye Cang called and started exchanging pleasantries.

CloudDragon felt an indescribably sinister shiver. Is this guy gay!? "Get to the point. What do you want..."

"So here's the deal. Our Happy Firmaments group, after  $9 \times 9 = 81$  days of gathering,  $7 \times 7 = 48$  days of manufacturing...  $7 \times 7$  is 49? Anyways... don't mind the details. We finally managed to obtain a dedicated grappler equipment, a super martial artist robe! Look at these attributes, these materials, this workmanship. It is simply a godly piece of equipment made just for you! Why not give it to FrozenCloud? Hah, she's worth less than mud. Giving her such a treasure would be a waste. Even if you can bear giving it to her, I can't!!!" Ye Cang began to deliver his sales pitch, unaware that FrozenCloud was this close to sending him flying with a Shoryuken. What do you mean I'm worth less than mud!?

"That's right, you also think that giving it to that girl would be a waste. Price, hah, I wasn't planning on selling it, but... how can I not given our relationship!!!"

"We have no relationship!!!" A roar that everyone could hear thundered from the communication device.

“Hey, didn’t you reject that too quickly? And so loud too. What do you mean we have no relationship? Aren’t we all good brothers? Good teammates? Good companions? Oh. 500 gold, all gold coins! F\*\*k off? Hah, alright, I’ll give a bit. 500 gold, half federal dollars! Non-negotiable! You want to think it over? What is there to think about. I’m giving you such a big discount. This this was practically made for you~~ You should know how rare this sort of class exclusive equipment is. This is something super duper mega rare. If you miss this deal, you’ll never have another chance. Really. I’m not lying to you. 200 gold all coins, or 300 gold half federal dollars? Ok! Deal! Although I’m making a loss, but given our relationship... Oh right, our gem inlaying business, equipment forging...” Ye Cang stopped when he heard the other side hang up, and turned away unhappily, “So rude...”

Wu Na was speechless. If it was me, I’d have long since hung up.

Little Ye Tian raised her brows. The value of gold in Black Rock City and White Stone City actually hadn’t depreciated, and the main reason was her father’s massive investments into the natives, evaporating a lot of the gold circulating among the players.

“Lil’Dino, when we get pack, let’s pick something out from the high-end auction for you...” Ye Cang saw FrozenCloud baring her teeth at him and patted her shoulder with a smile.

Pressured by Ye Cang’s vile nature, FrozenCloud smiled helplessly, “Then, please...”

Ye Cang put away the portable steamer and brought everyone back to Anya’s shrine. They found the quartermaster and exchanged for the big mystery chest, but with everyone holding him down, Ye Cang didn’t get a chance to touch it. He could only despair as Lin Le casually opened it. He roared, “I hate you all! I’m the leader! The president! The commander! The only divine hand under the heavens! Why!? Why must you treat me like this!?”

“Brother Lil’White, we got good stuff!!” Lin Le yelled.

Ye Cang's expression turned from despair to happiness. Everyone released him. They couldn't help but feel that Ye Cang's mood, expression and very nature seemed to completely change in a split second when a chest or corpse was involved...

# Chapter 459: Leave for the Swamp

---

Ye Cang checked the things inside the big chest. As expected of a chest costing 500 gold + 100 water elemental hoops. There were five pieces of Dark Gold equipment! Five skill books, and three 5th level crystals. Among the dark gold equipment was even an accessory. This was sufficient to make up for the 500 gold + 100 water elemental hoops. Those with accessories could be counted on one hand. The dark gold, high strength, warboots were given to Lin Le. The spellcaster's cape was given to Fang Ci, since Wu Na and Wang had already received something. Next was a pair of gloves with high strength and dexterity. Ye Cang looked at his own gold quality leather pair, then look at SpyingBlade, who was also wearing a gold quality pair. The two decisively chose to play a game of Rock Paper Scissors and the final victor was SpyingBlade.

Ye Cang turned away, somewhat displeased. Beginners luck!

SpyingBlade secretly thought to himself, I learned a lot from last time's defeat!

Ye Cang continued to distribute. Next was a pretty good necklace with constitution, strength and dexterity. A necklace was already uncommon. FrozenCloud applied for it, so Ye Cang directly gave it to her. As the second tank, she had to be decently equipped, to say nothing of her good performance up until now. She always did her best to complete her task. There was nothing to nitpick at.

Finally, it was the highlight of the show, the accessory.

Earth Spirit's Protection (Dark Gold - Rare)

Category: Accessory

Requirements: None

+40 Defence

+10% Defence

+40 Constitution

+8% Health

Reduces damage taken by 10%.

Reduces physical damage taken by 20.

SpyingBlade, FrozenCloud, Wu Na, Wang and everyone all gasped. Such freakishly specialized attributes. 40 defence! Even another 10%! And another 40 constitution! Not only that, it even has an extra 8% health. Topping it all off was damage reduction.

SpyingBlade wiped his forehead. Although this accessory had no skill, but these attributes were too extreme. It was obviously a tank accessory. One didn't even have to think to know who it was going to. Although FrozenCloud could also use it, but Shaking Bear was the main tank, so had priority. Most importantly were those talents of his. Feel Your Pain and Strong and Tough Body. Both wisdom and strength would be increased by his constitution, so he simply had to brainlessly stack constitution and defence. Now, most players probably couldn't even deal a point of damage to him...

Zhang ZhengXiong took the brown rock accessory and felt like he had improved an entire grade, making him very satisfied.

Following that, Ye Cang arranged the five skill books for everyone to see.

2nd Stage Shoryuken, Revive, Rapid Charge Attack, 2nd Stage Rising Slash, 2nd Stage Rapid Dash.

“2nd Stage Shoryuken is Lil'Dino's. Little Tian has already learned revive, so A'Xiong, you learn it too. It always takes so long to revive everyone. Rapid Charge Attack, SpyingBlade, you want it? You're the one with the least movement skills, so it's yours. 2nd Stage Rising Slash will go to Lele. 2nd Stage Rapid Dash needs the prerequisite skill, which I happen to have, so it's mine. No problems right?” Ye Cang distributed them then inquired

everyone. There were no objections.

Ye Cang took 2nd Stage Rapid Dash and learned it.

“Your Dashing Straight Thrust has been replaced. It has become a new created skill, please give it a name.”

Ye Cang didn't think much before name it 2nd Stage Dashing Straight Thrust.

2nd Stage Dashing Straight Thrust (PaleSnow - Created): Activate to dash extremely quickly towards a target and deal 153% piercing damage. After hitting, within 5 seconds, it can be activated a second time to deal 164% piercing damage. The damage and speed are both affected by attributes. Cost: 25 energy. Cooldown: 30 seconds.

“Father, how much experience until you reach level 20?” Little Ye Tian asked.

“Looks like 3%.” Ye Cang replied.

“Then let's not go back yet. We'll first wait until father reaches level 20 to see what it's like.” Little Ye Tian made everyone sink into thought. SpyingBlade thought that upon reaching level 20, the classes might branch again, but it might not...

“Let's go. We'll go check out the swamp...” Ye Cang hurried on without rest. Since they had already come and gone twice, and they also had Little Ye Tian's virtual map, they decided to take a shortcut. On the road, Ye Cang thought of something and returned to the lake. “We forgot to let Lele fish. I also forgot to gather the surrounding materials. Everyone take a break.”

Lin Le got on the boat, covered himself with a blanket, placed his rod and tools nearby, then began to sleep-fish. SpyingBlade and the others didn't leave this time. Instead, they rested on the boat and watched him fish. A few hours passed, SpyingBlade and the others were already blushing with shame. Lin Le had fished up three chests and hundreds of fish. What kind of efficiency was this? But

most importantly, the person himself didn't even know about it. As expected of the walking cheat. Only after a long time, when everyone was sure there were no more chests, did they wake Lin Le up and have him open them. Besides some gold bars, precious stones and pieces of art, there was a high damage spellbook - Chain Lightning.

After dealing with Ye Cang's dissatisfaction when he found out, everyone quickly gave him the Chain Lightning skill book to shut him up. What they didn't know was that Ye Cang had also found two chests while gathering. Upon opening them, he didn't find a thing. He then looked around, filled the chests with stones, and tossed them into the lake. Finally, he had looked at his hand and sighed, "So a normal chest cannot bear the power of my divine hand? Hah..."

Ye Cang learned Chain Lightning.

Chain Lightning (Uncommon - 4th Level Magic - Beginner): Chant 3 verses (about 2 seconds) to fire lightning at a target, dealing 143 damage, and chaining to upto 8 targets. Every target reduces the damage by 10%. Has a chance to cause paralysis. Cost: 30 mana. Cooldown: 3 minutes.

"Bro, how's your harvest?" Zhang ZhengXiong asked.

"Not bad, I found quite a few rare herbs and materials..." Ye Cang nodded, then checked Lin Le's catch. "Later, you'll have another chance to eat fine foods."

Everyone felt their scalps go numb.

In a safe spot outside the swamp.

Ye Cang hummed a little tune while boiling fish soup, slicing sashimi and even making sushi.

Everyone looked at Ye Cang's new trick and sighed. Besides his cooking, Team Leader really had a lot of tricks.

SpyingBlade watched Ye Cang make sushi. It was sprinkled with



skeletal demon fragments, spirits residue and withered ashes. It had a layer of zombie fluid and a newly caught slice of blackfish on top of it. Finally, he even covered the fish meat in a layer of emerald green slime gel. Seeing that sticky green liquid, SpyingBlade covered his mouth.

Ye Cang continued to make sushi using various types of fish and various combinations of ingredients. Everyone looked at the various types of sticky liquid on the sushi. There was green, red, purple and even black. They couldn't help but shiver. Only when they smelled the delicious fragrance from Ye Cang's fish soup did they shake it off. Luckily there was a normal dish, because the soup was mainly composed of mushrooms and various types of fish... it was more ordinary despite there being quite a few poisonous mushrooms in it.

# Chapter 460: Open Instance

---

Ye Cang sprinkled some marshwalker root powder in to detoxify it. The fragrance became even thicker. Together with the sashimi and sushi, everyone sighed at the three completely different scenes: Heaven, earth, and hell.

Ye Cang crossed his arms and said proudly, “You can eat now, don’t hold back...”

Wu Na examined it. The sashimi can be turned into normal food with the prepared wine. The most important thing was how to eat the sushi in order to lighten the suffering.

Little Ye Tian rapidly analyzed it. Using her knowledge about the science of taste, she wasn’t able to come to any conclusions... Father’s cooking was simply a profound mystery.

Everyone first drank the soup, then ate the sashimi. These could be considered a pleasure as far as Ye Cang’s cooking was concerned. Finally, they all looked abnormally gravely at the thing temporarily defined as ‘sushi’. SpyingBlade first looked at the food buffs and picked out three of them. Taking a deep breath, he stuffed all of them into his mouth. He didn’t even have time to swallow before his eyes rolled back and he fell to the ground twitching.

The remaining people gasped. It turned out their premonition was correct. They turned to Ye Cang who was also gasping along with them and their chests tightened. F\*\*k! If you know how terrifying it is then stop making these things!!

Everyone tried eating different ones but they weren’t so lucky. They all fell to the ground twitching. Even the creator, Ye Cang, didn’t know if any of them were edible, since he was also foaming at the mouth with them.

Finally, Little Ye Tian became the second demon incarnate to

Little Blue Feather, Little Ren, Little Rations and Weak Sauce. Everytime, she would forcefeed them. The four pets also fell to the ground. Then, Little Ye Tian laid against Ye Cang's chest and ate. She bitterly, yet also happily, passed out, twitching. Father...

Everyone gradually woke up. Of course, there were exceptions, such as Little Ye Tian, who happened to eat the optimal biochemical combination. Zhang ZhengXiong began to cast revive. Ye Cang chose the three pieces of sushi he had eaten and the moment Little Ye Tian revived, he stuffed it in her mouth. He faintly smiled, "This is for not letting me open the gift box that time..."

FrozenCloud, Lin Le, Zhang Zhengxiong and SpyingBlade all felt their hearts go numb. This guy was seriously insane. They looked at Little Ye Tian's eyes which contained sadness, regret and even a bit of happiness. Then her eyes rolled back and she passed out once again, foaming at the mouth.

Once they were all ready, Ye Cang cast a Mark of the Wild on everyone, greatly increasing their nature resistance and attributes. He then took out a magic spring water and began to drink. Little Ye Tian also buffed everyone with her two blessings. Then drank her water while sitting grudgingly with Ye Cang. She turned and glared fiercely at Lin Le. It's all his fault! The root of all evil!

However, Lin Le was just picking his nose and wiping it on FrozenCloud's shoulder while she wasn't paying attention. He saw Little Ye Tian's glare and chose to ignore it, thinking to himself, you're still too green...

Ye Cang got up and brought everyone within range of the swamp. The type of demon beasts also changed drastically. There were swamp crocodiles, fungus toads and swamp monsters. To them, the first two didn't pose much of a threat. The swamp crocodile had high attack and strength but its speed was no good. These were the types of mobs that upper-middle tier players loved the most. The most problematic should have been the fungus toads but

because of their big increase in nature and poison resistances, the poison they spat poison had its damage greatly reduced. As for the swamp monster and marsh walkers, they were just average for elites. They had powerful defence and health but were weak to fire. The main source of damage were Ye Cang and Lin Le.

Ye Cang gathered the moss and fungus, “New ingredients again...”

As they went deeper, the number of elite fungus toads and swamp crocodiles increased. A cave on a cliff wall caught Ye Cang’s attention. When they arrived at the cave, the system made an announcement.

“Congratulations, you’ve discovered the 15 person open-type regular instance - The Dark Cave!” The system informed.

“This should be the first open instance found so far. I don’t know about the rest, but it’s the first one in Black Rock City.” FrozenCloud muttered.

“What’s an open instance?” Ye Cang expressed his confusion.

FrozenCloud sighed. Little Ye Tian explained, “Hidden instances can only be completed once, but an open instance is different. It can be entered repeatedly. Some have time restrictions, such as a party can only enter once a day. Others have no restriction at all, but normally, the first to discover an open instance will obtain better rewards inside, much better. The drop rate will also be vastly increased.”

“Moreover, normally, the first party or guild to complete it will get a global announcement.” SpyingBlade added.

“Let’s go. Capture it and get announced. We’ll make Happy Firmaments even more famous!” Ye Cang raised his fist high, and spoke like a leader.

“Team Leader, it’s a 15 person instance. We only have 9, we can include 6 more people. Should we call Sister Rose and them?”

Since everyone called him Team Leader, Wu Na also followed the trend somewhat dumbfoundedly. She was still more used to calling him damn Ye Cang though.

“I’ll ask...” Ye Cang called ThornyRose somewhat unwillingly. “Hi, how are you~?”

ThornyRose’s chest tightened. She recognized that tone as his salesperson voice. “What now?”

“Nothing, I just haven’t seen you in a while, and suddenly thought of you. I just wanted to ask how you’ve been... How have you...” Ye Cang didn’t even get to finish his long lost friends act, before a beep beep sound began to come from the other side of the call.

“It looks like they’re busy. Let us enter...” Ye Cang stroked his chin, pretending to be wise, and said.

Everyone rolled their eyes thinking, Even I would have hung up, if I was her. They all sighed.

“Wait. Although inviting ThornyRose and them has its advantages, but what we need now is a fire type class. This place clearly requires it, especially when going up against swamp monsters. Although Team Leader can serve that purpose, but one is still not enough...” SpyingBlade’s words made everyone nod.

Ye Cang crossed his arms and began to think. He then called NalanPureSoul, “Hey, how are you, swordfighting brother...”

“We didn’t cross swords! Don’t call me swordfighting brother!!!” A lovable shout came from the other end of the call.

“Hah, so fickle. Brother PureSoul, here’s the thing, I need, one person’s, Brother PureSoul’s help. Of course, there will be a generous reward...” Ye Cang deliberately stressed one person.

NalanPureSoul just happened to have finished a quest and was returning to the city. Hearing Ye Cang’s words, he raised his brow, “Details...”

Little Ye Tian shook her head, “Wait until he comes to tell him. Telling him now is unsafe, since the Freedom Alliance is quite powerful, they also have the strength to complete this instance.”

“I can’t tell you yet, let’s talk when you arrive. You have to come alone. I only want you. No one else.” Ye Cang started using the lines a male lead might say in a drama at the end. FrozenCloud and the others only now recalled that line from a drama they recently saw. The one with the customer service, the university party, the idol second male lead...

# Chapter 461: Toad Banquet

---

NalanPureSoul hung up the phone looking puzzled. He turned to NalanMoon and the others, “You all go back first. Brother Hero has some secret business...”

“Team Leader, that guy is definitely planning to scam more money! PureSoul, you have to be careful...” To NalanMoon, Ye Cang was simply a no-good scamming lowlife.

“I know...” NalanPureSoul said, then he left on his journey.

On Ye Cang’s side, they were leveling around the instance dungeon. Since there were enough monsters and the drops were pretty good, everyone had no problem with it. After a few hours of hard work, Ye Cang’s 3% remaining dropped to 1%. Everyone couldn’t help sighing at how difficult it was becoming to level up, even in a monster hunting paradise like this.

“Your contracted companion, Weak Sauce, after a long period of coveting life, fearing death, and cheering from behind, has learned a new skill!”

Weak Sauce’s Boost (Weak Sauce - Demon): While in a party, all member’s health is increased by 7% and defence by 5%.

Everyone couldn’t help but feel happy. That thing could finally be of some use. These effects were pretty good. Ye Cang thought so too. At the very least, something was better than nothing.

Ye Cang felt a bit tired. He brought everyone offline for a rest. They went out to sea to catch some wind. Meanwhile NalanPureSoul was rushing over as fast as he could...

NalanPureSoul arrived at the meeting place, waited for a while and saw everyone sign on one after the other.

“Well if it isn’t Brother PureSoul. You’ve finally come. We’ve been waiting here for so long...” Ye Cang smiled indifferently.

“Brother Lil’White, the sea breeze felt so good. Today was a good day for sailing.” Lin Le also logged on.

“Who said otherwise? After relaxing for an afternoon, I feel much better.” Zhang ZhengXiong logged on with a grin.

NalanPureSoul looked at them with disdain. Oh, so this is you waiting for so long... While I’m rushing over, you were out enjoying the sea breeze.

Ye Cang saw that NalanPureSoul was looking down on him. His face didn’t change as he apologized, “Sorry, I spoke wrong. We’ve been waiting for so long at sea...”

NalanPureSoul rolled his beautiful eyes, not knowing whether to laugh or cry. “Say it, what’s the matter? Or do you want to sell something again?”

“Here’s the thing. We’ve found an instance, but are missing some fire damage, so we’ll let you help out. Of course, we’ll give you some preferential treatment when distributing loot...” Ye Cang continued to speak.

“Instance, hidden or open?” NalanPureSoul raised his brow.

“Open...” Ye Cang replied.

NalanPureSoul froze. It was actually an open instance! No wonder they were being so secretive. However, this was really something that should be kept under wraps. An open instance was a very important source of equipment. At the current stage, most people would be wearing green equipment. This was the first one found near Black Rock City, making it even more precious. If this got leaked, a large amount of players would flock over. Even with their influence, if it was found out that they were hiding an open instance, they would incur the players’ wrath. Wait, these guys definitely plan to publicly announce it after completing it! The facilities over by Anya will become a goldmine! Luckily, I have some investments around Anya’s shrine. More importantly, this



guy definitely wants to get the first clear announcement! He privately messaged NalanMoon and the others to have them come over so they could prepare to farm a bit of equipment.

At the same time, Little Ye Tian was notifying ThornyRose so that she could fight to be one of the first few to farm the instance.

“I got it. Let’s finish as soon as possible. Adding the Freedom Alliance’s name to the world announcement shouldn’t be a problem right?” NalanPureSoul smiled gracefully.

“No problem, no problem...” Ye Cang smiled indifferently. The two of them once again stared at each other for a long time.

“Hah, we’ll go with Brother PaleSnow’s suggestion then.” NalanPureSoul sighed, his shapely eyebrows curved with his smile.

“As expected of my sword fighting...”

Before Ye Cang could finish, NalanPureSoul’s lovable voice shouted, “We didn’t cross swords! DID NOT!!!”

“Such a shy guy. Ok, ok, everyone get ready.” Ye Cang began to prepare his cooking.

The earlier sunshine, beach and wave in people’s hearts was immediately replaced by biochemicals, purgatory and twitching.

NalanPureSoul was even more sullen. He had rushed over, yet still had to eat that inhuman thing.

“I’ve combined the local ingredients together with my new enlightenment. Come everyone, feast your eyes on my new creation!!” Ye Cang announced.

Everyone’s hearts trembled. We’re screwed, it’s another new recipe...

Everyone watched as Ye Cang reached into the handcart and took out a three meter tall, complete, fungus toad corpse. Opening its mouth, he stuffed it with poisonous mushrooms, stink shrooms, and some zombie fluid. He then took a complete bagu bug corpse,

hollowed out its mouth, and stuffed a kagu bee corpse and bone fragments inside. He ‘seasoned’ it with specter residue, then opened the kagu bee’s mouth and stuffed some zombie fluid seasoned maggot flesh inside. Finally, all that was stuffed inside the fungus toad’s enormous mouth. In order to cram it full, Ye Cang filled it with emerald slime gel.

Everyone gasped. They looked at the fungus toad’s bulging stomach, the things in its mouth, as well as the green liquid overflowing from inside. The second menu item hadn’t even started and everyone was already backing away. NalanPureSoul also felt the shivers. This... this...

Ye Cang broke the lumps on the fungus toad’s back, causing pus to spill out. He smeared some lime slime gel on it and blended them together, then took out a grill. He tied the entire thing to a iron rod and put it on. He had Zhang ZhengXiong go up and turn the spit while it roasted.

NalanPureSoul looked like a flower that had lost its colors as he watched that blended liquid get absorbed back into the lumps and start to bulge like soup dumplings. It began to violently bubble out. Zhang ZhengXiong used one hand to cover his nose and eyes, not that he could open them...

Ye Cang laughed maniacally and began to make a more normal soup and rice dish. At least it was much more normal compared to this toad eat bagu, bagu eat kagu, kagu eat maggot, covered in soup dumpling thing; even if eating it would still knock them out.

“Team Leader is always bringing us along to challenge the limits of humanity...” FrozenCloud muttered in a strange tone because she was pinching her nose.

Beside her, everyone nodded with a scowl. Wu Na looked at the sky, her mind in chaos. How great would it be if her hand had trembled and she ended up somewhere else.

Lin Le’s ahoge had become an exclamation mark. He looked

beside him at the trembling Little Ren and patted its shoulder comfortingly. “Don’t worry, you’ll eat before me...”

Little Ren trembled even more violently.

In the end, Ye Cang received a message from the system.

“Congratulations, you’ve completed a set of high quality works! Please give it a name!” Ye Cang proudly gave it the name ‘Lazy Toad Wants to Eat Bagu Kagu Maggots and Slime Soup Barbeque’!

Lazy Toad Wants to Eat Bagu Kagu Maggots and Slime Soup Barbeque: Eat to recover three health and one mana every second. Then obtain +20 all attributes, +12 attack, +10 defence, +50 poison resistance, +50 dark resistance, Restraint - Intermediate (decrease mana and energy consumption by 15%), Burst - Intermediate (physical attacks have a chance to deal 50% increased damage). PS: Extremely disgusting! Use with caution!

# Chapter 462: The Dark Cave

---

Zhang ZhengXiong felt like he was on the verge of collapse. He picked up the iron spit and threw it onto the cloth in front of everyone, then quickly backed up tens of steps. “My god, that was too f\*\*king strong....”

Everyone all backed up a few steps. They looked at the indescribable blend of monsters in front of them. Because of the steam, it almost sounded like a mocking laugh was coming out of its mouth. Although they had to eat it, but they had absolutely no idea how and where to start. Just looking at the attributes, this was Ye Cang’s finest creation, but at the same time it was also his worst... At least, up until now.

“I think you eat it like this...” Ye Cang cut off a soup dumpling like pimple, then a slab of toad meat, then some of the meat in its mouth, then he popped the pimple. The popped pimple wailed like an evil spirit. The green liquid emitted a purple smoke which clung to the food in his bowl. Seeing this, Ye Cang gulped, then turned and saw everyone’s frightened expressions. “Um... you guys first...”

NalanPureSoul had lost all color. This was really... A drop of cold sweat dripped down from his forehead. As for Wang and the others, they were already drenched.

“Umm, as the Team Leader, you should act as our role-model...” FrozenCloud quickly said.

“You flatter me, but Brother PureSoul is the guest, so we should first entertain him...” Ye Cang suddenly appeared beside NalanPureSoul and handed the bowl over to him. NalanPureSoul reached out and blocked the incoming bowl, pushing it back. “The host hasn’t even started, as a guest, how could I dare. Brother PaleSnow should go first...”

“No, no. Brother PureSoul, please...” Ye Cang pushed it back.

“I, your little brother, don’t dare. I, your little brother, don’t dare. PaleSnow, please...” NalanPureSoul’s delicate hand sent it back.

While the two of them pushed it back and forth, Lin Le turned and looked at Wang. He smiled and raised his hand, “Brother Lil’White! Wang said he will eat first!”

The two of them looked over, admiration clearly showing on their faces. They never would have thought the one with the most willpower would be the team’s most vulgar guy. Even Wu Na and the others gained a whole new level of respect for him.

“Umm... I, I...” Wang wanted to quickly explain, but Zhang ZhengXiong grabbed him and Lin Le pried his mouth open, making it impossible for him to speak. Ye Cang slowly walked over, “Oh Wang, I never thought you were the wisest one...”

Everyone couldn’t bear to watch the contents of the bowl get poured in. Wang’s face started to convulse violently. His eyes were open so wide, they looked like they would pop out. Finally, he fell to the ground and grabbed onto Lin Le’s leg, “Brother Le... I... hate... ugh.”

His hand slackened. While in shock, he constantly twitched and foamed at the mouth.

“Umm, everyone get ready. I’ll count 3, 2, 1 and we’ll eat together. If someone doesn’t eat, hehe...” Ye Cang prepared another bowl and laughed grimly. NalanPureSoul sighed. Eating was a must, since that additional resistance was just too important. Even on the way here, he could tell that this place was a paradise for poisonous creatures.

Little Ye Tian first force-fed the few pets, then everyone got a bowl and raised it.

“3, 2, 1! Chug!” Ye Cang trembled all over as he summoned up his courage to devour it. The rest of them all began to eat. They felt

their liver and gut being cut to pieces, as the stink blew their minds away. In the end, all that was left were twitching, foaming ‘corpses’.

Everyone gradually woke up. They looked at the 2/3 of the toad meal that still remained, and their disgusted expressions became even more fierce. They quickly rinsed their mouths with the soup to obtain its effects. Although the rice dish was disgusting, after undergoing the previous baptism, they could no longer be knocked out by it. They could, with difficulty, hold on.

To actually manage to withstand such a disgusting rice dish, they had to use nausea to defeat nausea. However, to be able to endure was better than completely passing out. Thinking ‘til there, everyone felt a bit grateful, but more than that, they felt sorrow...

“I should almost be at master level cooking. Once I’m a master, we should be able to get four food buffs at once and a set effect...” No one could bring themselves to be happy hearing Ye Cang’s words. Instead, they felt a shiver down their spines, because it meant they had to endure four dishes at once. God, just kill me.

Ye Cang and Little Ye Tian once again cast Mark of the Wild and blessings on everyone. After recovering, they walked towards the dark cave.

Ye Cang and the others arrived at the entrance to the dark cave. NalanPureSoul memorized the area. So it’s here? He followed everyone into the instance, a dark and damp cave. Further inside was an extremely wide underground swamp. It looked abnormally gloomy and was covered in every kind of fungus and swamp vegetation imaginable. Ye Cang’s eagle eyes were somewhat restricted, but he could still make out creatures that weren’t hidden; for example, the fungus toads and swamp crocodile, which were at least 50% bigger than the ones outside.

“There are two toads under the big mushroom to the left. On the right, in the pool, are some swamp monsters. Everyone be careful.

They are much bigger than the ones outside.” Ye Cang drew his two guns and inserted fire elemental crystals. Lin Le also took the three crystals off his armed drive and exchanged them with Ye Cang for three fire crystals, two of which were level 4.

Flame Strike: Instantly deal 75 fire damage to an area in front of you with a chance to knock-down, knockback, and stun.

Flame Blade (Toggle): Your weapon deals an additional 30-35 fire damage. Attacks consume the crystals’ energy.

Lin Le activated Flame Blade, the heavy blade in his hand and his left gauntlet began to emit a fiery glow. It looked magnificent in the darkness. Although there was no visible fire, the red glowing blade was even more exceptional.

Ye Cang raised his guns and two flame bullets shot at the toads on the left, drawing them over from the distance. The swamp monsters on the right were also alerted and rushed over together.

“100 meters, 50 meters...” Ye Cang shot Enchanted Bullet - Explosive Bullet, Explosive Energy Bullet, and Multishot in succession, while announcing the distance. NalanPureSoul’s hands began to glow with flames when ‘50 meters’ was announced. Lin Le figured that there were only a few monsters, so decided to wait until they were closer to throw the two molotovs in his hands.

“25 meters!” Ye Cang shouted. Lin Le immediately tossed, covering the incoming toads and swamp monsters in flames. NalanPureSoul threw out Hellfire Hoop, striking the monsters in the sea of flames. Grasping with his hand, the sea of flames and the hellfire hoop both exploded, creating a scene filled with violent flames. With the light of the flames, Ye Cang noticed a tunnel past a wide and dark pond, and mentally noted it down.

The monsters that charged over were intercepted by Zhang ZhengXiong and FrozenCloud. Following closely were Lin Le and the other melee combatants, who split up to fight. Wu Na and Wang always sighed at how ordinary they were, especially after

seeing those flames and the melee fight that they could barely follow. They had no idea what skills to use, so it would be better to save their mana and see if there was anything they could help with later.

Fang Ci and Little Ye Tian remained calm; one replenishing health, and the other casting curses and other negative effects.



# Chapter 463: Googoo

---

NalanPureSoul's firepower was increased by the molotov's flames, one attack becoming many. SpyingBlade thought to himself, as expected of the only spellcaster among the four heavenly kings. His spell combinations, timing, and understanding of spellcasting were all exceptional, especially his intuition.

NalanPureSoul glanced at Ye Cang and saw him continuously shooting his two guns, then saw him begin to cast a fire spell. The more they worked together, the more confusing his class became. If one didn't know he was a ranger...

After clearing them up, looting and gathering the corpses, Ye Cang led everyone deeper through the dark tunnel. The earlier fight had already alerted the creatures further inside, so toads and swamp monsters continuously attacked them. The good thing was that there were never more than ten creatures at once. They very quickly cleared their way in and arrived at the depths. Ye Cang gathered rare mosses, fungi and herbs as he pleased. These were common in this type of topography.

Ye Cang saw a cliff nearby with natural ledges for climbing. It probably led to a very wide stage which was seemingly connected to the cave over there by a bridge. For safety purposes, he had Little Blue Feather fly up and activated his Eagle Eyes. On the stone stage, a pair of huge yellow eyes opened. An enormous fungus toad! Ye Cang's heart trembled because he could sense it. It was waiting there in ambush! It's coming!

"Everyone disperse! Get away from here! Tactics! Pursuit!!" Ye Cang cancelled Eagle Eyes and shouted. He quickly leapt back a few steps. Everyone, receiving Ye Cang's warning, ran for their lives. The slower ones even activated Rapid Pursuit's ability - Charge.

An enormous silhouette fell from the sky. The swamp's water and mud splashed and the floor unceasingly shook. An over ten

meter tall toad silhouette with yellow glowing eyes, looked especially striking in the darkness.

Mutated Fungus Toad - Googoo (Intermediate Boss - Abyss): A mutated Fungus Toad that enjoys dark bodies of water, typically underground. Extremely powerful jumping ability.

“Lele, light it up with molotovs!” SpyingBlade shouted. Lin Le quickly threw out 4-5 molotovs. They were originally going to hit its body, but they were knocked out of the air. Although its webbed hand was covered in flames, they didn’t seem to hinder it much. With the help of the fire, everyone could now see it clearly. A gray body and sturdy hind legs. Ye Cang thought that it was the perfect size. If they killed it, then he could make the boss level version of Lazy Toad Wants to Eat Bagu Kagu Maggots and Slime Soup Barbeque!

Zhang ZhengXiong charged with a furious shout. With the added speed from Tactics: Rapid Pursuit, he easily dodged the lashing tongue with a spin which flowed into a heavy axe to its face, causing a splatter of green blood. FrozenCloud also ran over in a few strides, then leapt into a Wyvern Kick! SpyingBlade, Lin Le, and Little Ren began to wander around the flames, searching for an opportunity. Weak Sauce was standing about a hundred meters away. Together with his buddy, Little Blue Feather, they danced and cheered.

Lin Le found his chance and threw molotovs directly onto its body. From the side, he activated his crazy combo! His fiery, enormous blade performed a Sword Drawing Art! Stage 2 Rising Slash! Whirlwind Strike! Armed Destruction! SpyingBlade brandished his weapons on the other side. Little Ren jumped directly on its back and hacked away. Blood fell like rain. However, Lin Le was stepped on by the suddenly arriving hind leg which sent him flying for nearly ten meters, before rolling on the ground. He desperately stopped himself and got up, then pouted furiously, taking out his handcart. “Stupid Toad! Die!”

SpyingBlade kicked off with one foot and flipped away, thrillingly dodging past a fatal kick, then continued his violent flurry of attacks.

NalanPureSoul watched the savage melee while launching his fire skills. He didn't dare to use area attacks, since accidental friendly fire wouldn't be worth it. Wu Na and Wang shot out ice type spells, dealing very normal amounts of damage.

Ye Cang's balista's Meteor Shot arrived in the next instant. What astonished everyone was that the big toad actually deflected the meteor shot by lashing out with its tongue, making it drill fruitlessly into the ground.

Ye Cang recalled that even flying insects would be caught by those keen senses and agile tongue. This creature's habits gave it exceptional intuition and reaction time against flying objects.

After dodging past the Meteor Shot bolt, Googoo immediately began to swell up. Then green liquid shot out, falling like rain. SpyingBlade gasped. Even with such high poison resistance, his health was still draining away like drinking a cup of water! How dreadful would it be without resistance!? The approaching Lin Le quickly retreated, but was still covered in poison. Zhang ZhengXiong hurried to activate Desperate Prayer to pull the melee fighters' health back up and continue to replenish it. Little Ye Tian quickly used her Healing Chain, her light element area healing spells and even directed her Light Pearls to continuously heal the melee fighters, keeping their health in the safe zone. Wu Na added a Source Water Shield to Little Ye Tian, protecting her and also providing her more mana regeneration. Most importantly, it was a long buff.

The green glow of nature energy floated around Ye Cang's hand. It even carried with it, a hint of flowery fragrance. With a wave of his hand, he cast Flowers in the Wind towards the melee fighters...

A puff of pure, green wind blew by. The green liquid on everyone

was blown away and it also gave them a considerable amount of health regeneration. NalanPureSoul looked at Ye Cang. He actually knew a damage over time removal skill that also heals! It was a nature type skill, so it must be related to the three goddess association. As expected of the president of the goddess association, how could he not have some added benefits.

With the removal of the poisoned state, Googoo became furious. It crouched, then shot up like a rocket, rapidly moving towards Ye Cang. At the peak of its jump, the tigerkin Little Ren leapt up and grabbed hold of a stalactite, then leaping from rock to rock, he safely landed on the ground. Seeing this, SpyingBlade exclaimed in admiration. How great would it be if he could have such jumping power...

Standing on an enormous mushroom, Ye Cang immediately broke out in cold sweat and pulled out his pike. He dodged aside with a Dashing Straight Thrust. The mushroom behind him was immediately crushed. While the ground was shaking, he activated Shadow Frost Strike and rushed back with his second dash, stabbing at what he suspected was its butt. The shadow frost blossomed. While the toad was unbalanced after landing on the ground, his attack triggered both armor reduction and stun. Then Fire Lotus activated, creating blooming lotuses. Finally a Precise Strike + Straight Thrust hit, dealing a large amount of damage. After the continuous attacks, he jumped back and tossed the pike back into his shadow. Taking out his two guns, he attacked while retreating. Seeing NalanPureSoul's signal, he began to cast Light Strike Array.

NalanPureSoul smiled gracefully. If it's alone, then I won't hold back. Rings of hellfire were thrown out, the blaze from light strike array also rushed out, then he reached out and grasped. The sound of a violent explosion along with a mournful wail resounded. While the flames burned, Zhang ZhengXiong rushed over with a Fearless Charge. Super Speed activated and he directly smashed it

into a wall. Lin Le's Handcart Charge was next, followed by a Handcart Homerun which smashed it back into the sea of flames.

Ye Cang raised his brows. It would be bad to give it another chance to jump! Looking at its hind legs, he grabbed his pike and pinned its foot to the ground. He then drew his guns once again and began to shoot. Zhang ZhengXiong charged into the fire once more, enduring the damage and launching a Holy Judgement.

“Congratulations, you've slain Mutated Fungus Toad - Googoo. Received 3800 experience.”

## Chapter 464: Little XXX and Stinkin' Toad

---

The moment the system announced the killing blow, a rapid figure passed through the flames. NalanPureSoul cried out in alarm, "Careful! He's coming!!"

In the fire, Zhang ZhengXiong quickly pounced, tackling Ye Cang and holding him tightly. He felt cold sweat drenching his back. Luckily he had been near the corpse of the boss, otherwise... they would have fought mostly for nothing. Lin Le jogged over, through the fight and looted the boss. Everyone sighed in relief.

Lin Le turned back and saw Ye Cang reaching out of the fire like a spirit from hell, then spoke while shivering, "Brother Lil'White, we got 2 dark gold equipment and a skillbook..."

Now that it was time to divide the loot, Ye Cang looked at everyone and sighed, "Really, let me loot the next boss. My divine hand is trembling..."

Everyone all shook their heads.

"Mortals. Hah, let's divide these then. Dark gold mage's light armor, but it's nature element. Who wants it?" Ye Cang inquired.

NalanPureSoul sighed. He decided to save his privilege until there was something good for himself. Though this light armor was pretty good even without the nature element bonuses, but it was still nature element equipment after all.

Ye Cang saw that no one wanted it, so he shrugged and threw it into the cart with an unknown price sticker. "The second is a high dexterity belt. SpyingBlade, what do you think?"

"You don't want it?" SpyingBlade asked back.

"Mine is a gold quality metal belt, so its defence is higher. Although the new one is a bit better, but this one matches my outfit." Ye Cang replied like so.

SpyingBlade sighed and equipped the belt. Speaking so much nonsense, just to show off in the end.

“Finally, it’s the skillbook. Let’s see, Googoo’s Leap Attack.” Ye Cang posted the skillbook into chat.

Googoo’s Leap Attack (Googoo - Super Uncommon): Channel for 1 second, then quickly jump a set distance and height (depending on strength, constitution and dexterity). Fall towards your target to deal a large amount of crushing damage (depends on damage, constitution and strength), and have a chance to stun or knock down. Cost: 25 rage. Cooldown: 3 minutes.

If this skill didn’t go to Shaking Bear, then it would be Lin Le’s. Everyone was of the same mind. Ye Cang passed the skillbook to Lin Le, but Lin Le gave it to Zhang ZhengXiong. Zhang ZhengXiong shook his head, but Lin Le still smiled and said, “Lele has a jumping skill. Brother Lil’Xiong doesn’t have one yet...”

NalanPuresoul froze. Such a good skill and they are both trying to pass it up.

Zhang ZhengXiong faintly smiled and learned it. He looked at his accessory slots. I currently have two accessories, and my equipment is probably the best in the group, excluding bro’s abnormal resurrection ring. I’ll pass the next item to Lele, he still needs to arm up. It can’t always be him passing to me!

However, Lin Le’s equipment was also among the best in the team. Two dark gold weapons and a body full of mostly dark gold armor, with the worst being gold. He wasn’t lacking much compared to Zhang ZhengXiong. His only shortcoming was his lack of accessories.

After dividing the loot, Ye Cang excitedly put the entire corpse onto the cart. Seeing this, everyone began to lose themselves in thought. It’s probably... They all shook their heads and denied it. I’m just overthinking it. There’s no way. No way. But Ye Cang’s excitement was like a cold wind penetrating their hearts.

NalanPureSoul laughed bitterly, wondering if it was really a good idea to come...

After recovering their mana, everyone continued upwards. On the stone stage, there was a mushroom with a clear egg lying in the swamp under it. Ye Cang saw it, hesitated for a moment, identified it and shouted, “Rare ingredient! Stew!!”

FrozenCloud and the others quickly stopped him, “Team Leader, that’s a pet egg! You should tame it if you can! Most of us still don’t have a pet yet!!”

“Says who! Let’s just eat it!” Ye Cang struggled and retorted.

Finally, under everyone’s convincing, Ye Cang used his taming skill on the pet egg. NalanPureSoul raised his brows. It turns out that Ye Cang was the one who could tame, what a pleasant surprise. He brought up a request, “Brother PaleSnow, I also have something that requires breeding and taming. I hope you can help...”

“200 gold, fixed price. Gold only. Thanks for your patronage...” Little Ye Tian instantly appeared in front of NalanPureSoul and said with her hand outstretched.

“.....” NalanPureSoul looked at Little Ye Tian. Really cast from the same mold, as expected of siblings. Even their scamming expressions are so alike. It makes one want to just pinch her cheeks and tear them off.

The moment Ye Cang heard of money, he immediately tidied up his wolf-head hood and his somewhat messy hair. Moving his hood to his shoulder, he patted Little Blue Feather’s feathers. “Brother PureSoul, as someone who loves animals, a gorgeous pet is waiting for you. Right Little Blue Feather...?”

“No eat! No eat! I die! I die!” Little Blue Feather replied. Ye Cang struck with a chop, leaving behind a burst of feathers and a ‘Ga’ like bird sound.



NalanPureSoul looked speechlessly at Little Blue Feather, who had fallen onto the ground looking wronged. That egg just now, the first thing you think of is to eat it. The pets in your party must have jumped out of your pot where dangers are everywhere. However, thinking about the pet, he could only grind his teeth, “Alright! I’ll pay half first...”

“That’s fine. Thanks for your patronage...” Little Ye Tian shrugged, accepting 100 gold along with a red egg. She passed it to Ye Cang together with the toad egg.

Since NalanPureSoul, who didn’t know the details, was around, Ye Cang shouted, “Altar!”

SpyingBlade, FrozenCloud, and Wu Na facepalmed. He was about to start showing off again. He piled up the surrounding vegetation into an elaborate pattern, then he placed the eggs in the middle and began executing the nine word incantation, “Ling! Bing! Dou! Zhe! Jie! Zhen! Si! Zai! Qian...”

NalanPureSoul watched expressionlessly. Taming a pet needs something as complicated as the nine word incantation? Something so eastern styled, you can’t be serious... I wasn’t born yesterday.

With the effects of Ye Cang’s taming skill, the eggs gradually cracked; a fiery red chick and a green tadpole were born; immediately being given the name Little Cock and Emergency Ration the Second.

NalanPureSoul took his pet, saw its name, and his chest immediately tightened. When he discovered that there was no way to change it, he felt blood rising up his throat. He glared at Ye Cang, his body trembling, “This name...”

“No need to thank me. Take good care of it. Such a cute little chicken...” Ye Cang said, smiling kindly towards the little creature.

“It’s a phoenix...” NalanPureSoul said.

“Nani? Kinishinai...” Ye Cang shrugged. He then looked at everyone while holding the extremely dejected tadpole and said, “Who wants it?”

“I...” Zhang ZhengXiong didn’t even get to finish speaking before it was forcefully given to him by Ye Cang.

Zhang ZhengXiong saw that the system had paired him with the tadpole in his hand and didn’t know whether to laugh or cry. He actually wanted to say, ‘I don’t want it. Definitely, don’t give it to me. I want a dashing pet to pick up girls...’ “Bro, can you...”

“As expected of my little brother, you have good taste. You don’t have to say it. Even when you were small, you’ve liked to catch tadpoles. You always used to talk to them. Thank me...” Ye Cang patted Zhang ZhengXiong’s shoulder and said.

Zhang ZhengXiong looked like he had eaten a lemon. Understanding Ye Cang, he knew if he continued speaking, he’d definitely get in trouble... Sigh.

SpyingBlade imagined a paladin, or more accurately a war priest, riding a toad. Such an exotic scene.

NalanPureSoul was still hung up over his pet’s name. He looked at Ye Cang’s back and sighed. He blocked the name. It would be fine as long as no one found out.

# Chapter 465: Giant Marsh Crocodile

---

Ye Cang and the others crossed the mossy stone bridge and arrived at the cave on the other side. Inside, there were marsh shrubs everywhere. The tunnel gradually became more and more spacious. On the left, they saw a path going up along the wall, while in front, the tunnel continued to expand.

“Let’s go up on the left first. We can look down from there too. It’s too dangerous to just go straight in.” NalanPureSoul proposed.

Ye Cang brought everyone to the cliffside path. It lead to a steep precipice covered in shrubs.

Ye Cang saw a red bush ahead of them. Even its branches were a fiery red. It had fruits that looked like they were boiling inside. He identified it.

Flame Berries (Super Rare - Ingredient): An uncommon ingredient with extremely harsh growth conditions. Consume to gain a permanent +1 to all attributes, +10 fire resistance and a chance to learn a fire spell.

Ye Cang directly took the entire plant. Then he pushed aside some shrubs to have a look down the cliff. In the darkness, the first thing he noticed was a marshy pool. It was at least a hundred meters across. All around the pool were giant marsh crocodiles, but Ye Cang cared more about that pool of water. There was clearly something in there. He turned his head and saw Zhang ZhengXiong mining the exposed ores. Their luck was pretty good, getting a bunch of mithril.

Ye Cang reported the situation at the bottom in detail. Everyone pondered over it. If they were to disturb that sort of area, practically all the crocodiles would be roused. There would inevitably be a group battle, but this quantity would be troublesome. It would be alright if they could divide them. The crocodiles had thick and hard skin; they are still vulnerable to fire,

but not as much as the toads.

Zhang ZhengXiong was indifferent about it. However, many came, they will all be killed. If worse comes to worst, they could just escape. He turned and saw Weak Sauce training his tadpole and the little phoenix to dance and cheer; it even had a serious look as it led its cheering squad.

“It would be better if I pull. First, we’ll block the path with molotovs. Once they get through the fire, follow up with acid and glue flasks. We should be able to deal with it like that.” Ye Cang looked to Lin Le who nodded.

Little Ye Tian added, “Let’s go down. Although we have the height advantage here, if they manage to break through and the boss comes as well, we’ll have no room to retreat...”

NalanPureSoul also thought the same. He wanted to mention it, but heard Little Ye Tian say it first. As expected of the child prodigy who could counter MistyVeil. He followed everyone back to the tunnel.

Ye Cang made his way over. While walking, he didn’t forget to snatch the fruits and herbs from all the plants. Watching him made everyone feel ashamed. He kept an eye out for any activity with Eagle Eye and slowly approached. Instantly locking onto 20 targets, he activated Anya’s Berserk Shot. The hail of bullets attracted every crocodile in range. While they were still looking around curiously, his Explosive Shot hit right in the middle of the pool, creating a splash of water. After the splash, a nearly 16 meter long crocodile charged out.

Ye Cang broke out in cold sweat, then immediately shouted, “The crocodiles and the crocodile boss are all coming!! Everyone be careful!!”

NalanPureSoul’s chest tightened. Such a terrible pull, but it’s not unwinnable! These guys should have many trumps!

The moment Ye Cang returned, Lin Le threw molotovs to the ground, and after the sea of fire, he threw the speed reducing glue vials. He held the acid vials back, ready to use at any time.

“Lele, A’Xiong. If the boss charges over later, everyone help them create an opportunity to push the boss back...” Ye Cang said as he began to shoot rapidly in overload mode. His two guns rained fire bullets down on the enemy. Zhang ZhengXiong lowered his body, ready to tank the boss at any time and give Lin Le an opening; then the two of them could work together and buy time to let everyone else get rid of the small ones.

Lin Le directly summoned his handcart while holding onto his acid flasks.

NalanPureSoul prepared to match them with a rain of fire. Ye Cang’s fire bullets inflicted heavy damage on the swamp crocodiles engulfed in the fire. The ground trembled as it approached closer. Everyone had prepared themselves. When they saw the enormous crocodile boss leap out of the fire, Zhang ZhengXiong activated his Fearless Charge, but he didn’t trigger Super Speed this time. Though the ramming power was not as great, it was still enough to slow it down for a moment. With the help of the sticky glue, Zhang ZhengXiong was only knocked back a small distance. Lin Le charged with his cart and smashed it into the side of its face, stunning it. Without stopping, he crushed a gold coin, activated his strengthening abilities and fiercely smashed a Handcart Homerun into its raised jaw, directly sending it flying back into the sea of fire. Then together with Zhang ZhengXiong, he waded through his own sticky and disgusting glue, back to the others.

Ye Cang saw that it was about time. He began his casting of Light Strike Array. A flaming light instantly shot out of the stone floor like a stalagmite, illuminating the area. The moment the Light Strike Array mixed with the sea of fire, NalanPureSoul grasped the air with his hand. A violent explosion caused everyone to shake along with the tunnel.

NalanPureSoul couldn't help but sigh. Their combination of molotov, large area fire magic, and his Conflagrate was truly mighty, many times greater than on their own.

Wang and Wu Na had been thinking about it for a while now, but their magic couldn't even compare. It wasn't even on the same level. Looking at the big bang in front of them, they felt weak. This was the strongest in China, the heavenly kings? Such freaks.

Against the crowd of heavily injured crocodiles that managed to make it out, Ye Cang took a few steps then pointed, "Assenroche's Finger!"

A violent arcane attack blasted them back into the fire once again.

"Lele, get on the ramp. Block off their escape with glue flasks and molotovs! Just incase they try to run!" Little Ye Tian said, observing every movement on the battlefield.

As Lin Le passed by her, he knocked her on the head with his fist, "I said call me Brother Le!"

"Eh, Brother Le..." Little Ye Tian said while pouting, but her heart was shouting out, Damn Lele! Smelly Lele! Always picking on me!

Lin Le quickly leapt onto a ramp. Running up to a higher point, he saw that the crocodiles in the sea of fire really were trying to escape. He threw out molotovs like a madman, increasing the area of fire, then threw glue flasks on their path of retreat. Ye Cang took a few strides, then leapt into the air. In mid air, he disappeared, shadow stepping to Lin Le's shadow that was created by the fire. Locking onto the boss in the sea of fire, he took out his ballista, summoned his shadow weapon - heavy crossbow, and readied the queen and king bee bolts. "Lele, hit it with an acid flask..."

"Okies, brother Lil' White!" Lin Le tossed out two acid flasks onto

the crocodile boss's armored back. The acid's green smoke mixed with the black smoke of the fire. The boss wanted to try and break through again, and tear apart the enemies beyond the fire. Just as it was about to try and leap out, a Meteor Shot and heavy crossbow sent two bolts piercing through its weakened armor and nailing it to the glue area.

“Lele, Little Ren and I will go block off their retreat. Just leave this area to A’Xiong and the others...” Ye Cang put away his ballista and called Little Blue Feather, “Lele, you go down first!”

Lin Le grabbed onto Little Blue Feather's claw and glided down to the rear. The tigerkin Little Ren rushed after him. It issued an astonishing roar, buffing everyone with its battlecry. Jumping along the grooves along the cliff, it reached Lin Le's side in just a few leaps.

## Chapter 466: Three Headed Sea Monster

---

Ye Cang drew his shadow pike and jumped, turning into three shadows that dashed in midair towards Lin Le. However, the distance was a bit too far. He began to fall once the skill duration ended. He then activated flame lotus. Like a swooping swallow, his pike stabbed down into the back of a crocodile, creating a blooming fire lotus. Then with a twist and a pull, he used the opposing force to once again send himself upwards. Using his pike like a pole-vault, he moved through the escaping crocodiles, leaving fire lotuses in his wake. He used his inertia to gracefully pull the pike back and landed on the tigerkin Little Ren's shoulders, posing like a gymnast after his routine.

NalanPureSoul and FrozenCloud had seen the scene of Ye Cang flying across the flames. What kind of movements are those...

Flanking them on both sides, the group very quickly cleared away the crocodiles. Even the boss was firmly restrained by Lin Le, Zhang ZhengXiong and FrozenCloud. From beginning to end, it never got past the glue and died a gloomy death on the sticky liquid. Ye Cang quickly vaulted into the sea of fire! Lin Le jumped onto Little Ren's back. With a few leaps, Little Ren passed by Ye Cang and arrived at the boss's corpse. Lin Le got down and looted it.

"Damn Little Ren! Even you are against me!" A furious shout came out from the flames.

The tigerkin Little Ren gulped, its expression both confused and afraid.

"Don't be scared, everyone will protect you..." Wu Na said.

"Yeah, don't worry." FrozenCloud also consoled it.

When Lin Le finished looting, a shadowy figure flew out of the fire. He looked at the corpse, then instantly pounced at the



tigerkin Little Ren's tiger head. He bit down right on top of its head. "Teach you to help steal my corpse. You ingrate! Aaahhh!!"

Little Ren covered its head and wailed for forgiveness. It looked towards its teammates who had said that they would help, but only saw their backs. They had gathered around Lele to look at something. They never had any intention of helping! Wu Na peeked at the figure of Ye Cang as he ferociously gnawed on Little Ren's head and a shiver travelled down her spine. She said to Little Ye Tian, "You go soothe him."

Little Ye Tian shook her head fiercely. "Father still remembers the time with the gift box... If I go, there is a 50% chance that I'll have my head bitten... I don't want to go. Nana, you go. I've calculated, you're the safest, around 20%..."

20%? It's still pretty high. It's better not to go. She decisively ignored Little Ren and looked at the equipment dropped by the crocodile boss.

A good while later.

Little Ren hugged its head as it looked fearfully at Ye Cang, holding a bitter grudge towards Wu Na and FrozenCloud who had said they would protect him. The two women could only give him an embarrassed glance.

Ye Cang began to divide the loot, "One dark gold crocodile leather breastplate. This breastplate is pretty good. Its defence is even higher than metal armor and it's much lighter. There is also a dark gold magic necklace, as well as a skill book - Giant Crocodile Tail Sweep; it seems to be a martial type skill."

"That necklace, I want it." NalanPureSoul said without hesitation, because it was a very high quality necklace. It not only had high Spell Power and Intelligence, it even came with a damage prevention skill.

Ye Cang directly gave it to him and said, "You've used up your

pick, next time you'll have to roll or bid."

"I know..." NalanPureSoul nodded. Though Wang and Wu Na also had eyes on the necklace, they didn't say anything given NalanPureSouls damage output and usefulness. One person had dealt half a team's worth of damage.

"Breastplate? Who wants?" Ye Cang had some desire for it. His was still gold and hadn't been changed for a long time.

Ye Cang saw that no one wanted it. Not even SpyingBlade needed it, so he directly equipped the white crocodile leather breastplate. It matched very well with the tiger-skin coat and wolf-head hood. Satisfied, he began to distribute the skill book.

Giant Crocodile Tail Sweep (Giant Crocodile Carlokai - Beginner Level): Instantly employ your body's strength to launch a fierce revolving kick, dealing 255% damage to the target. Can cause stun, knockdown and knockback. Cost: 20 rage, 15 energy. Cooldown: 2 minutes.

Though Ye Cang knew it would go to FrozenCloud, he still asked before giving it to her.

FrozenCloud took it and learned it. A grappler could never have enough control skills, let alone one with such high damage.

With distribution completed, Ye Cang began to clean up the battlefield, harvesting all the crocodile bodies. Arriving at the pool of water, he harvested the shrubs and fruits. Lin Le sat against a stone and began to fish. As for everyone else, they ate some non-lethal food and drank some magic springwater. NalanPureSoul saw Lin Le fish up a treasure chest as well as tens of uncommon fish and sighed. This team was really squeezing this instance dry.

The sleeping Lin Le sensed something and pulled, stronger and stronger, then extremely strongly. He was practically on the verge of falling in when he woke up with a pout and pulled with all his strength. However, he was still getting dragged towards the water.

“Brother Lil’ Xiong. There’s a big fish! Come help! Lele is going overboard!”

Zhang ZhengXiong wiped his hands and went over to help grab to rod, but it became harder and harder. The two of them were still sliding towards the water. Ye Cang sighed, “Isn’t it just a fish. Two grown men can’t even pull up one fish...”

“No! Bro! This thing is really strong!” Zhang ZhengXiong explained.

Lin Le also nodded, “Brother Lil’ White, hurry and help!”

Without a choice, Ye Cang walked over and grabbed onto the rod with them, but the opposing force continued to grow. The three of them were pulling till their veins were popping out, yet were still sliding forwards. SpyingBlade sensed something wrong and called everyone to help out. It turned into a big tug-of-war. With a final big tug, a dragon-like creature with a lizard body and three snake heads came out with a terrifying roar.

Ye Cang identified it from behind the splash of water.

Three Headed Sea Monster (Advanced Boss - Abyss - Uncommon): A descendant of the nine-headed Hydra. Impure bloodline; estimated to be the result of interbreeding with some other creature. However, it is still an extremely aggressive monster. Good at water and poison magic. Its heart and eyes are extremely precious ingredients.

“Drag it out of the water! Get it to the shore and kill it! Otherwise if it submerges, we stand no chance!” NalanPureSoul cried out alarmed and also excited. This is a secret boss! A specially triggered secret boss! This sort of boss has typically very good drops; it was a secret boss after all.

Everyone used this chance as they had already overpowered the three headed sea monster, to drag it ashore. Lin Le leapt to its butt and summoned his handcart for a Handcart Charge, boosting it

along. Then a Handcart Homerun smacked it flying about ten meters further. Zhang ZhengXiong continued with a Fearless Charge, triggering Super Speed. He instantly crashed into it, sending it flying even further, into the sticky liquid left over from before.

## Chapter 467: Breakthrough to Level 20

---

Ye Cang drew his guns and began to shoot. Lin Le directly threw molotovs, burning it. The ranged players all began to attack, while the melee players made their way over.

The flaming three headed monster's eyes flashed blue and its three heads all opened their mouths, shooting high-pressured blasts of water. Zhang ZhengXiong had just charged up, only to be blasted by the water into the pool. Ye Cang shadow-stepped to NalanPureSoul, dodging an attack. The moment he avoided it, he took out his ballista. "Brother PureSoul, help me to make an opening..."

NalanPureSoul narrowed his eyes. That ballista's might and penetrative power were truly powerful. He threw out a hellfire ring while simultaneously summoning a rain of fire. Then, along with the molotovs, he grasped the air. The boss' water-blasting body trembled under the might of the explosion and stopped. Ye Cang's Meteor Shot and Shadow Weapon - Heavy Crossbow shot out. The queen and king bee bolt each hit a head. An anguished wail echoed throughout the cavern. But that wasn't all. Ye Cang put the ballista on his back, drew his shadow pike, then with a mighty step, he threw it, pinning the final head on the stone floor.

Lin Le seized this chance to quickly leap over. Sword Drawing Arts! He soared over, attempting to behead it with Execute! As it had three heads, Execute dealt three times the damage. Blood spurt out of its throats like a fountain, though the blood was green. It quickly covered FrozenCloud and the others. Having just crawled out of the pool and charged back with Leap Attack, Zhang ZhengXiong chopped into its chest. Blood splattered once more. Poisonous green blood now covered the area around it. Zhang ZhengXiong saw that his health was falling by 20 points every second. This was even factoring his high poison resistance! A cool breeze immediately blew the poisoned blood off of everyone,

turning the poison effect into the Flowers In The Wind healing effect.

NalanPureSoul turned back and looked at the flowery fragrance coming from Ye Cang's extended hand. A really good skill.

Ye Cang reached back and retrieved his ballista, beginning to quickly reload it. Once reloaded, he returned it to his back, then reached out and recalled his nearly extracted pike and charged at the boss to assist the offensive. A violent wave suddenly blasted out in a ring around the boss, knocking everyone back once more. But in that instant, Zhang ZhengXiong had activated Desperate Prayer! Everyone's life was pulled up to a safe amount. The ranged players all found stalagmites to hide behind. Immediately after the wave passed, Little Ye Tian began to replenish everyone's health, even activating her scepter's mass healing ability. She saw that the boss had freed itself of any movement restricting effects and was charging towards the pool. "Don't let it get in the water!"

Wu Na cast an Ice Spear and Chilling Wind, attempting to slow it down, but couldn't even delay it for a second. Wang quickly cancelled his water elemental summon and called out the earth elemental stone man to block. It barely managed to delay the boss until everyone arrived, but it was still pulverized in the end. Using the last of his mana, he continued to chant his summon earth elemental spell.

SpyingBlade and Little Ren leapt onto the boss from behind. Using their swords and blades, they stabbed into the left and right heads. Ye Cang's Shadow Strike and Dashing Straight Thrust instantly stabbed his pike into the back of the middle head. The boss howled in pain, poisonous blood spurting out fiercely, but no one had time to care. The entire party ate a soldier food. Little Ye Tian cast a mass holy shield. Fang Ci's withered shades also joined the battle, shooting shadow arrows.

"Roar~!!!!" The three heads issued a heart-rending roar, which echoed around the cavern. NalanPureSoul's casting was

interrupted by a fear effect. The people on its heads fell off. SpyingBlade instantly activated his status-effect removal skill. Ye Cang also used Swift Retreat to instantly remove the fear effect. In the air, he reached out and smacked down hard on the drum at his waist.

“Boom~!” A sound wave dealt tens of damage to everyone, but woke them up.

Zhang ZhengXiong, with his high will, wasn't affected in the slightest. On the contrary, he ran up in front of the boss, stopping it from advancing into the pool of water, just meters away. His heavy axe activated its weapon skill and a crescent like chop swept past its three throats, making green blood spurt into the water.

“Tactics! Pursuit! Attack!” Ye Cang used his two tactics skills. NalanPureSoul saw the instant increase in physical attack attributes. Pursuit gives movement and attack speed. Attack must be the new one then... Seems like a damage and strength boost. If I remember correctly, a Tactics skill has two stances. The opposite of pursuit is retreat. The opposite of attack must be defence. So many good party skills.

In the air, Lin Le dodged past a sweeping head. He summoned his handcart as he landed, and directly activated Handcart Tornado. Rotating with his handcart, he once again knocked it back tens of meters. The three headed monster, seeing that it was getting further away from the water, became even more impetuous. However, unlike a low-end player, what a high-end player fears the least is a berserk monster. Berserk might increase its attack power, but at the expense of its reflexes and intelligence. The most terrifying enemies were calm-headed, intelligent bosses.

Ye Cang jumped and twisted to avoid a water cannon. A spear stabbed through its eye, then he vaulted over its head. Pulling out the pike, he dropped it back into the shadow and during that short time in mid-air, he pulled out his preloaded ballista and sent a bolt piercing into the back of its head. Returning it to his back, he

instantly drew his two pistols and calmly activated two skills; A Precise Shot and an Explosive Bullet shot towards the heads on the left and right.

Zhang ZhengXiong activated the amplification device on his shoulder, increasing his strength. A Barbaric Tackle sent the boss retreating once more. His heavy axe glowed with the light of Holy Judgement, striking once on each head. NalanPureSoul looked at the besieging close-range fighters. Each was a top-tier expert, including the tiger. Recalling the ring-shaped wave from earlier, if not for the area healing as well as the soldier food, he really didn't know how he would have dealt with it. He reached out and grasped the air. Everyone suddenly backed up. Lin Le once again threw molotovs. NalanPureSoul casted Conflagrate.

“Congratulations, you’ve slain a Three Headed Sea Monster. Receive 4000 experience.”

“Haha, I’m level 20!” Ye Cang received the system reminder that he had reached level 20. Looking at the level rankings, he was the second to reach level 20. The first was that FlameEmperor guy. As he was thinking about that, a system message saying that the body was looted brought him back from his thoughts. He immediately roared, “My corpse! You guys...”

“Bro, congratulations on reaching level 20.” Zhang ZhengXiong had noticed that Ye Cang was looking at the level rankings, so he hadn't disturbed him. Now, he quickly interrupted and congratulated him.

“Team Leader, congratulations.” FrozenCloud also offered.

“Brother PaleSnow, congratulations on reaching level 20.” NalanPureSoul also offered his good wishes. Everyone wished him well to distract him from the corpse.

Ye Cang replied with a vain smile, “It’s nothing, it’s nothing. It’s what a president ought to do...”



“Brother Lil’ White, amazing! Level 20!” Lin Le said while pushing the boss loot over.

Ye Cang happily received them. Although he felt something was off, he still moved onto distributing equipment. “Two dark gold, both rings, one physical, one magical.”

Eye of the Three Headed Monster (Dark Gold - Abyss - Uncommon)

Category: Ring

Requirements: None

+20 Strength

+20 Dexterity

+10 Damage

+35 Penetration

+5% Damage

Heart of the Three Headed Monster (Dark Gold - Abyss - Uncommon)

Category: Ring

Requirements: None

+20 Intelligence

+20 Wisdom

+20 Spell Power

+25 Spell Focus

+5% Spell Effect

## Chapter 468: Fire and Spice

---

Everyone gasped. Although they had no skills, the rings' attributes were neat and fierce. As expected of drops from a hidden boss. NalanPureSoul was also interested. The ring gave everything a spellcaster needs and the numbers were very impressive.

“Physical first then. SpyingBlade has already filled all five ring slots. Lele and A’Xiong too. Then this ring will go to me, I only have three...” Ye Cang said calmly.

SpyingBlade was speechless. That’s only because you are too much of a showoff to fill them up! “I also need it. Three of my rings are only Distinguished, one is gold, and the other dark gold.”

“It seems like we must determine the winner again...” Ye Cang stepped forwards. SpyingBlade also slowly advanced. Then the two of them acted. NalanPureSoul watched as their hands changed signs numerous times.

“Scissors!” Ye Cang finalized.

“Paper! Hah...” SpyingBlade sighed. He had been a tad too slow to change into a fist.

“Hehe, keep practicing.” Ye Cang smiled, directly putting on the ring. Then came the turn of the magic ring. “What should we do, bid or roll?”

“Let’s roll.” NalanPureSoul regretfully chose to roll, because he wanted to save his gold for the last boss. Though this ring was good, but the need wasn’t pressing.

Wu Na nodded, agreeing to roll. Little Ye Tian faintly frowned. Why agree to roll? It’s not like he would fight over it since there is still the final boss. But recalling his status as one of the four heavenly kings, she chose to remain silent.

What made NalanPureSoul delighted was that he actually won this roll. Ye Cang looked away and said, “A pity I already got a ring

from this boss, otherwise I would have definitely won...”

“Eh.....” Everyone rolled their eyes at his words. Being able to achieve the impossible result of 0, where did he get his confidence from.

“Haha, haha...” NalanPureSoul laughed. Actually, Brother PaleSnow’s chest and corpse mode is quite charming when seen from afar.

Ye Cang then flayed and cut up the three headed monster’s corpse, skillfully taking out its heart and eyes. NalanPureSoul saw him intentionally separate the heart and eyes, presumably the best parts.

“Everyone take a break. Lele, go fish. I’ll go clear out the surroundings.” Ye Cang said and then began to pick mushrooms, fruits, and herbs. Zhang ZhengXiong also wandered around, seeing if he could find any exposed ore veins. He actually managed to find 3 top-quality mithril veins as well as a magic iron vein under the water. He even managed to mine a few uncommon gems and crystals, among which was a glowing, light element crystal. This made him very happy, as it allowed him to upgrade his crystal armguard again.

NalanPureSoul sat by the pool and recovered. He smiled sweetly as he watched Ye Cang wipe the area clean. Then he turned to see Wu Na and FrozenCloud gossiping. Hearing that Ye Cang would be in the five schools competition, he raised his brows. Five schools competition? Seems fun...

Lin Le fished up a treasure chest, and opened it while asleep. He threw the gold and jewels into the handcart and continued. SpyingBlade couldn’t help but sigh. The cheat has evolved. He could now open chests as he fished.

Once everyone was ready, they continued deeper. On the left of the pool was another upwards path. Countless stone bridges connected towering cliffs. The monsters blocking their way were

swamp monsters, so they all figured that the final boss would be a swamp monster type.

It really did turn out to be a swamp monster. Unlike what everyone expected, what awaited them on the final cliff was a humanoid shaped creature. Its entire body was rotting and it had fungus and spores growing from its flesh. Its body was covered in roots. Though it wasn't big, everyone felt a sense of danger.

Fungus Undead (Advanced Boss - Abyss - Hybrid): An undead human mixed with a fungus creature. Danger index super high. The red mushroom on its butt is a super rare ingredient!!

Ye Cang backed up and explained the situation to everyone. Looking at the plateau full of spores, it seemed like it would be extremely dangerous. He faintly narrowed his eyes, thinking of a strategy. Recalling the difficulty of the swamp walker fight, he said, "This battle, I'm afraid the melee will all have to go into the flames..."

"Since it hasn't discovered us yet, are there any foods or consumables that increase fire resistance...". SpyingBlade didn't want to talk about food, but in order to overcome the boss, let alone the final boss, he could only clench his teeth and make this proposal.

"Let me try." Ye Cang brought everyone further away and began to cook a soup. He added in fire type ingredients and finally sprinkled it with some ground fire crystals. The pot began to emit a red light. A red skull appeared above it.

"Let's eat, it has fire resistance." Ye Cang looked at the 55 points of fire resistance of his new recipe, then said this happily.

"Bro, you're not eating?" Zhang ZhengXiong felt like something was wrong.

"I'm ranged, so I don't need it..." Ye Cang said calmly.

All the melee fighters exchanged a glance. A few seconds later,

there were a few extra red faced corpses on the ground. Among them was Ye Cang, who had frozen in a rebelling pose.

NalanPureSoul wiped his forehead. It makes sense. If it was me, I would also want to pull the one who made this thing down with me. He was a bit curious though. There was a bit left, so he extended his tongue for a taste. My god! He was nearly knocked out on the spot. He took out his magic springwater and began to chug. Just a drop on his tongue and he had nearly been knocked out.

Weak Sauce hopped over, got itself a bowl and devoured it. It wiped its mouth, looking very satisfied. NalanPureSoul learned something new. Demons like to eat spicy things, the spicier the better. He summoned his own fire demon to drink some soup. After drinking the soup, it gained a temporary 25% increase in fire damage. This cooking was really not simple. It had so many hidden effects. He tried drinking a bowl himself. He felt like his mind had been set ablaze. Before hitting the ground, he checked out the effects on himself. +13 Fire Spell Power, +8% Fire Damage dealt...

He slowly woke up and saw Ye Cang's extended hand, "Brother PureSoul, you actually chose to share our hardships. Much better than that bunch..."

Saying that, Ye Cang looked at FrozenCloud and the others with contempt. NalanPureSoul broke out in cold sweat. I only wanted to try out an extra effect. However, it wasn't worth testing out. That stink is too much... He quickly covered his mouth and waved his hands in denial.

Little Ye Tian saw NalanPureSoul's actions. Father's cooking probably had an extra effect. It must apply to demons and fire type warlocks. She recalled Dodola, the travelling chef that was the source of her father's cooking skills. He even cooked for elementals and stone-people. Even ores could be cooked. She helped her father note down this special cooking knowledge: 'spiciness and the fire element'.

# Chapter 469: Control Spores

---

“We’ll start when everyone is ready.” Ye Cang examined everyone. Seeing nothing wrong, he informed Zhang ZhengXiong and Lin Le that they would be the vanguard.

“Wait. Lele, cover the field in molotovs for my first Conflagrate.” NalanPureSoul urged.

Lin Le nodded, then went up to the stone bridge with Zhang ZhengXiong. Suddenly, he madly threw out molotovs, covering the entire stage in flames. NalanPureSoul motioned for the two to back up a bit, then reached out and motioned his hand. The entire stage was immediately engulfed by a violent explosion. A wail came from within.

“Go!” Ye Cang shouted. Zhang ZhengXiong directly charged into the raging fire and intercepted the smoking hybrid undead. The surrounding spores were ignited by the flames, appearing like stars. Ye Cang faintly frowned, he couldn’t see. He had Little Blue Feather activate eagle eye and watch from atop a stone pillar. Locking onto the boss from above, he began to shoot.

NalanPureSoul faintly smiled. So Eagle Eyes could be used like that. A really good strategic skill. Wang summoned his earth elemental and had it charge into the fire to help.

Zhang ZhengXiong sighed at this small sized boss. Despite its size, it had extraordinary strength. However, this space was now completely unsuited to plants, spores, nor fungi to grow, so it was firmly suppressed. Hearing a howl of grief, Little Ye Tian sensed something was wrong. She suddenly turned and saw that their stone platform had begun to sprout mushrooms and spores! Dust began to mix into the air. “Father! This area is infected!!”

The moment Little Ye Tian said that, a spear of ice shot out from Wu Na’s staff at her. Luckily, Little Ye Tian had noticed her peculiar actions and barely dodged it. Seeing the approaching

spores, she urged Little Ration to take flight. Fang Ci also decisively rushed across the stone bridge and into the fire. Wang wasn't so lucky. He was controlled by the spores and ordered his earth elemental to attack Lin Le. Lin Le was knocked back a few meters by a giant rock fist, and pouted, "That damn bastard Wang! He's dead! He dares to betray us!"

Controlled and unable to speak, Wang heard Lin Le and scowled miserably. Given Brother Le's temperament, I'm going to suffer a calamity.

Ye Cang quickly jumped off the cliff and shadow stepped to Little Blue Feather's perch. He grabbed its claws and let it bring him to a nearby groove on the cliff. Occupying the high-ground, he saw that NalanPureSoul had been forced to the edge of the plateau. Throwing down a rope, he shouted, "Catch!!"

NalanPureSoul caught it and jumped off the plateau, swinging towards the cliff wall. Ye Cang pulled up the rope, raising him up. Since the spot wasn't very wide, the two of them were practically squished together as they attacked. For example, when Ye Cang drew his ballista, NalanPureSoul had to lift a leg to give him space and lean his chest on Ye Cang's back for balance. It made his face red and heart skip, "Brother PaleSnow, how about having your pet bring me to a nearby groove."

"Alright. Little Blue Feather, bring him..." Ye Cang called out. Little Blue Feather flew over. NalanPureSoul jumped out and grabbed its claw, gliding to a nearby protrusion.

SpyingBlade dodged an ice arrow, then turned and looked around the sea of fire. He saw Little Ye Tian and the kagu bug circling around in the sky and the traitorous earth elemental. Something must have happened at the back! When he saw Fang Ci charge into the front lines, he became even more certain.

The tigerkin Little Ren performed a combo on the earth elemental. Lin Le violently finished it off, but the moment it was

smashed Wang summoned it again, making Lin Le clench his teeth in rage. It's not like it was hard to kill it, but he was prevented from helping Brother Lil' Xiong.

Ye Cang was about to fire his ballista when he saw that the earth elemental kept nagging Lele. Wu Na was also disturbing the others and trying to put out the fire. He decisively drew his two pistols and blasted the two in the head a couple of times, disposing of them, then he calmly went back to aiming at the boss that Zhang ZhengXiong was arduously holding back. He summoned his Shadow Weapon - Heavy Crossbow and unleashed a Meteor Shot.

Wu Na and Wang were killed by Ye Cang, which gave SpyingBlade and the others some more room to breath. His judgement was correct. In this sort of situation, if they were unable to clear the status, killing them was the best choice. The two of them were ordinary anyways, it would be fine to just resurrect them later.

Fang Ci connected himself to Zhang ZhengXiong with Shadow Chain, sharing the damage. The pressure was immediately greatly reduced. Little Ye Tian began to focus her healing on the two of them, which reduced the pressure on her too.

SpyingBlade ambushed the boss from behind, stabbing through its throat. Pulling out, he unleashed a devastating combo! He leaned back and activated Dark Trial. Ten black flashes struck at its back.

SpyingBlade frowned. Such high damage reduction! Especially against physical damage. It was about as strong as the marshwalker. Luckily, it was an undead. Perhaps it would be hard for a weak priest, but for this team, undead merely meant that the tanky Zhang ZhengXiong would also output a massive amount of damage. Leaning to the side to dodge a thrusting root, SpyingBlade created an opportunity for Zhang ZhengXiong to hit with Holy Judgement. The final holy strike left the undead shuddering.



The supporting FrozenCloud seized this chance to perform a Wyvern Kick, then a full powered Shoryuken smashed into its chin. Using her spinning momentum, she comboed into her 2nd Stage Shoryuken, hitting it into the air, following up with a Kamaitachi - Sweeping Wind! As it fell to the ground, she gathered all her qi! The moment it landed, Collapsing Palm! Assault Charge! Triple Strike! Then a sudden 360 spin for a full powered revolving kick - Giant Crocodile Tail Sweep!

The combo directly blasted the hybrid undead into a nearby wall. Ye Cang's Meteor Shot and Shadow Weapon flashed by at this time, nailing it there. The position was perfect. Light Strike Array! Hellfire Ring! Rain of Fire! And then Conflagrate instantly covered the cliff wall in an explosion. The stone quaked. The hybrid undead could be seen struggling in the flames. It angrily ripped away the bolts, then raised its head and glowered at Ye Cang and NalanPureSoul, issuing a horrible roar.

Ye Cang saw that the spores were beginning to spread upwards. He moved along the wall, stepping on the grooves, shooting his gun every few steps. NalanPureSoul and Little Blue Feather worked together to change locations. The two of them both knew that this couldn't go on. They slowly made their way towards the sea of fire on the plateau. The two of them, one like a shadow creeping along the cliff wall, the other carried by Little Blue Feather, leapt into the sea of fire. They began to prepare for their final storm of attacks.

Hovering in the air, Little Ye Tian and the kagu bug Little Rations were also forced into the fire to avoid the spores. She began to go all out, healing everyone. Even though it was Lin Le's fire, it dealt considerable damage. Despite having high fire resistance, it would still be tough to endure for a long period of time. Each of them ate their soldier food. Zhang ZhengXiong even used his two uses of Desperate Prayer. But the hybrid undead's body recovered too quickly and its health was quite high. Everyone

could only go all out, fighting against time. Lin Le didn't dare to stop adding to the fire, as the moment the spores reached them, they would all be controlled and lose.

Everyone was racing against time. Fang Ci was the first to fall after the Shadow Chain's duration ended. Little Ye Tian focussed her healing mainly on Zhang ZhengXiong, Lin Le, and NalanPureSoul. Holy light, molotovs, hellfire, and fire continuously burned the zombie. Those three were the most important. Her father could revive himself, so she didn't have to worry. Moreover, his Healing Stream was even more powerful than her own healing, let alone the fact that he still had an area healing skill. He would be fine for a while longer...

## Chapter 470: Cang and Pure

---

The battle was intense. The contest of attrition in the sea of fire greatly pressured them all. Luckily, the hybrid undead was also showing signs of tiring. This let everyone sigh in relief. Ye Cang's spear rapidly stabbed, creating fire lotuses. NalanPureSoul also went all out.

Little Ye Tian saw that their healths had once again entered the danger zone. She had everyone assemble to cast a mass holy shield, then activated her scepter's area healing ability and any other heals she had available! All her equipment skills were used up. Ye Cang also released a flowery wind. However, in the fire, the effects were greatly reduced. It was still better than nothing though.

The situation was pressing. Everyone fought with their life on the line, even eating their final daily use of soldier food. They did their best to deal damage, fighting to make every second count. SpyingBlade released one last skill before collapsing.

Lin Le was also forced to his knees after releasing his Sword Drawing Arts and a Whirlwind Strike. "Brother Lil' White, Brother Lil' Xiong, everyone, avenge... Lele... Gaaaah!!!"

The tigerkin Little Ren fell at his side. Even the non-combatant Weak Sauce was cooked like a thanksgiving turkey, emitting the fragrant smell of roast meat. FrozenCloud toppled over mid-Shoryuken. "Team Leader, it's all on you. You musn't loot the corpse. I beg... you..."

Little Ye Tian sighed as she cast one last healing spell on Zhang ZhengXiong. She was out of mana. Without protective skills, she perished in the fire with Little Rations. "Father, it's up to you..."

NalanPureSoul sacrificed his fire demon to obtain temporary immunity to fire and a damage boost. He looked at Ye Cang and shouted, "Brother PaleSnow! The final attack! You should still have mana!"

Ye Cang dodged past a claw and began to cast. Zhang ZhengXiong blocked the hybrid undead, completely attracting its aggro. Using his last bit of life, he issued an incomparably crazy roar, “Roaaar!! F\*\*k your mother! Dieee!!”

Even NalanPureSoul couldn't help but be shocked by Zhang ZhengXiong's imposing manner. Even the boss was a bit scared by his aura and roar. His pretty eyes opened wide. A real badass. It looks like there will finally be a main tank among the Heavenly Kings. His little brother is it? As expected of someone who carries Brother PaleSnow's hopes.

“A’Xiong, dodge! We still need you!!” Ye Cang shouted. Zhang ZhengXiong's Barbaric Tackle knocked the hybrid undead a few meters back, then he turned and opened his holy text, casting a healing light on himself, before moving to the edge of the fire where it was weaker. He prepared to dodge the kamikaze attack.

The light of Light Strike Array burst up to the top of the cavern. NalanPureSoul reached out and grasped. The two explosions illuminated the entire stone plateau. The light shone on the stalactites, making them look exceptionally beautiful.

“Congratulations, you've slain the Fungus Undead. Received 4300 experience!”

“Congratulations, your party has conquered the Dark Cave! Create a self-introduction of your party, otherwise in 3 hours, the system will automatically create an announcement.”

Ye Cang sighed in relief. It seemed like he wouldn't have to explode. Looking at his remaining 45 health, he quickly cast a healing stream on himself, perfectly using up the last of his mana. He hopped out of the flame area, onto the stone bridge, and began to recover. The corpse is waiting for me! Hurry up and extinguish!

Zhang ZhengXiong was at the far edge so he could only shout, “Brother PureSoul! It's up to you to stop my bro!!”

NalanPureSoul suddenly sensed a heavy pressure. Now he knew how ThornyRose felt. Killing a boss should be a happy thing, but to have to guard against this sort of accident afterwards too... If it were cursed by somebody's \*\*\*\* hands... "One equipment..."

Zhang ZhengXiong frowned. This genderless bastard was trying to profit from their misfortunes! Losing one piece was better than getting nothing at all though. After losing so many people, if it was all ruined, some people might even want to die. This was the final boss! As the fire slowly burned out, Ye Cang's state became more and more twisted. "Now!!"

The fire had weakened. Ye Cang couldn't wait anymore and began to sprint. NalanPureSoul pretended to attack, then grabbed hold of Ye Cang tightly. The two of them rolled around on the ground. Ye Cang crawled on the ground like an evil spirit, dragging NalanPureSoul with him. NalanPureSoul's scalp tingled. Only after experiencing it himself could he feel how frightfully attached Ye Cang was to looting. If he didn't try his best, he would be thrown off. However, they were still advancing at turtle's speed.

Zhang ZhengXiong first resurrected Lin Le.

The moment Lin Le got up, hearing Zhang ZhengXiong's shout, he ran to the corpse.

"That's mine! Mine! MINE!! Can't you see, my divine hand is trembling! There will definitely be a godly artifact this time!! MINEEEE!! GODLY ARTIFAAAACT!!" Ye Cang accelerated in his insanity, but he could only watch as Lin Le calmly looted the corpse. Disappointed, he sunk into the embers. NalanPureSoul unwillingly got up. The moment he let go, Ye Cang gnawed on his head in revolt. "Damn Brother PureSou! There is no grievance between us! You dare to hinder me from looting a boss! I hate you!!"

NalanPureSouls gasped. It hurts! "Brother PaleSnow, calm down! Calm down! I'll get mad if you keep biting!"

Zhang ZhengXiong ended up watching the unbearable scene of the two of them wrestling like grade-schoolers. He sighed, then sat down to recover his mana. The next task was to wait and revive Little Ye Tian. It would be faster for their two skills to be on cooldown.

Everyone was revived one after the other. They looked at the bite marks on NalanPureSoul's and Ye Cang's faces. They had clearly gone through a fight.

"Brother PureSoul, I lost my mind a bit back there. Sorry about that..." Ye Cang calmly smiled. He reached out and put a hand on NalanPureSoul's shoulder.

NalanPureSoul looked at him suspiciously. Since when did he speak so nicely? He also put an arm around Ye Cang, "It's fine, it's fine. I was also at fault..."

Ye Cang once again acted up, attacking from close range. NalanPureSoul did not take things lying down. He leaned away to dodge and aimed a bite at Ye Cang's head. Ye Cang sneered. You're still too soft! He flung his head and bit back. The two of them wrestled together again.

Wu Na, FrozenCloud, and the others sat to the side, drinking and eating the edible foods, while watching the wrestling match. Things were becoming messier. That always graceful NalanPureSoul was unexpectedly wrestling with Ye Cang, ignoring his image and tearing at each other...

SpyingBlade laughed. Truly an inconceivable person. He can even make others drop their fetters and fight like madmen. He thought of Cold Moon's pledge and vow of loyalty, despite her cold attitude; and that massacre at the institution. Just what kind of person was he? Perhaps no one really knew...

The two people calmed down. Ye Cang apologized sincerely, "Sorry, Brother PureSoul. I lost my mind again. Don't mind..."

“It’s fine, it’s fine. I also took it too seriously.” NalanPureSoul smiled gracefully. Though he spoke like that, he was secretly still on guard. Recalling the bite marks on his face brought a bit of a blush to his cheeks.

# Chapter 471: Hybrid Spore

---

Ye Cang took the things Lin Le passed over and began the distribution. Looking over the items, there was actually a black gold accessory. Besides that, there was a pair of dark gold leg protectors, and dark gold light cape. “Let’s divvy this up. What should we do with this accessory?”

Hybrid Spore (Black Gold - Abyss)

Category: Accessory

Requirements: None

+30 Strength

+30 Constitution

+5% Strength

+5% Constitution

+65 Poison Resistance

Have a chance to be immune to other spores.

+50 Armor Penetration

Attacks have a chance to infect target with spores, dealing damage over time. Can stack three times.

Paralysis Spore - Grow: A type of growing paralytic spore. Will spread poisoned dust to the surroundings. After 10 seconds, it can burst to spray spores into the surroundings. These spores last for 9 seconds, and will inflict a stack of poison on their target every 3 seconds. Cooldown: Regenerates one spore every 2 hours. Can carry 4 at once.

Paralysis Spore - Burst: When a target gains three poison stacks, this can activate, causing the poison to burst for 100 damage and also cause paralysis or stun. Burst will also cause surrounding targets to take damage over time, healing you through the spores



for 10% of the resulting damage.

Everyone gasped. It was a Black Gold equipment! Dark gold were already as rare as phoenix and unicorns, let alone black gold! This was a super top-quality item even better than dark gold. It was even the rarest accessory! There was a huge difference between gold and black gold equipment! NalanPureSoul saw the attributes and skills and sighed. This thing would be useful for a very, very long time, but it clearly wasn't for himself.

"A'Xiong already has accessories. This accessory, Lil' Dino, SpyingBlade, Lele, you all discuss it..." Ye Cang originally wanted it, but he recalled that they didn't even have an accessory yet. He himself had a pretty good one that was only lacking in stats, but it had a godly life-saving dodging skill. He wasn't sure if it could be upgraded.

"Give it to Lele..." FrozenCloud was interested, but she knew that Really New Village's Three Brothers were the backbone of their group. Especially Lele's close-range burst damage. He often broke everyone out of difficult situations. SpyingBlade also couldn't help but want it. It was an ideal assassin-type accessory. He recalled the gold accessory that they got from the marshwalker last time. It was still with Shaking Bear. He had yet to see it used once. "A'Xiong, I've never seen you use your spore accessory or Frozen Corpse Eye..."

"Everytime we fight, if it's not in fire, then it's in water or in the sky. How the heck could I use it. I used it before on the battlefield, they're pretty useful, but this one is clearly an improved version. It can't be compared to this weak thing." Zhang ZhengXiong looked at his three full accessory slots. He was the only one in the team with three accessories. Ye Cang had one, and this one would go to Lele.

"I also agree to give it to Lele." Though SpyingBlade wanted it, he already had an accessory while Lele didn't.

Though Lin Le wanted the accessory, but seeing this poop like thing, he could only reluctantly take and equip it. Seeing his health and damage increase made him feel a bit better.

“The dark gold leg protectors are heavy armor. A’Xiong, yours are dark gold already if I remember right. Lele too. Lil’ Dino, can you wear it?” Ye Cang shared the leg protector’s stats. FrozenCloud looked at it. Though the requirements were high, but she had just enough. She faintly nodded and took the equipment. Though it raised her defence, her equipment’s appearance became a pair of hot pants like shorts. Her white thighs were as exposed as ever... She nodded, satisfied.

“The cape can only go to PureSoul. It’s all A’Xiong’s fault for agreeing willy-nilly...” Ye Cang directly gave it to NalanPureSoul. Wu Na and the others had heard that it was him who had saved the nearly cursed corpse, so they didn’t lay blame. It was better than having nothing at all. They remained mentally healthy. NalanPureSoul had made great contributions anyways.

Zhang ZhengXiong broke out in cold sweat.

NalanPureSoul smiled as he looked at the attributes. He took it without arguing, “Thank you Brother PaleSnow.”

“If it weren’t for you, I would have looted a +1000 attributes artifact...” Ye Cang’s words made everyone roll their eyes. NalanPureSoul only chuckled awkwardly, not knowing how to respond.

“Brother PaleSnow, your team should edit the message and issue the system announcement. I hope you can mention my Freedom Alliance.” NalanPureSoul reminded. Ye Cang shrugged, then indifferently edited a bit before releasing it.

“[Happy Firmaments - Fraternity - Corporation -Conglomerate - Invincible in the firmaments - Whether in the heavens or underground, always available for catering, medicine, engineering projects, equipment, hairstyling. Price negotiable. Sorry, our mini

guild is currently not recruiting. We wish everyone a happy gaming experience. PS: just a friendly reminder o(n\_n)o Everyone can shorten this name to Happy Firmaments Fraternity because we will be changing the name irregularly. Oh right, we're also in Thorns and Roses.] and [Freedom Alliance] have worked together to conquer the open instance - Dark Cave!"

NalanPureSoul's chest tightened. Only now did he discover the benefits of having a long guild name. It took up so much room! It took up almost the entire message board!

Just as everyone was getting heated up over the system message, FlameEmperor also conquered an open instance dungeon - Wild Ruins. The two messages were only off by about two seconds.

The players around Black Rock City flared up. An open instance meant that they could farm some equipment! People at White Stone City were looking forward to the opening of the underground pier. Whether it be for trade or social interactions, the instance would promote it all!

CloudDragon had just found an open instance, only a step too late. He sighed, however they still had to get the first clear. The first clear was incomparable to the later ones! Moreover, they could greatly increase their guild's and White Stone City players' strength. He looked at the system message; that guild name was so long that it practically took up the entire space. If one didn't carefully read through the nonsense, they would never notice that Thorns and Roses was also advertised...

Ye Cang gathered the red mushroom on the boss's butt, then decisively dismembered the body and stored it in the cart. Then he led everyone out of the Dark Cave.

"It's become an instance that anyone can challenge. Will the equipment drop a grade?" Zhang ZhengXiong looked back after leaving.

"The grade will drop by a lot. How long until we can re-enter?"

NalanPureSoul asked.

Ye Cang glanced at it, “About a week.”

“Alright, I’ll say goodbye here then. The guild has many things that I need to take care of.” NalanPureSoul waved goodbye to everyone and left.

“Father, I’ll go to Anya’s shrine and have them speed up the progress. You should return to the city first and experience the class progression after level 20. You can check on the underground pier while you’re at it.” Little Ye Tian quickly planned things out. Ye Cang declared a temporary free time. The party disbanded for now, each going to deal with their own matters.

# Chapter 472: Free Time

---

For the long awaited free time, SpyingBlade contemplated on whether to play around with assassination missions or go to White Stone City and mess with CloudDragon. “Team Leader, I’m going to White Stone City. I’ll probably cause some trouble for CloudDragon. That’s not a problem right?”

“It’s fine. Play as you wish. If you get discovered, I’ll take care of it...” Ye Cang’s words made SpyingBlade break out in cold sweat.

“How will you take care of it...” SpyingBlade decided to ask.

“I’ll just say I don’t really know you...” Ye Cang said as if it was obvious.

SpyingBlade ended the conversation. Such a godly solution, so insightful.

Ye Cang found Linda in Black Rock City’ Goddess Association and asked about his progression.

“You can indeed further your studies. Accept Anya’s blessing.” Linda faced Anya’s wild statue and taught Ye Cang three advanced skills.

Wild Leap (Anya - Ranger / Hunter - Beginner Level): Rapidly jump to a distant location. Movement speed increased by 30% for 3 seconds. Cost: None. Cooldown: 30 seconds.

Powerful Pierce (Anya - Ranger / Hunter - Beginner Level - Passive): Greatly increase the penetrative power of ranged weapons. Improved by related attributes.

Hunter’s Soul (Anya - Ranger / Hunter - Beginner Level): +20% dexterity, +10% movement speed. Activate to double dexterity for 15 seconds. Cooldown: 12 hours.

The one Ye Cang cared the most about was the last skill. The effect of doubling dexterity was great, let alone the 20% passive

dexterity and 10% passive movement speed. Although the cooldown was long, this was a big move used to clinch victory in the most crucial moments. He knew this much at least.

Leaving the goddess association, he saw many people packing up and preparing to go to the Dark Cave. As for those already in the Black Peaks, they were working on conquering it.

FrozenCloud brought Wu Na with her and the two of them leveled and passed their time normally. Fang Ci was dragged away by Wang. Zhang ZhengXiong was practicing his forging in Black Rock City. Lin Le stayed at the Black Peaks and was in charge of maintaining security at the Dark Cave. That was ThornyRose's request. Since Ye Cang didn't have time and Zhang ZhengXiong needed to practice forging, the job went to the free Mad Devil Le.

Little Ye Tian was speeding up the construction of the supply depots; for example, the general store, shops, blacksmith and food stores. If nothing went wrong, it would be completed within a few days. Meanwhile, Ye Cang had finished learning his skills and arrived at his garden. It seemed the plants were growing healthily. He took out the fire berry bush and directly planted it into the dirt.

"This sort of plant needs a moist and oily region. Planting it in this swamp area would be best." Makarlo approached from behind him and stroked his white beard.

"Oh..." Ye Cang recalled that the place he had harvested it from seemed to have been like that. According to Makarlo's instructions, he replanted the fire berry bush. Thereafter, Makarlo imparted him with some planting knowledge and shared his own experiences.

"Congratulations, you've received Plant Cultivation Identification." The system prompted.

Ye Cang discovered that he could now more or less identify these plants' preferred environments. He looked around at the different growing zones. He clearly remembered having mixed everything

together. Makarlo must have helped to take care of it. He said sincerely, “Thank you for your help, teacher Makarlo...”

“You flatter me, boss.” Makarlo showed a friendly smile. “Sir PaleSnow, why have you gathered so many rare plants?”

“Cooking...” Ye Cang said bluntly.

Makarlo froze, then laughed. “Haha, as expected of sir. Not bad, that is a good use. It follows the way of nature.”

Makarlo originally intended to teach Ye Cang how to compound natural medicines, but immediately dropped the subject. Cooking was also a good choice. He thought of Lin Le, perhaps he would be a better candidate. He was sir’s companion and had alchemy knowledge. Cooking? It made him recall a certain person. Master Dodola. A legendary explorer. A legendary scholar. A legendary chef. Creator of an avant-garde school of cooking for all races.

Ye Cang soon left his plantation, because the growth period had yet to finish, especially for those rarer plants. He only harvested a few of the less rare mushrooms.

Leaving his garden, he arrived at the underground pier to observe construction. For military use, it was still early, but 30% of it was open to trade and commerce. The rest was still being worked on around the clock. He greeted Marquis Azshara, who was personally overseeing the military ports, before returning to Black Rock City and logging off.

Half-Moon Lake.

Ye Cang continued to supervise his two disciples’ dance/martial arts practice. As for how the two felt about this, they were both afraid and hopeful. Afraid because being beaten a few times today was inevitable. Hopeful because his serious teachings would help them improve quickly. It was the so-called love and hate relationship. As the two women were thinking of this, they gasped. Their two arms and legs, butt, and abdomen were all hit by that

willow branch. Ye Cang yawned and said calmly, “Don’t doze off. Snap out of it... Now.”

The weekend arrived. Zhang ZhengXiong received a notification from Zhao ShaoFeng and Li LiJia. He brought Ye Cang, Lin Le, Little Ye Tian, and FrozenCloud to the top of the third administrative building.

Zhang ShaoFeng looked at the white-haired Ye Cang. This could be considered their first meeting. Li LiJia never would have imagined that this guy who had never done a thing could become the eastern regions king and commander of the holy war. He was even in the list of the school’s 10 most influential figures and in a rather high position too.

“Combat training is beginning. I hope you can participate in this week of training. Everyone there will be members of Lin Hai’s team. Training together is very important...” Zhang ShaoFeng skipped the nonsense and got to the point.

“Bro, what do you say?” Zhang ZhengXiong was a bit unwilling but still consulted Ye Cang for his opinion.

“Course credit...” Ye Cang said calmly.

“Sure...” Zhang ShaoFeng smiled.

“Bonus...” Ye Cang continued.

“As appropriate...” Zhang ShaoFeng continued to smile.

“Then we’ll participate. I’m bored these days anyways. Oh right, I have a friend who wants to participate with us. She’s skillful...” Ye Cang pulled FrozenCloud over and said.

“Of course. Su BingYun, acting department. A powerful martial artist. A member of the capital’s team...” Zhang ShaoFeng knew about FrozenCloud’s background.

Li LiJia examined FrozenCloud with squinted eyes. The second daughter of the Su family. It was unknown as to why she has been



so close to Ye Cang's team T-105 recently. She even jumped ship to come over.

# Chapter 473: Training

---

“When is it?” Ye Cang raised his brow and asked.

“You’re the only ones not there. Hurry and prepare to go to the city center.” Li LiJia smiled bitterly.

Ye Cang shrugged silently, then led his group out of the third administrative building to the hovering train station. They rode the train to the city center.

The city center was the area surrounded by the four great districts at the center of the city. The backbone of the college. Headquarters of the post-graduates. Location of the command center. Lin Hai’s most important science buildings were also in the city center.

Zhang ShaoFeng watched as they headed there wearing their beach shorts and muttered, “If only those guys wouldn’t cause any trouble.”

“You think that’s possible? When have they not caused trouble? They’ve already started a holy war...” Li LiJia smiled bitterly. Zhang ShaoFeng smiled with her. From problem children to the overlords of the east district. Popular with the students and residents. If they called, tens of thousands would answer.

City Center, training grounds.

Ye Cang walked in wearing flip-flops, beach shorts, and eating a popsicle. At the same time, Sheng QianYi brought the student council members over.

Ye Cang glanced over to Sheng QianYi. Ignoring the student council’s hostility, he took the lead to enter. He didn’t even consider greeting them, not that he would recognize them.

Zhang ZhengXiong looked at the student council’s Zhou Meng, looking for a fight. His large hands stretched out, grabbing him. Zhou Meng retaliated by brushing his hands away, but Zhang

ZhengXiong just smiled evilly. With a throw, he tossed Zhou Meng at a doorpost, then laughed contemptuously at the student council members. He was followed by a bouncy, lively Lin Le, a calm Little Ye Tian, and a somewhat anxious FrozenCloud.

Shen QianYi pushed up his glasses, sensing the horrifyingly brutal, oppressive aura coming from the back of Zhang ZhengXiong. "Such astonishing strength and skill. His talent is no less than Qin ShaoTian's..."

Zhou Meng raised his brows. Although he had been a bit careless in the previous exchange, that monstrous strength and pressure couldn't be concealed. This was T-105's number one thug, the human gundam - Zhang Zhengxiong. "A bunch of arrogant bastards..."

"You're not their match and have no right to say that..." The west district's Fang XinRu said. Zhou Meng glared at her, then snorted and walked to the side silently.

"Less talk. Let's go in..." Zhou NingZhi followed Sheng QianYi into the building. The others followed, not daring to speak in front of the excited Sheng QianYi.

Ye Cang and the others arrived at the reception room. What made him happy was that the one receiving them was instructor Wang. "Yo, Old Wang, long time no see..."

Instructor Wang saw Ye Cang's group of three and trembled all over. These three bastards! He endured it and didn't pounce on them. "You're in room CPA-591. This is your room key."

"Thanks, Old Wang. Next time, let's grab a drink." Ye Cang took the key and smiled politely.

FrozenCloud followed Ye Cang and the others. She turned back and saw instructor Wang looking at them, grinding his teeth in rage, as if he wanted to eat them alive. She gulped, wondering what exactly had happened between them. She suddenly recalled a

conversation with Nana. She had mentioned an instructor named Wang who was ravaged, stripped, and turned into a trap with a stun grenade under his crotch. That was probably him...

Their path passed by the training ground's lounge. Everyone walked in and saw nearly 100 people there performing various kinds of training. Among them, there was no lack of familiar faces. For example, the blonde from the Holy War, Sun Yu. The beach-clothed group walked in, their appearances very eye-catching. Everyone inside looked over; some with enmity, some with respect, though most of them were provocative.

Sun Xue looked over at Lin Le who was focusing on eating his popsicle. She recalled how she had been intercepted by him last time. They were unable to determine a victor at that time. She couldn't even get near that White Hair. That silly looking man stuck to her like glue. His attacks all used softness to counter strength, used slow to counter fast.

Ye Cang looked at the basic training area. He yawned, then brought everyone to their room to watch dramas. From the start, he never had any intention to train.

FrozenCloud wiped the sweat on her forehead. Is this really ok? "Team Leader, should we also go..."

"Sisters 2 plays at 2:30. Let's talk about it after..." Ye Cang said, laying down listlessly on the ground and staring at the screen with dead-fish eyes. He propped his head up with one hand as he continued to yawn and flip through the channels. He saw news that the show had been delayed, "Dammit, it's been delayed until tomorrow. Let's go. Get changed and go down."

FrozenCloud went to the washroom and changed into her training clothes: a black sleeveless shirt with military pants and boots. Her hair was tied up into a high ponytail. She took a deep breath. Lin Hai was a school with many experts. She couldn't be careless! She opened the door and saw Ye Cang's group. Her mouth

gaped wide open, then she immediately broke out in cold sweat. The four of them, big and small, were all dressed up as american football players. She took a deep breath.

“Let’s go.” Ye Cang patted his chest guard, then the few of them set off. FrozenCloud quickly pulled them back and found some training clothes for Ye Cang and the others to change into. She brought Little Ye Tian into the washroom to personally take charge. When she came out once again, the three of them were bare to the waist. They wore the bottom half properly though. Can’t these three do anything seriously! She facepalmed, then watched as Ye Cang valiantly patted his thin chest. Even his ribs were faintly visible. After patting his chest, he immediately coughed twice, “Cough cough, yes... a real man should go into battle shirtless! Cough cough...”

Hey, team leader! You don’t have to keep flexing. FrozenCloud then looked at Zhang ZhengXiong’s astonishing body and gasped. Those muscles were full of explosive strength. She could feel her face becoming a bit hot. Moving onto Lin Le, it was just a normal man’s upper body that you could find in your neighborhood. No muscle, yet no excess fat. Even a little bit of a protruding stomach. He was currently picking his nose. The thought that Song Xin was his girlfriend felt like a thunderclap going off inside her head. The contrast between the three of them was too great.

Everyone gathered at the meeting place. A proud, middle aged instructor stood there. He had a long scar on his cheek, and a big nose. His oppressive aura made everyone feel afraid, unwilling to approach. Now, he was looking displeased at Ye Cang’s group of late-comers. This is the group that won the Holy War? Looking at Zhang ZhengXiong’s physique and aura up close, he relaxed his brows. Good guy. “Come earlier next time...”

Ye Cang rubbed his head, a bit embarrassed. He then turned and shouted at FrozenCloud, “It’s all your fault! Insisting on wearing this and wearing that. Wasting so much time. Instructor, please

don't mind. Women just like to dress up..."

"Yeah, yeah..." Lin Le voiced righteously.

FrozenCloud's chest tightened. She angrily rolled her eyes.

The instructor didn't inquire further. He moved directly to the main topic. "I'm the main instructor in charge of your basic training - Xiao YunHe. First, test your basic strength..."

Xiao YunHe let Ye Cang's group use the testing equipment. They started basic test for strength, technique, and intelligence. What made him happy was Zhang ZhengXiong's results for strength and technique, as well as Little Ye Tian's extraordinary results in intelligence. Su BingYun's abilities were also very outstanding. However, she paled in comparison to the previous two. The one called Lin Le had shocking technique, but his intelligence was traumatic. As for their so called general, he was only at the level of a common student, extremely ordinary; ordinary to the point that if it weren't for his appearance, there would be nothing special about him. Xia YunHe smiled. You think this is boring? He secretly increased the difficulty, but discovered that no matter how hard the test, he would obtain an average result; Not strong, yet not weak. After the technique test, he labelled Ye Cang as 'not ordinary'.

# Chapter 474: Personally Taking the Stage

---

A loud thud. Everyone looked over to see that Zhang ZhengXiong had bare-handedly hit the alloy testing machine into a V shape. Looking from the machine to that demon-god like body made their hairs stand on end. Even Sun Xue felt a shiver. If someone were to be hit by his full strength, would there even be any bones left intact...

Xiao YunHe also wiped the cold sweat off his forehead. Was this a show of strength?

Zhang ZhengXiong straightened the alloy board with his bare hands. Using his palm like a hammer, he did his best to flatten the uneven surface, then put the alloy board back in place. Stretching his neck, he went to the side for some water.

This action made the ordinary members tremble even harder. They looked at that pretty much fixed alloy board and recalled his nickname of the Human Gundam. He really was worthy of that name.

FrozenCloud finished her training and sat beside him with a bitter smile. She watched Ye Cang and Lin Le spar on stage. The two of them made all sorts of poses, but it was ended by Ye Cang's 'Grab By the Balls' attack on Lin Le's little peepee. After begging for mercy, Lin Le looked at him with eyes of worship. FrozenCloud could sense the strange gazes being thrown at them and immediately hid her face.

Lin Le had just started descending from the stage. Ye Cang was planning to join him and rest when an athletic figure jumped up. "So you're east district's general of the holy..."

The man didn't even get to finish speaking before Ye Cang took out a pepper spray and disabled him. Following that was a round of underhanded punches and kicks. Then he confidently jumped off the stage, leaving behind a distressed figure. He said proudly,

“That’s right. That’s me...”

After saying this, he walked to the resting area under everyone’s stunned gazes.

As for the other members, they all gasped. Just how unscrupulous was he!

“Using pepper spray. Damn, come fight with real weapons if you have the guts!” A tall, ponytailed woman wearing martial arts clothing said with disdain.

“Don’t need to bother my bro. Let me fight a round with you. I guarantee it will be great...” Zhang ZhengXiong suddenly got up and sneered. He looked at the nametag on her chest - Fang Xin.

Fang Xin raised her brows. I definitely can’t beat this guy. She smiled, without a hint of anger. “You’re not the one I want to go up against. You’re an extraordinary genius, unlike that white hair who only knows how to use shameful methods...”

Little Ye Tian was using her IQ to crush the training programs when she heard this. Her little brows furrowed as she turned to that Fang Xin. She recalled Ye Cang’s words. She wasn’t allowed to kill someone just because she was angry. Then she would be no different from those artificial humans. She sighed. Father is right. I can’t fail to live up to his expectations. Let’s continue to crush these computer matrices.

“Brother Lil’ White, this b\*tch is too hateful. Let me teach her a lesson for you!!” Lin Le suddenly got up. His ahoge stood erect. He gave off a ‘I’m going to kill her before the hot liquor cools’ feeling. FrozenCloud got up and scowled. This woman was just asking for a slap in the face.

Ye Cang reached out and waved Zhang ZhengXiong, Lin Le, and FrozenCloud back. “I’ll do it...”

He walked up to the stage under everyone’s gaze. Xiao YunHe confiscated his pepper spray. Ye Cang reluctantly parted with it.



His skinny figure stood there like a weakling. He looked like he couldn't even take a hit.

Xiao YunHe thought, That girl is seeking death. That team's most terrifying member is probably that white haired demon. He watched as Ye Cang advanced towards Fang Xin with a hand in his pocket. The other hand patted his chest as he coughed, "I... Cough cough, don't fear you! Come! Cough cough!"

Xiao YunHe saw that many people had broken into smiles. Their thoughts were obvious. This is the general of the holy war? One of the top ten most influential people? This immoral bag of bones?

Xiao YunHe immediately felt a chill. Woah, can this demon be any more evil? He's still acting. He's going to eat her whole!

Fang Xin was about to jump onto the stage when Ye Cang's figure appeared in front of her with a flicker. A fist smashed into her chest. His hand easily grabbed her by her left breast and lifted her into the air. He continued to grab harder, his smile remained calm as he listened to Fang Xin's screams. "Say it! I was wrong, and I shouldn't have spoken badly of you..."

"You!! Ah!" Fang Xin felt herself suspended in the air. That iron vice-like grip felt like it wanted to rip her apart as it grabbed both her left and right. She began to scream and cry, "I was wrong! I shouldn't have spoken badly of you, great general!"

Ye Cang released his grip. His hands returned to his pockets as he confidently walked off the stage. He saw FrozenCloud subconsciously cover her chest. An odd expression appeared on his face. "What are you doing?"

FrozenCloud quickly shook her head, "Nothing?"

She felt like she could see her inevitable end if Team Leader ever discovered she had lied to them. It would definitely be more cruel than this.

Xiao YunHe gasped. Truly extremely wicked. He completely

didn't care that the opponent was a woman and actually used it against her. Many women are turning pale from seeing this scene. This team's military might is truly great. Moreover, his speed is so fast. Even I had trouble seeing it. His speed has been confirmed. His strength is also not bad, enough to lift someone as easily as he would a chicken with a single hand.

Shen QianYi crossed his arms and raised his brows. So agile. That move was pretty good. He turned and looked at Fang XinRu and Zhou NingZhi. The two women were faintly shivering. Lesson learned. He turned and left the meeting place.

Xiao YunHe looked at Sheng QianYi. His heart sank. This is a true monster. Not even Qin ShaoTian is his match. A mysterious background too. With him participating in the five schools competition, Lin Hai definitely won't be third again. We have the strength to fight for first or second. He is the strongest of the student council presidents.

Lin Le began to practice with throwing knives. With four knives in one hand, and an apple blocking the target. With his eyes closed, he threw every knife out in different trajectories and they all converged to hit the bullseye, completely showing up the tang sect members. Xiao YunHe was flabbergasted. The more he learned about this team, the more he felt like the ones who evaluated them were naive dumbasses. This one move was enough to get him into the five schools competition team.

Ye Cang was forcefully dragged away by the dance competition members. Xiao YunHe knew that his dancing was the best in Lin Hai, so he directly made him the main contestant for dance.

The first day of training ended. Everyone returned to their rooms and looked at the new itinerary. The second day would be a combat test. Ye Cang's group of three exchanged glances. They nodded simultaneously. "Our expertise has come. What's our goal this time?"

“Blow up the command center?” Zhang ZhengXiong asked.

“We did that last time, there’s no novelty. Next.” Ye Cang shook his head. On the side, FrozenCloud broke out in cold sweat at the fact that they had actually done something so insane.

“Take out the combat test’s commander-in-chief?” Zhang ZhengXiong proposed once again.

“This...” Ye Cang raised his head and entered his one second thinking mode, then immediately nodded. “Ok, that’s it.”

Hey, do you have to make things so difficult for the instructors? Taking out the combat test’s command-in-chief? Is that even possible?

## Chapter 475: Masterchef

---

Ye Cang layed on the bed and flipped through the channels. There were no good dramas to watch, so he logged into the game to wander around. Arriving at the Goddess Tea Shop, he saw that it was thriving even more than before. Allie was preparing snacks, looking very fulfilled. He walked over and smiled, “Yo, how’s it going?”

“Super busy. I’m planning to hire two more assistants. You seem free...” Allie complained.

“You take a break. I’ll take care of things...” Ye Cang said considerately, then began to put on an apron. Allie broke into cold sweat. After working hard to make the store so popular, if this guy were to take part, it would definitely become a ghost town! She quickly blocked him, but the devoted Ye Cang still managed to make some homemade fried foods and pastries. He then forcibly added these dishes to the store’s menu.

Allie looked at those disgusting things and noted down beside their menu entries: ‘Extremely likely to be dark cooking. Without special circumstances, do not order.’

What Allie didn’t expect was that there were actually people who tried ordering it. When they saw the food’s stat bonuses, they gasped. It was equivalent to gold equipment! Moreover, they could stack them three times! Although it was a bit expensive at 50 silver but the attribute bonuses would be good for conquering a boss or an elite ranked adversary! After trying a bit, they hit the floor, foaming at the mouth. The people nearby broke into cold sweat. Though the attributes were good, it seemed that ‘disgusting’ didn’t even come close to describing it. They watched as those people slowly woke up and started to retch. It turned out the bonuses came with a price...

Despite all that, there were still some parties that bought some

for taking on bosses and elites. When Ye Cang learned that the sales weren't bad, he quickly made a ton and put them in the association's food storehouse. He looked at the speechless Allie and proudly said, "As expected, I knew my cooking would be a hit!"

Allie looked at the poisoned patients on the ground. Were these people retarded? She facepalmed and shook her head. It was fine, as long as it could be sold. They chose it themselves anyways. These things were mainly purchased as takeout after they finished eating normal foods, so it was fine.

Ye Cang hummed a tune as he cooked another homemade slime gel and zombie fluid marinated toad meat jerky. When the system notified that he had been promoted to master level, he rejoiced and began to send out messages informing everyone. The recipients only felt a profound shiver. They hadn't even had the chance to adapt, yet the trouble had leveled up again? They felt rather downhearted.

What truly surprised Ye Cang was that master cooking, besides allowing four food buffs, also rewarded him with an extra heroic talent.

#### Dodola's Gluttonous Knowledge (Heroic - Beginner Level)

+18% all attributes (affected by cooking level), +25% damage vs all living creatures, +30% to all cooking effects, and identification has a chance to discover the weak-points of living creatures.

His attributes were raised by quite a bit. As far as Ye Cang was concerned, increases to all attributes were also boosts to his intelligence which further increased his spell power and focus. He tried adding a point to Azeroth's Magic Proficiency and it succeeded in upgrading to advanced level. He then added a point to Dodola's Gluttony knowledge but the system pointed out that his level was insufficient.

## Azeroth's Magic Proficiency (Heroic - Advanced Level)

+25 intelligence. Intelligence is increased by 20% of all other attributes. Spell Power and Spell Focus is increased by an additional 60% of intelligence.

His magic and intelligence once again underwent a qualitative change. Ye Cang left the goddess tea shop satisfied. Next he went to the holy church's courtyard and saw Zhang ZhengXiong and a lean old fellow exercising. He conveniently passed by the summoner association where OldWangFromNextDoor and his instructor were once again doing strange things to their summoned creatures, making Ye Cang speechless. Entering the armed chamber of commerce; he saw Lin Le with scars drawn on his face, pointing his giant sword at a list of achievements. He was sharing his hardships and experiences with the members below the stage, receiving a very positive response.

Ye Cang sighed. He left, donning his wolf-head hood, rubbing the fur. Staring blankly at the sky, he thought to himself, "So bored... What to do... Let's go to the adventurer's association and receive a quest."

Ye Cang arrived at the senior's activity center and familiarly greeted all the elders. Approaching the mission board, he saw the newest commission at the top, "Earl Calata's daughter does not have the confidence to go outside. I hope someone can talk her into it."

"Accept. Let's go see what's going on..."

Ye Cang followed the mission's details and arrived at Earl Calata's residence. Since he was an earl himself, the guards let him pass after some simple inquiries. Earl Calata saw that the arrivee was the newly promoted Earl PaleSnow, part of Azshara's faction. Being in the neutral faction himself, he was still more inclined towards Azshara's side, so was not displeased by Ye Cang's arrival. On the contrary, he cordially invited Ye Cang in.

“That daughter of mine was born fairly pretty, but in the past few years, she has been bullied by some female classmates, who hate her. Ever since they wrote ‘ugly’ on her face, she no longer has the confidence to go outdoors. She’s even afraid of looking in the mirror. It’s giving me a headache. Since Earl PaleSnow has come, you must have an idea.”

“Mm. Earl Calata, let me give it a try. Where is she?” Ye Cang recalled some of the school drama’s he’d seen as he asked.

Calata brought Ye Cang to a room. Ye Cang turned to him and said seriously, “Later, no matter what you hear in the room, you can’t come in and should ignore it...”

Calata hesitated for a moment from doubt but nodded in the end. “I got it.”

Ye Cang entered the room and saw a girl with fluffy pink hair. She wore pajamas and sat there hugging her knees.

The girl glanced hesitantly at Ye Cang, exposing her face. Ye Cang’s brows rose. She was indeed quite pretty. Taking out a beautiful dress and high heels, he walked over briskly. He roughly pulled her up and stuffed a handkerchief in her mouth. Against the aggressive Ye Cang, the girl didn’t dare to move. She couldn’t even bring herself to resist or scream. She fearfully watched as Ye Cang tore off her pajamas and put the clothes he brought on her.

Having helped her change, he forced her in front of the mirror. Then, he took out a pair of scissors, held them up to her eyes and said, “Don’t cry and don’t move, or I’ll cut up your face...”

The girl was so scared that she quickly nodded, trying her best to hold back her tears. She watched as Ye Cang trimmed her hair and curled them a bit. He then put some powdery stuff on her face.

Ye Cang took out some jewelry from her dressing table and put some on her. Finally, he made her stand up. He looked at the results, seemingly very satisfied, before retrieving the

handkerchief from her mouth and letting her appreciate her own loveliness in the mirror. Seeing that she was staring blankly, he left the room with a smile and said, “It’s done...”

Calata was stunned when he looked inside the room and saw his daughter dressed luxuriously. She faintly swayed while staring at her own beautiful reflection. He never thought that his daughter could be so beautiful after being dolled up. No one would deny it if she were called a princess. He happily patted Ye Cang on the shoulder and said, “I’m beyond thankful, Earl PaleSnow. Butler, bring Earl PaleSnow to my collection and let him choose an item...”



# Chapter 476: Mountain Blood

---

Ye Cang arrived at Calata's collection and saw that it was mainly composed of art. The final item he looked at was a blood colored stone with an 'unidentified' description. He tried identifying it.

## Mountain Blood (Treasure - Uncommon)

Born in the depths of mountain ranges. An extremely uncommon treasured material. Can be worn on the body to improve one's health.

Ye Cang took the Mountain Blood and equipped it to his accessory slot.

## Mountain Blood (Treasure - Uncommon - Accessory - Material)

Category: Accessory / Material

Requirements: None

+25 All Attributes

+5% All Attributes

+25 All Resistances

+25 Defence

+5% Fortitude

+5% Will

Reduce damage received by 10%.

Reduce magic damage received by 10%.

Reduce earth magic damage received by 30%.

- Mountain Blood - Conservation (*Passive*)

When on mountain ranges, reduce movement speed reduction by 30%, increase movement speed by 10%, recover 1 health every second and 1 mana every 5 seconds.

After equipping it, Ye Cang could clearly feel an intimate connection with mother earth. There was a continuous supply of energy soothing him. This was a good thing. If looking at just

attributes, it was even better than Black Gold equipment. Although it didn't have an active ability, the passive was pretty impressive.

"Tell Earl Calata that I still have things to do so I will be leaving first." Ye Cang walked out of the collection room and directly left Earl Calata's residence.

When Calata heard back from the butler, he smiled. At this time, his daughter recalled the white haired man, "Father, where is that sir? Who is he?"

"Earl PaleSnow, Marquis Azshara's trusted aide." Calata smiled, "Jenny, remember to thank him properly when you see him again."

Jenny nodded slowly, then returned to gaze at her beautiful self. Her thoughtful expression became tinged with red.

Ye Cang was planning to go back to check out the mission board for any quests like this one; ones that were both simple and rewarding.

"There is a disturbance in the outer world. Would you like to go offline?"

Ye Cang left the game and saw FrozenCloud calling him, "What? So early, it's only 5 o'clock."

The room's speaker continued repeating, "All members please gather at the training hall!"

Having been instilled with the thought that girls shouldn't wake up early by Wu Na, Little Ye Tian somewhat agrily blasted the speaker with her telekinesis, then fluffed her pillow and continued to sleep. "Girls will become disfigured from lack of sleep..."

Ye Cang nodded his head proudly, "Well done. Back to sleep, back to sleep..."

Lin Le got up and scratched his butt. When he noticed that there was no more sound coming from the speaker, he fell back into the

bed.

FrozenCloud wiped her cold sweat. She vaguely knew that Little Ye Tian could use a telekinesis like power but seeing that besides Zhang ZhengXiong, no one else planned to get up, she sighed. She once again woke them up one by one. Ye Cang got up grudgingly, “Yaaaawn~~ Lil’ Dino, you’ve been with Nana too long and have become stiff. Hah...”

“Yeah, yeah...” Lin Le agreed while washing up.

Little Ye Tian was gloomily applying toothpaste. “My attractiveness will fall by 0.000001351%. It’s all your fault.”

FrozenCloud had no idea where the 0.000001351% came from. She patiently urged the four. Eventually, Ye Cang and the others arrived at the training hall. Zhang ZhengXiong saw that the place had changed. Wasn’t this a place for exercising?

FrozenCloud noticed Zhang ZhengXiong’s confusion and sighed, “The Five School’s competition, besides fights, also puts emphasis on sports. What sports are you good at?”

“Basketball, American football...” Ye Cang recalled that these were the sports they played most often.

FrozenCloud looked at Zhang ZhengXiong quietly. True, he really is suited for american football. With his physique and strength, he could crush anyone as a lineman. As a linebacker, his reflexes would easily allow him to slaughter the opponent.

Ye Cang looked at the issued virtual sign-up list. Looking through the sports, he selected basketball. The rest of them also selected basketball. Then in the additional notes, they added that they were signing up as a team and wouldn’t accept being broken up.

FrozenCloud was pretty confident when it came to basketball, especially as a small forward. Xiao YunHe sat on the stage. He wasn’t involved today, but still came to keep watch and maintain order. The instructor in charge of sports was a very sunny and

handsome, military uniformed man. He had a crew cut and a bright smile that made others feel comfortable. After his introduction, everyone learned that his name was Zhong Fei, the head instructor for sports. Ye Cang's group didn't know him but FrozenCloud did. One of the federation's top retired athletes. Good at track and field, basketball and many other sports. Now he was an instructor.

Ye Cang's establishment of the Hero Basketball Team was accepted and approved.

"A'Xiong, you be center. Lil' Dino, you can be power forwards. I'll be small forwards. Lele, Little Tian, you're both point guards..." Ye Cang quickly gave out roles, then they began to battle against other teams. Practically every team was crushed by Zhang ZhengXiong's ferocious slam dunks. In the end, all that was left was Qin ShaoTian's team, who had also fought their way to the finals. His teammates were Sun Xue, Yang Huo, Luo Chao and Zhang Yihe.

Sporting events prohibited the use of any super powers, super energies or mental abilities. There was a super power sensor on scene, any use would warrant disqualification and cause the team to directly lose the competition.

FrozenCloud looked at the last team and didn't dare to be careless. The ability of these few people were extraordinary. She knew Qin ShaoTian and Yang Huo. They were both targets for special investigation by the capital's five schools competition team.

"Let's start." Ye Cang said indifferently. With no one using any powers or qi, A'Xiong could crush anyone here.

During the jump ball, Zhang ZhengXiong jumped and grabbed the ball. Qin ShaoTian also flew up and got his hands on the ball.

Zhang ZhengXiong sneered and smashed the ball downwards. The two of them hit the ground. Zhang ZhengXiong pressed the ball down with one hand, forcing down Qin ShaoTian, who was

half-kneeling and holding it back with two hands. Being pressured by the power of pure muscle, Qin ShaoTian frowned. Such terrifying physique! It wasn't possible to overpower Zhang ZhengXiong without the use of qi! He tried to deflect the force and dodge to the side but Zhang ZhengXiong forced him back with a turn of the wrist. Qin ShaoTian's body leaned forwards with Zhang ZhengXiong's pull, then suddenly stopped, retaliating with one to two thousand kilograms of force.

Zhang ZhengXiong psyched himself up. Putting his other hand on the ball, he roared and yanked it towards himself. Qin ShaoTian let go, retreated a few steps and sighed. Strength-wise, he really wasn't Zhang ZhengXiong's match, let alone when his opponent also had exceptional technique.

Zhang ZhengXiong threw the ball to Lin Le, then charged through the defense line like a tank. With a wave of his hand, Lin Le easily sent it arching back to Zhang ZhengXiong. The opposing team didn't even dare to touch this 'missile carrier'. Luo Chao, who was bigger than the others, tried to intercept but was directly knocked out of the air by Zhang ZhengXiong. While flying out, Luo Chao could only watch as their backboard got devastated. Smiling bitterly, he listened to the sad cries of the backboard and the ball. When no other powers were involved, Zhang ZhengXiong was invincible when near the net. With his muscles exposed, Zhang ZhengXiong applied more pressure then suddenly a snapping sound was heard. The entire backboard and basket was torn off by him. He leisurely rested it on his shoulder and said, "Let's switch to a new one..."

There was no reaction from the testing machine, making everyone gasp. This was made with a super alloy! Although this wasn't the first time, the previous incidents were with the use of qi or a super power... There was never a case of someone breaking it through pure muscle strength. To think that he was actually holding back in the previous rounds. This was simply...

# Chapter 477: Fried Toad Sale

---

The referees assembled. FrozenCloud waited with the team. She turned and saw that Ye Cang had a popsicle in his mouth; who knows when he got it. He even held another one out to her, “Want one?”

FrozenCloud froze. She turned and saw Lin Le and Little Ye Tian straightforwardly sitting by the side and eating. Hey, we’re still in a competition!

“No need...”

FrozenCloud didn’t even get to finish before Sun Xue threw a shot from beyond the three point line. FrozenCloud wanted to rush over but a shadow jumped up from the penalty line and grabbed the ball before it began to fall. Block and possession completed. The spectators all looked stunned. What was this!? Absolute defence!? Don’t think of making a shot even from beyond the three point line? As for approaching the basket, one probably wouldn’t even get the chance to jump before getting crushed and Zhang ZhengXiong wouldn’t even need to jump.

FrozenCloud smiled bitterly, then took her popsicle and began to lick it.

Getting possession of the ball, Zhang ZhengXiong began to dribble and sprint. Luo Chao tried to intercept but was broken past in an instant by a few between-the-legs dribbles. Qin ShaoTian was also shocked. What kind of speed was that!? What kind of body could have such speed and coordination!?

In a few more steps, Zhang ZhengXiong once again jumped high and bombed the basket, making a violent sound. Sun Xue directly conceded defeat. There was simply no way to play.

In the end, Ye Cang’s team obtained the spot. Qin ShaoTian’s group was also added to their team as members.

Zhong Fei looked at Zhang ZhengXiong. This was simply a sports monster.

Ye Cang didn't bother with the other events. He brought his group back to their rooms. First they took a shower, then watched dramas. After finishing the episode of Sisters 2, he once again returned to the game and heard the ruckus in the city.

“Dark Caves! Currently on the old one! Looking for Plant User or Paladin! Those without patience don't bother! Those without ambition don't bother!!”

“Progress is so fast, they're already on the old one. Wait... the old one is?”

“The first monsters...”

“Eh, we are also fighting the old one. Those monsters are too abnormal, especially that swamp monster. Brother Hero and the freedom alliance aren't giving out guides either.”

“There's no meaning even if you have a guide.”

“True, but our team has already been wiped so many times. I heard that this other team is already fighting a boss. “

“Who is the first boss?”

“I hear it's a very abnormal fungus toad. That poison effect, without any antidotes, is simply guaranteed death.”

Ye Cang heard the gossip and thought of an opportunity to make some extra money by crafting some poison resistance foods. Honestly, most of his ingredients were things like green slimes, which all provided impressive poison resistance. He took out the ingredients from the cart, then parked it at the trade district as a food truck. He took out a white board and wrote: “Poison resistance items. Must have for clearing instances.”

The players immediately flocked over. The first customer tried a bite, then collapsed on the ground foaming at the mouth. A few

minutes later, he woke up, face pale. “The poison resistance is there but the taste...”

“Good medicine tastes bitter. You’ll get used to it after once or twice...” Ye Cang said indifferently.

Very quickly, it was sold out. NalanPureSoul and LordAsked also sent messages over asking for large quantities of poison resistance food. Ye Cang straightforwardly headed towards the dark cave instance entrance and set up a stall. The surrounding dead fungus toads were also taken away by him. He even improved and created a fried toad meat wrap recipe. With the new recipe, his cooking experience continuously increased. Although everyone who ate it gave him a bad rating, it still sold out rapidly. Nearly every party would buy a few before entering.

In the second and third day of training, Ye Cang only showed his face before leaving back to his room and continuing his great cooking undertaking. He made a killing, taking nearly 2,000 gold away from the playerbase. Ye Cang never thought that his recipe of fungus toad and a bit of green slime would earn him so much. LordAsked even spent 50 gold to eat his ‘Lazy Toad Wants to Eat Bagu Kagu Maggots and Slime Soup’ set meal and was left on the verge of death.

When ThornyRose learned how much Ye Cang had earned, she gasped. 2,000 gold. This would allow him to dominate the market and more. The antidote makers also earned quite a bit but it was nothing compared to this. Ingredients for antidotes were uncommon, while looking at this food, it was obviously just toad meat plus some easily found edible materials.

However, all of his 2,000 gold earnings went into construction costs in order to expand the instance entrance’s business. The fried toad meat sales were slowly diminishing. Ye Cang conveniently grabbed a stool and put up a sign. [Haircut, 50 silver]. Players all knew that his haircuts gave small percentage increases in stats so it gave rise to another craze. Basically every team would get their



hair cut, buy some fried meat, then throw their life away in the instance.

When LordAsked left the instance and saw the barber sign, he broke out in cold sweat and went over to have his hair trimmed. It was an increase in stats after all and 50 silver wasn't much.

Ye Cang's barber experience continued to increase until it finally reached advanced level. The Barber skill upgraded to Stylist. Besides an increase in the hair styling bonus, when styling in general, accessories also provided extra attributes. It wasn't much though, at most 1%.

Although the village around Anya's shrine had not been completely built, but the functional buildings had already opened for business. All the materials and equipment obtained from the instance were being sold here. With the increase in trade and commerce, the area became much more prosperous. The Fermianna tribe's armory had also released some material gathering quests. The rewards from the armory made all the players very eager. Besides conquering the instance, they could also come to farm prestige.

Ye Cang sighed. His experience gain from these two days of making food and hairdressing wasn't low. Although it couldn't be compared to directly killing monsters but it wasn't considered slow either. He once again made a big pile of fried toad. Hairdressing-wise, he had basically sold all he could. Then he put away his scissors and tools, tidied up and had ThornyRose send someone to watch his booth. As for himself, he returned to Black Rock City because today there was an auction at the high-end auction house.

As an Earl and also a frequent customer, the guards were already familiar with him so they let him pass with a smile.

The receptionist knew that Ye Cang was an Earl of Black Rock City, a famous person in Marquis Azshara's faction, so inquired

whether he wanted a private VIP room. Ye Cang shook his head and found a random spot in a corner.

The bits and pieces on display were all art pieces, which Ye Cang had no interest in. If little Ye Tian were around, she could probably pick out a few valuables but she was still needed over at Anya's. A book caught Ye Cang's attention. It wasn't even expensive; he bought it for about 10 gold. 'Master Reling's Introduction to Grappling Guidebook - Copy'.

Master Reling's Introduction to Grappling Guidebook -  
Foundation Level - Copy  
Read to automatically learn some basic grappler skills.

Ye Cang examined the booklet in his hand and then put it in his bag, that was for Lil' Dino.

# Chapter 478: Flasher Uncle's and Panty Uncle's Situation

---

“The next item is a map to Marla's hidden treasure...” The auctioneer declared.

Ye Cang's brows rose. A secret treasure! There would probably be many people fighting over it. Just as he thought that, everyone present hissed.

“Hey! Are you planning to run a proper auction? First it's Reling's introductory manual that you could get off a street vendor and now Marla's treasure map? I already have three of those. If you want, I'll gift one to you!”

“Yeah, yeah. You might as well close at this rate. Wait for something good before auctioning. Don't waste this old man's time.”

“Apologies. The goods this time are stuck en-route. Now that everyone's had their laugh, the next item is from the auction house's secret stash. Everyone will surely be pleased with it. As for this map, we'll give it out for free. Does anyone want it?”

When Ye Cang learned that Reling's introductory manual was basically a street vendor item to the natives, a secret item that could be obtained for 50 cents from a beggar, he stood up indignantly. “You actually dare to cheat me! Just because I don't know this item, you make me buy it at such a high price!? I'd like to file a complaint! This is too much! You dare cheat your customers!”

“What Earl PaleSnow says makes sense. You can get a pile of them for 1 gold, yet you dare to take over 10 gold for it. It really is a bit excessive.”

The auctioneer quickly smoothed things over. He not only treated Ye Cang respectfully but also gifted him the treasure map.

Ye Cang's brows rose higher as he pointed to the map, "You think I'm an idiot!? Giving me this!?"

"Hey, show some good faith. You actually give Marla's treasure map as an apology, are you making fun of us? Or are you new here and still don't know..."

The auctioneer this time really was new so was not really sure what to do. The old auctioneer quickly came out to apologize and pushed a little wooden box to Ye Cang. Ye Cang saw a rank 4 light elemental crystal inside. He currently didn't have any of this sort of crystal so sat down rather pleased.

Following that was the auction of some collectors items from the auction house's stash. The sales prices were very high, leaving everyone satisfied except for Ye Cang who found it rather dull. Next was the final item. He yawned and saw that in the old auctioneer's hand was a black case.

"The chest of misfortune. This is something rarely seen, but no one wants to open it. It's value as a collectors item is pretty good."

Ye Cang saw that it was a chest and began to bid. Finally, he received the chest of misfortune for 300 gold. He looked at the black chest in his hands.

### Chest of Misfortune

There is a high chance for bad luck to befall you upon opening, greatly reducing your luck. There is a nearly impossible chance to obtain the treasure of misfortune.

PS: The luckier one is, the more they will suffer upon opening.

Ye Cang gasped. This is simple the nemesis of my divine hand. Aren't I doomed if I open this chest!? He hesitated before reaching out with a trembling hand. I should let the others open it. Wang will have a better chance with that unlucky face of his. He put it in his bag, then left the high-end market.

...

Day 5's combat test. Ye Cang's group jumped off the helicopter then went straight to attack the command center. They took out numerous instructors, blacked out the system and succeeded in taking down the commander-in-chief. Then they sat in the command center, imitated his voice, and bossed people around. In the end, the entire combat test was like a field of jumping dogs and flapping chickens, and was forced to end.

When Xiao Yunhe rushed to the scene, the instructors and other members were all beaten and thrown into a pile. He arrived in the command center to see Ye Cang using the system to watch dramas while calmly and seriously using a voice imitator to give out crazy orders. The one called Lin Le was beside him making things worse, and that girl Little Ye Tian was controlling the entire system. They had everyone running around in circles. These brats... Especially that white haired one. He isn't your normal kind of vile. He sighed. If possible, he didn't want to let them participate in their school's combat tests again. As for at other schools, they would of course be the first pick.

In the end, the instructors unanimously agreed to excuse Ye Cang's group from further training and would notify them when the competition started.

Ye Cang and the others packed up a bit and returned to the east district. FrozenCloud thought back to the test and didn't know whether to laugh or cry. These guys were out of control. Even the instructors couldn't deal with them. Little Ye Tian was a special A Rank researcher; when those professors heard that the instructors might penalize her, they immediately rushed over and made a racket. As for the group's leader, it didn't even need to be said. When they returned to the east districts night market for a meal, they were greeted by a big banner and celebration. Old Wang even set up a feast to celebrate T-105 winning honor for the east district by taking out the command center. FrozenCloud recalled the words on the internet that told of how evil the east district was.

She then thought of their idols: Flasher Uncle, Panty Uncle, as well as T-105, and could only sigh. It was all true.

Returning to their seaside cottage, Ye Cang turned on the holographic TV and watched the news.

“Flasher Uncle’s new album ‘Rage! My Elephant!’ is selling like crazy! It’s the start of a new rock genre - Naked Rock! The sales have surpassed those of the capital’s Song Queen - Zhao Liya. It is even selling well overseas! According to the World Decency Committee, Flasher Uncle might be the first man who can be legally naked in public anywhere in the world!”

“Speaking of Flasher Uncle, everyone must also be wondering about Lin Hai east district’s other legend. With his scholarly temperament and his top hat never leaving his side, that’s right, it’s our beloved Panty Uncle! He’s started a new publication ‘Panty Uncle Talks about Fashion’! From his unique point of view and his accurate commentary, he has instantly become the world’s number one fashion commentator! No one can surpass his knowledge of undergarments. His Venus’s Smile is now already a priceless treasure...”

In the cottage, when the hardworking Wu Na learned about Flasher Uncle’s album sales, her chest tightened. She felt like a mouthful of blood was stuck in her throat. It looks like I’m really fated to be a nameless singer.

Flasher Uncle’s rise to international superstar was a heavy blow to her. The only good thing was that after Flasher Uncle’s rise, her own band’s number of fans increased by many times. Looking at the comments made her feel rather emotional.

“This is the band that played with Flasher Uncle, Panty Uncle, and the Devilish Gentleman?”

Wu Na’s heart froze. Hey, I’m the lead singer! The whole point of the concert!

“Oh, Flasher Uncle’s new album is selling well. Panty Uncle’s weekly publication is also doing well.” Ye Cang looked at the news and yawned.

“Roar! My Elephant! Bellow! My Elephant! Roar in the face of despair! Stand up when all is lost! My godly elephant will never surrender! Roaaaaar~!!!” Zhang ZhengXiong played ‘Roar! My Elephant’. The catchy, hot-blooded lyrics and the mad beats left a big impact on the listeners. Even Wu Na couldn’t help admiring it. She had to work harder!

“T-105 once again lives up to expectations and took out the evil command center, successfully defeating the evil instructors. Lin Hai’s heroes who fight for democracy! Let us congratulate them once more! Of course, many people are hoping that our east districts three legends: Flasher Uncler, Panty Uncle, and Devilish Gentleman will once again conduct a concert of dance and song!”

# Chapter 479: Exploring the Sinkhole

---

“East districts three legends...” Wu Na, FrozenCloud, and SpyingBlade broke out in cold sweat. They speechlessly thought of these three legends, who were basically just a flasher, a panty thief and a black-hearted devil.

Zuo Yiyi had an idea. She talked about her plan to hold a charity concert. When Ye Cang heard that it was for charity, he didn’t oppose it.

“Just give the earnings to Lin Hai’s orphanages...” Ye Cang said calmly. Lin Le remembered that his orphanage friends had all died in the disaster and became sad. Ye Cang reached out and patted his head. Due to various circumstances, they were all unlucky orphans.

Wu Na was very much in favor of this. She recalled the sadness and helplessness after losing her parents, but this place was like her second family. If possible, she wanted things to be like this forever. She pulled Lin Le and Little Ye Tian into her embrace. Fang Ci and Fang Tong also recalled the day that they had buried in their hearts.

SpyingBlade wasn’t as moved. He had a normal family, both his parents were working class. However, he knew that besides himself and Zuo Yiyi, everyone else here was an orphan for one reason or another.

Zuo Yiyi smiled. Having been here for a while, she didn’t know why but she really wanted to continue and stay. Feeling the comfortable atmosphere around Ye Cang and them, her heart felt warm.

Ye Cang conveniently notified Flasher Uncle and Panty Uncle, receiving positive replies. He turned to Zuo Yiyi, “While preparing, you can’t slack off on your lessons. I will be supervising you...”



Zuo Yiyi silently nodded.

Once again returning to the game, Ye Cang gathered everyone to go to the sinkhole while a majority of other players had their attention on the instance.

Everyone assembled at the village by Anya's shrine. Ye Cang took out the chest of misfortune. "This is a chest, who wants to open it?"

Everyone froze. They couldn't help but cry out, "What did you say?!"

"I said this is a chest, which one of you wants to open it?" Ye Cang looked at everyone's expressions of disbelief and said seriously.

Something is fishy. That was everyone's first thought. They looked at the chest's description. So that's what it is. Opening it is just summoning bad luck. Only like this would he pass it on to someone else. But that line that says 'the luckier one is, the more they will suffer upon opening', Lin Le definitely can't open it. The one most suited to it is you!

"Team leader, why don't you open it yourself?" FrozenCloud inquired.

"Eh, if I open it with my divine hand, I'll definitely trigger the trap. My luck is the highest, so I definitely can't open it..." Ye Cang looked at his right hand and explained seriously.

Everyone once again froze. He was the one with the highest luck!? They couldn't help but roll their eyes and burst into laughter. Wu Na said with a smile, "Let's all vote for who opens it. I vote for Team Leader."

"Same," FrozenCloud agreed.

"Bro, though I didn't want to say it, but you're the most suitable..." Zhang ZhengXiong also cast his vote to Ye Cang.

SpyingBlade and Fang Ci also decisively cast their votes to Ye Cang. In the end, only Little Ye Tian voted for OldWangFromNextDoor.

Ye Cang sighed. He huffed in rage, “You guys, seriously. Fine, I won’t say anything. Since you all want to destroy my divine hand, then I’ll do as you wish! Satisfied!?”

Then he reached out and opened the chest.

“Congratulations, you’ve obtained the treasure of misfortune: Atos’ Fang and 3 misfortune coins.”

Atos’ Fang (Unique - Material)

A fang of the ancient devil Atos. An incomparably precious material!

Misfortune Coins

Can be used on slot machines to obtain additional prizes.

“Who knew that my divine hand could suppress the chest’s bad luck and even get an extremely precious material. It seems like I underestimated my hand. Who knew that it was actually the hand of god, with the power to turn misfortune into fortune!” Ye Cang once again looked at his right hand and analyzed seriously.

Everyone shook their heads. You’re overthinking it. It’s only because you’re unlucky to the extreme that you could get anything. This chest is based on how unlucky you are. Everyone now had a deeper understanding of the depths of his unluckiness.

As for the misfortune coins, everyone thought of the slot machine from last time. If they had these coins then, wouldn’t they have three more chances to try!? They all looked at Ye Cang with conflicted expressions. Besides chests of misfortune, they definitely couldn’t let him touch any other chest.

Ye Cang hummed a little tune as he brought everyone deeper towards the sinkhole. Faced with Ye Cang’s happiness at learning

that his divine hand had upgraded to god's hand, they all felt like they had cold water poured over them. However, to Ye Cang, their expressions appeared to be obvious jealousy.

Everyone passed by the swamp and arrived near the sinkhole. Ye Cang went to the side and looked down. Besides various vines and roots that followed the sinkhole downwards, all he could see was darkness. He ordered Little Blue Feather to fly down. Partway, he saw what appeared to be roosting bats. Then about two hundred meters down was the ground. He quickly had Little Blue Feather fly out and roughly explained the situation to everyone. Everyone grabbed the vines by the side and climbed downwards.

“Everyone be careful. Those bats will probably attack us.” Ye Cang warned.

As they descended, they began to hear the flapping of wings. Everyone's hearts shook. They're coming! They each prepared for battle. Ye Cang wrapped his two legs around some vines, and hung upside while holding his two guns. He began to shoot. Lin Le took out molotovs, but was stopped by SpyingBlade, “Throw acid flasks. Don't throw molotovs, otherwise if you hit a vine, we're all dead.”

Lin Le nodded and began to throw acid flasks downwards. Bats continued to drop under the assault of the acid flasks and Ye Cang's shooting. Wu Na saw the rapidly approaching bats and attacked with Chilling Wind. The one with the easiest time was Fang Ci's spirit, Bali. She flew around making area attacks. Second was the tigerkin Little Ren. He stepped off the cliff walls, leaping here and there while brandishing his blades. Many of the incoming bats were provoked by the rainbow light shooting from Zhang ZhengXiong's crystal armguard. Most became stunned and fell.

Tens of bats still flew past them. Wu Na's vine snapped. Ye Cang planned to have Little Blue Feather chase after her, but saw Little Ren leap off a wall towards her. It swung on a vine and caught her.

Ye Cang sighed in relief. He continued to dodge the diving bats

and shoot. This environment left the melee fighters feeling sullen. The mages were a bit better off. Although it was still difficult to cast spells, they at least had ranged attacks.

The bats within ten meters of them issued piercing screeches. Seeing Wu Na and the others becoming absent-minded and noticing their hands slowly loosening, Ye Cang quickly slapped the little drum at his waist, waking everyone from their daze. Wu Na and FrozenCloud quickly grabbed the vines just in time.

Ye Cang activated Anya's Berserk Shot, locking onto the remaining dozen or so targets, piercing all of them. Everyone made it out of the bat attack more scared than hurt.

# Chapter 480: Najas

---

Just as everyone relaxed, the hanging Ye Cang's pupils shrank. From below, two yellow specks were becoming larger and larger. It appeared that they had enraged a terrifying beast. It soon appeared within range of his night vision. An enormous bat emerged, bringing with it a rush of wind.

Dark Blood Bat Chief - Najas (Intermediate Level Boss - Abyss)  
Dark blood bats live in dark places. Extremely aggressive. Its two wings make very good crispy grilled wings.

Ye Cang shouted, "Careful, a bat boss!!"

Just as he said that, a noiseless soundwave blasted through the sinkhole making a high pitched explosion. Everyone was shaken, intimidated, stunned, deafened; various effects were inflicted. Besides Zhang ZhengXiong with his near immunity, the others all began to fall. Ye Cang instantly activated Swift Retreat and broke free, but he frowned upon seeing that his drum's cooldown still needed a while! He saw the bat chief Najas attack towards Wang.

Zhang ZhengXiong stomped off the cliff wall and activated Fearless Charge. He perfectly intercepted and crashed into Najas. Najas stopped for a moment, it's speed largely reduced. Zhang ZhengXiong was knocked away flying. With a backflip, he grabbed a vine. He then swung his axe and used its skill; a crescent chop shot out, leaving behind a spurt of blood.

The tigerkin Little Ren let loose a tiger roar, forcefully removing the status effects. It started to leap downwards after the falling members. One by one they were caught and left on protruding rocks and vines. Little Blue Feather gradually woke up from the negative effects, spread its wings, and grabbed Wu Na, bringing her to the vines at the side. As for the one furthest down, when Little Ye Tian and Emergency Ration recovered to normal, Little Ration's bug wings emerged. One girl and one bug began to ascend.

As for Weak Sauce and the little tadpole, they were still outside the sinkhole. Although they couldn't see anything below, they still leaned over and cheered everyone on. Weak Sauce even gave the little tadpole smacks on the head when its movements weren't up-to-par. It showed off what cheering should be like, and began to shake its butt and wave its hands...

Most of them managed to escape danger but for some of them, it was hopeless. For example, OldWangFromNextDoor. Right now, he was at the bottom of the sinkhole, his head smashed into mush. He died in battle looking like a radish stuck in the ground.

Ye Cang saw that the ascending Najas only took out Wang, the rest of them were fine. However, the battle had only gone on for so long and this terrain made the soundwave basically undodgeable. It was as if they were in a pipe, the sounds continued to echo around. The earlier intimidation effect repeated again and again. Luckily, the strength became progressively weaker. Pulling out his ballista and summoning his shadow weapon - heavy crossbow, his two legs planted firmly on a protruding rock covered in vines, he aimed upwards. When he saw the bat begin to turn, he noticed signs of it preparing its sound wave attack again! If they let it happen once more, they wouldn't be left with many people! He looked towards the closest person, Zhang ZhengXiong. "A'Xiong! Think of a way to stop its attack!"

Zhang ZhengXiong lowered his stance. He activated the amplification device on his shoulder guards and his armguard began to release a milky white light. Suddenly, he punched forth and the white light instantly shot through the tunnel. Najas had its eyes burned by that bright light. It couldn't help but raise its head in pain when it was about to release its sound wave attack. Weak Sauce and the little tadpole watched as the sound blast brushed right past their noses from the sinkhole and they broke out in cold sweat. Under Weak Sauce's command, he and the little tadpole retreated a hundred steps before continuing to cheer.

Ye Cang closed his eyes and his ears wiggled. He locked on with Meteor Shot using his hearing. The instant the white light vanished, a spiraling meteor and a heavy bolt instantly pierced through the bat boss. Ye Cang quickly pulled out his shadow pike and waited for his chance. Watching the falling Najas, Zhang ZhengXiong also did the same. As it passed by, Zhang ZhengXiong executed his Barbaric Tackle to knock it in Ye Cang's direction.

Ye Cang jumped and performed a Dashing Straight Thrust + Shadow Frost Strike! He broke through its defence and caused an additional stun! Fluttering in the air like a butterfly, he landed on its stomach and performed a Flame Lotus + Multiple Straight Thrusts right in its mouth. Flowers of flame blossomed. Finally, a Straight Thrust + Precise Strike pierced through its throat. Stepping off its stomach, he jumped to another protruding rock and grabbed a vine while charging power into his pike with one hand. SpyingBlade held a sword in each hand. He saw through Ye Cang's plan, so he squatted like a hunter and waited for Najas to be hit towards himself. Dark Trials! Shadow Severing! Triple Strike!

Lin Le stepped off the stone. Sword Drawing Arts - Flash! Then in mid-air, Returning Dragon, Surging Dragon! While falling, he pursued and continued to attack! Finally, he summoned his handcart for a Handcart Home Run, blasting it into a rock wall. Smashing into the wall, it began to slide down the uneven surface, until it finally fell with a bam.

Ye Cang began to cast Flame Burst. He grasped with his flaming hands and retrieved his falling spear. FrozenCloud flew over with a Wyvern Kick, once again smashing it into the wall, then instantly followed up with a Collapsing Palm. Her body began to fall. Little Ren leapt by, grabbing her. It didn't forget to make a fierce cut with its other hand. Just as its tail passed by, Ye Cang's Flame Burst exploded.

Wu Na's Ice Spear shot out from the stone wall and pierced through it. Ye Cang quickly put away his pike and descended along

the vines. While descending, he drew his two guns and began a continuous chain of attacks. Just as Najas recovered, before it could even realise what was happening, a black figure smashed into its head. It was Zhang ZhengXiong using Googoo's Leap Attack. From high above, Ye Cang watched as the shadow descended into the darkness.

“Congratulations, you've slain Dark Blood Bat Chief - Najas. Obtained 4000 experience.”

SpyingBlade and the others sighed in relief. It was not that this boss was easy. Team Leader, Shaking Bear, and Lele's physical abilities were extremely good. Especially Team Leader and Shaking Bear. Their control while free-falling was something that he himself couldn't achieve. Most important was interrupting that fatal sound wave attack. In this kind of battlefield, falling only had one result, death.

Ye Cang's figure rushed downwards, making SpyingBlade's heart sink. Not good, he's trying to steal the boss! FrozenCloud pounced over, but caught nothing but air. Just as Ye Cang was about to reach the ground, a figure pounce over and held him to the ground. It was Zhang ZhengXiong, who had not died from the fall.

“So close. Luckily, the boss padded my fall, reducing 60% of the damage. Also lucky I activated a healing skill, otherwise I wouldn't only have died, Bro would have gotten the body.” Zhang ZhengXiong spoke with a grin. From above, the rapidly descending SpyingBlade sighed in relief. Lin Le fell to the ground and instantly looted Najas' corpse.

“You two unfilial brothers. Thankless wretches...” Ye Cang said grudgingly.

“Bro, you just looted the chest of misfortune so it must have some effect on your hand. It's better to let it rest a bit first.” Zhang ZhengXiong began to bullshit. Ye Cang stroked his chin. He listened to the gambler's logic and nodded, “Makes sense...”



SpyingBlade and FrozenCloud both didn't know whether to laugh or cry. He really had a gambler's mindset.

# Chapter 481: Boss Level Food is Terrifying

---

Zhang ZhengXiong resurrected the fallen Wang. Lin Le passed the loot over to Ye Cang. There was a dark gold ring and a pair of gold mage shoes.

Najas' Tooth (Dark Gold - Abyss)

Category: Ring

Requirements: None

+30 Dexterity

+5% Dexterity

+5% Physical Lifesteal (Melee)

+40 Armor Penetration

Every successful hit will steal 5 health.

- Najas' Sonic Cannon:

Launch a sonic attack towards enemies in front. Deals 75 damage. Inflicts intimidate, stun and daze.

Cooldown: 30 Minutes.

SpyingBlade looked at the ring's attributes and was tempted. Lifesteal effects were very rare. Up until now, they had seen few items with it. He reached out to request for the ring.

Ye Cang thought for a bit then handed it over. He gave the shoes to Fang Ci. Though FrozenCloud also wanted the ring but as the second tank, strength and constitution were more important than dexterity. For SpyingBlade it went like dexterity > strength > constitution. Overall, it would have been fine for either him or Ye Cang. Since Ye Cang was usually a ranged attacker, SpyingBlade was the better choice.

Ye Cang cleaned up the bodies on the ground, then sighed. "I was careless earlier and didn't make proper preparations..."

Saying that, Ye Cang watched as Weak Sauce slowly brought the little tadpole down, then sighed once again. His eyes flashed, "So... in order to make it up to everyone and to celebrate my promotion

to master chef, I've decided to make a boss meal! Is everyone excited!?"

Weak Sauce arrived and shuddered, then started climbing back up. It was grabbed by Little Ye Tian and carried over like a doll. Weak Sauce could only shiver along with everyone else.

They watched as Ye Cang took out the toad boss, the bagu boss, the kagu boss, and the bat boss from just now. They immediately knew what dish it would be. It was even the powered up version. They all grabbed a vine, wanting to climb up and escape. Countless chills travelled along their spines.

"Even this slime gel is boss level! Isn't that luxurious!?" Ye Cang smiled and began preparation to stuff bosses into bosses. At the same time, he made some mushroom and slime soup as well as rice. He even added the fried eyes of an alligator boss.

Everyone felt a chill travel along their spines. They couldn't even make a sound, only standing with their mouths agape. Little Ren and Little Blue Feather were both on the ground playing dead.

SpyingBlade watched as Ye Cang began the detailed process. He took out the toad bosses' guts and organs, and crushed them. He then took the bug viscera, bat innards, and mashed them all together into a paste like thing. He then added green slime boss's gel and began to stir. Next he added some spores and blended in some undead rotting flesh and stinky liquid. Fart smelling grass and wild mushrooms were tossed in as well while he continued to stir and stir. A part of it was poured back into the toad boss's mouth. Then some long and strange looking herbs were added in. Then, with the bitter faced Zhang ZhengXiong's help, he stuffed the bagu bug bosses body into the frog bosses mouth until it was nearly bursting. He then opened the bagu bug boss's mouth and poured in some of the boss innard and rotting fluid mix. After adding some mushrooms, he dragged the bat body over and stuffed it inside. Then he continued to open the bat bosses mouth and pour in the sauce. Finally after throwing in some mushroom and

herb mix, he stuffed the kagu bug boss into the bat boss's corpse. He forcefully opened the squashed kagu bug's mouth and poured in the remaining sauce. He took out some large fish, gutted them and then sprinkled some of his secret seasoning, then forcefully stuffed them into the kagu bug's mouth.

Everyone looked at the nearly 20 meter tall boss meal. It was crazy that the toad's mouth and stomach were still holding together. It looked like a patchwork creature whose mere appearance could make one's blood run cold. The so-called 'sauce' slowly dribbled out of those four open mouths. Ye Cang wiped the sweat from his forehead and then looked towards SpyingBlade, FrozenCloud, Lin Le, and Wang. "Come help me to roast it! This is a boss level feast! Hurry!"

Saying that, Ye Cang dragged the extremely unwilling group, including Wang's earth elemental, and propped the colossal thing between two stone pillars. Everyone looked amazed that Ye Cang actually carried around a 30 meter long metal rod! Zhang ZhengXiong broke out in cold sweat. So this is why bro wanted me to make a long iron rod. If I had known, I would have just said I couldn't make it. He recalled that he had also made a 50 meter long rod and laughed bitterly.

Ye Cang had pierced the thing and turned the natural terrain into a grill. Below it, he laid a big pile of wood, then had Lin Le throw molotovs to ignite it. On each side, stood two people, slowly rotating it as it roasted. When the grease and sauce dripped into the fire, seemingly witch-like screams were heard which shook their resolve further.

The four cooking assistants as well as Wu Na and the others below, watched as Ye Cang continued to make a soup and fried dish. Exuding confidence he hummed a little tune, but the dishes were already complete chaos. They glanced at the 'boss food', then back at his lush green smelly soup, as well as the two golden fried eyeballs, and gulped. Their backs were quickly drenched in cold

sweat. One after the other, they moved to the wall and retched.

The food's scent began to strengthen. Everyone tightly pinched their nose and, closed their mouth and eyes. Even Ye Cang looked somewhat dazed.

The four assistants on the stone pillars even had thoughts of dying.

"Everyone persevere! A boss level delicacy is waiting for us!" Ye Cang shouted and cheered. He poured buckets full of seasonings onto the lumpy toad skin. A mud coloured sludge began to cover it, making the smell even more stimulating. Everyone could no longer take it. That wasn't all though. Ye Cang poured the oil which he had used to fry the eyeballs onto it, which made the sizzling sound as it dripped down. The originally stimulating smell seemed to instantly explode. The oils, juices, fluids, sauces and seasonings instantly formed into a demonic skull made of smoke. It seemed to sneer as smoke continued to cover the roasted toad.

"Congratulations, you've completed a peak master quality creation, cooking experience substantially increased! Obtained 2000 character experience! Please give it a name!" The system announced.

"Super - Toad Eats Bagu Bat Kagu and Slime Oil Splashed Juicy Roasted Smoked Meat..." Ye Cang named it while on the edge of consciousness, but his mind blacked out.

Everyone gasped. They hadn't even started eating and were already losing consciousness. One by one, they collapsed with hideous expressions.

Super - Toad Eats Bagu Bat Kagu and Slime Oil Splashed Juicy Roasted Smoked Meat

Eat to restore 5 health and 2 mana every second. Furthermore, receive +30 all attributes, +10% all attributes, +100 all resistances, +25 attack, +30 defence, +10% fortitude, +10% will, +15% movement speed, advanced level restraint (reduce

consumption of skills and spells), advanced level burst (have a chance to burst forth with extra damage), advanced level toughness (improved survival ability) for 3 days.

## Chapter 482: Iron Web Spider

---

After adapting a bit, everyone gradually woke up, saw the food's effects and gasped. Such terrifying stats. Even black gold equipment was far from being able to compare to this! Ye Cang was pinching his nose and appeared to have trouble keeping his eyes open, but he looked proudly at his creation atop the fire.

Ye Cang laid down a cloth, then had Zhang ZhengXiong and the others climb up again to bring it down. When it was set down, everyone nearly fainted again. Ye Cang took out a knife and cut some of the four boss meats, poured some sauce over it, poked a swelling lump and let some purple liquid trickle onto it, then served some rice on it. After serving himself a bowl of soup and cutting some of the golden eyeball, he took a deep breath and began to dig in. Just as he ate a bit of it, he fell to the ground and began to thrash violently. If the food from before caused twitching, then this could definitely be called violent thrashing. His arms and legs made large movements and white foam sprayed out of his mouth left and right.

Even the fastest eater, Ye Cang, was unable to eat three dishes in one go. Rather, he fell on the very first 'roast meat'. Everyone shivered all over. Would this take them three tries!? SpyingBlade also attempted it, but after eating the roast meat, his neck bent strangely and he fell to the ground flopping like a fish on dry land.

Wu Na took many deep breaths. Just how much courage was required to eat this thing! Everyone was pale. Little Ye Tian first sent the pets on their way. Then everyone grit their teeth and ate. Immediately, the ground was covered in twisting and struggling 'corpses'.

Ye Cang stood up weakly, then continued to drink his soup and eat the fried foods in sequence. He once again collapsed and thrashed. Zhang ZhengXiong, Lin Le and SpyingBlade all finished, but the others weren't so lucky. They could only finish it after a

third attempt. Little Ye Tian, who had unfortunately died, had a bitter expression. She had to eat it all one more time. When she woke up once more, she stared at the light from the top of the sinkhole, somewhat dazed. Father, I feel like I should have stayed in the laboratory for another two years before coming...

“I almost forgot, a master level chef can stack 4 food buffs. I need to make one more dish.” Ye Cang’s words made everyone, who had just overcome the calamity, feel like they had been thrown back into the cellar.

Zhang ZhengXiong quickly covered his mouth and muttered vaguely, “Bro, make something tasty. Something more normal, otherwise everyone really won’t be able to take it.”

Everyone nodded. Little Ye Tian was nodding so hard that her jaw almost fell off. The pets, whom had just stood up, quickly fell over once more, playing dead.

“Alright. I originally wanted to try and make sashimi with the toad meat dipped in sauce, to see what it tastes like...” Ye Cang’s words made everyone shiver even harder. In the end, they watched as Ye Cang cut up some fish boss meat, alligator boss meat, and boar boss meat. He wrapped them in lettuce and poured some cooking wine on top. Everyone tried a bite. The fresh texture and delicious taste reduced the undying taste of evil by a lot. They also obtained ‘Junior Hero Set Meal Effect’.

#### Junior Hero Set Meal Effect

+10% damage, +10% spell power, +10% defence, reduce damage taken by 10%, +30 speed (not percentage), and can resist one negative effect. Once resisted, ability goes on cooldown for one hour.

Ye Cang put away the food. Although it was disgusting, but it gave a significant increase in attributes. Every cloud has a silver lining. Lin Le shouted loudly, “Brother Lil’White, I feel like I can take on 100!!”



Everyone broke into smiles, then continued exploring.

Ye Cang, through Little Blue Feather's field of view, knew that ahead of them was a spider. "Everyone careful, ahead is a spider hunting ground. See those webs? Don't touch them."

"If there is a large scale battle, Lele, remember to burn the webs down first thing. You definitely can't let the webs entangle everyone, especially yourself. Spiders fear fire." SpyingBlade reminded. Lin Le nodded. He carried his huge blade in one hand and readied molotovs in the other.

SpyingBlade looked at the spider webs. He tried to cut through them with his sword, but they were as strong as steel, yet pliable, durable, and sticky. His longsword not only failed to cut, it even got stuck. SpyingBlade frowned. Ye Cang and the others also noticed this. In case of a battle, they definitely had to burn down the nearby webs, otherwise they would be unable to escape once entangled.

"Lele, give everyone two molotovs..." Little Ye Tian proposed, but got Lin Le's fist on her head in response.

"Call me Brother Le!"

Little Ye Tian gnashed her teeth. Just you wait and see. Smelly Lele. Damn Lele. I'll definitely surpass you! Hmph hmph! Surpass you!!

Lin Le distributed some molotovs so that everyone had some just incase.

Everyone arrived at the area that Ye Cang had seen with his eagle eyes. Now that Ye Cang could see it clearly, he could tell it was a wide, ring-shaped cavern. It was surrounded by a screen of silky webs. There were even many bat corpses stuck on it.

Just as everyone was looking for the spider, countless scarlet eyes opened above them. Ye Cang looked up and saw that from the darkness of the ceiling, countless enormous spiders were

descending. “Lele! Set fire! Leave some room for us!!”

Lin Le quickly quickly threw the molotovs in all directions, burning the spider webs. The flames followed up the webs and many spiders fell to the ground, receiving significant damage. Ye Cang could now clearly identify them.

### Iron Web Spider (High Grade Elite - Abyss)

Dangerous spider species that live in darkness. Almost nothing can escape from their webs. Afraid of fire. Their eggs are very delicious food ingredients while the spider-silk make good noodles or tailoring thread.

Spiders continued to fall into the fire and screech. Ye Cang directly began to cast Light Strike Array. His eagle eyes sought out the area most crowded with spiders, casting his spell towards the right wall. Suddenly, gorgeous flaming lights shout out from the right wall towards the air to the left, lighting up the sky. While the light was streaking across, Ye Cang saw six dangerous red eyes of an enormous spider in the depths of the ceiling. “The boss is up there! Careful!! Its body is approximately over 20 meters!!”

Ye Cang’s words put everyone on 1000% vigilance. Under the effects of Light Strike Array, nearly 40 iron web spiders fell into Lin Le’s flames. Everyone held back the spiders that tried to crawl out of the fire. The flames completely sealed off their ability to spit webs, as the moment they sprayed out, it would be burned into ashes. However, what everyone was more wary of was the boss on the ceiling. These elites weren’t difficult to deal with, only taking a bit of time in the fire. The hard part would be the boss and its skills in the fight.

Ye Cang felt like he had overlooked some places when the area was illuminated. He shot there with his fire crystal loaded dual-pistols. Going by memory, he recalled seeing ominous glints at the furthest part on two sides but they weren’t as obvious as the one in the middle. Ye Cang’s brows rose, “Everyone listen. It is extremely

likely that there are three bosses above...”

# Chapter 483: Baked Spider

---

Ye Cang's words made everyone's brows furrow.

SpyingBlade dealt with the spider that nearly escaped from the flames while thinking. If there are three bosses, then our only choice would be to let Lin Le act as the third tank. He wears heavy armor and his health is pretty decent. In any other team, he would have no problem being the primary tank. With his molotovs and flame blade, he is completely capable of restricting one. However, does Lele have the ability to tank? This was what he worried about most. If Lele were to die, their situation would be like being on a snowy mountain peak in a hailstorm. No, not even a hailstorm would suffice to describe it. Without his molotovs controlling the area, things would be extremely difficult. The other two choices as third tank were team leader and he himself. In the end, it would be up to team leader to arrange, afterall, he himself wasn't the leader. Moreover, team leader's on-scene instructions were usually very outstanding, though he would never admit it.

"SpyingBlade, you pin one down. I'll replace you depending on the circumstances." Ye Cang said indifferently. SpyingBlade nodded. That's right, he should first unleash his ranged skills then switch with me.

Lin Le continued to madly throw molotovs. More and more spiders fell down from above them. Seeing the large number of iron web spiders that were on the verge of escaping the fire, Ye Cang reached out and pointed. Assenroche's finger. Arcane energy swept out, knocking, the group of spiders that were about to escape, back into the fire.

Zhang ZhengXiong spun, chopping in a large crescent, instantly cutting down tens more and injuring a large number. Over at Lin Le's side, things were even more simple, each slash took out one. If two came, he would kill two. If a crowd came, his handcart would smash forth and then he would continue guarding with Little Ren.

Wu Na wiped the sweat on her forehead. Will me and Wang be useless every time? She turned and looked at Wang, who was ordering around his earth elemental, seeming very lively. F\*\*k, is it only me? Damn fire, making this ice mage so helpless. Let's wait for a chance to burst forth with damage. Save some mana in the meantime. She held a molotov in her hand to defend against any sudden attacks.

Little Ye Tian vigilantly kept an eye on the top while healing at critical times during the battle. Her father's food effects were too powerful. If not for the food buffs, they wouldn't have been able to clear out these mobs so quickly. The effects of High Level Restraint were especially useful. At least it allowed her to save up to 30% of her mana.

Ye Cang activated rapid fire. His two guns began to overload as fire bullets shot out like rain, continuously reaping experience. He turned and Anya's Berserk Shot locked on to tens of targets on SpyingBlade's side. Bursts of bullets shot out, piercing through them. SpyingBlade's left and right longswords danced and reaped. The two of them worked together exceptionally well.

SpyingBlade saw that there weren't many left, so he quickly charged towards FrozenCloud's side to assist. Ye Cang dealt with the aftermath, cleaning up the leftovers. Finishing up, he turned to FrozenCloud and began to cast Chain Lightning. After a brief chant, his hands crackled with lightning, then a thick streak of lightning shot out like a whip at a spider which had nearly escaped from the fire. It then started to chain between the already weakened spiders in the fire. They instantly found themselves paralysed and unable to move, regardless of how FrozenCloud and SpyingBlade slaughtered them.

The number of spiders falling from the ceiling lessened. Ye Cang and the others knew that the boss fight was approaching.

Ye Cang turned a majority of his attention upwards. Within the darkness, he could see 20 meter large, enormous iron web spiders

crawl out from the two sides. As for the one in the middle? While Ye Cang was watching doubtfully, a nearly 25 meter diameter large spider rapidly fell.

“Careful! Incoming!!” Ye Cang quickly ducked into the fire.

A step too slow, Wu Na was instantly captured by the middle boss. The thick thread from its butt retracted, quickly pulling up into the distance. Ye Cang took a step and charged over with Dashing Straight Thrust, followed by a second. His pike directly stabbed into one of its compound eyes, exploding in a burst of shadow frost. Due to the pain, the enormous spider released the panic-stricken Wu Na. Little Ren caught her with a leap and brought her to the edge of the fire.

Ye Cang pulled out his pike. The two from the rock wall sprayed out spider webs towards him. He ducked and shadow stepped to Wu Na’s position, avoiding the webs’ clutches. Everyone stood by the edge of the fire. The moment a web shot towards them, they would jump into the flames.

Ye Cang identified the three spiders. From left to right, they were Vegalia, Vegaza, Vegakes. Their abdomen and the thread within were top-quality ingredients.

With its eyes seriously injured, Vegaza looked towards the people by the fire and issued an angry screech. The webs of the three spiders would be burned the moment they approached the fire. Ye Cang, Fang Ci, Wu Na and Wang took advantage of this time to launch a ranged assault. The melee fighters were in charge of guarding against any potential sneak attacks.

Under Ye Cang’s instructions, their firepower was focused on the already wounded middle one. It was like a hanging punching bag, being attacked by their focused assault. It was already considering retreating upwards. The spiders on the two sides angrily hissed towards the people by the fire. Lin Le continued to replenish the sea of flames. In the ring shaped space, only a small circle in the

middle didn't have fire. Everyone stood at the edge of said area.

The moment Ye Cang saw they were going to jump, he readied a Light Strike Array. The spell blasted from the wall behind Vegalia on the right. The flames burst out from left to right, shooting in a straight line through all three, causing them to simultaneously fall into the sea of fire, making them shriek miserably. Zhang ZhengXiong and FrozenCloud immediately charged into the flames at them. SpyingBlade also moved up to control one. With their high resistance, the fire damage could be restrained to a certain extent with Little Ye Tian's help. Ye Cang knew that the annoying webs had been sealed, so he quickly pulled out the ballista in his bag and summoned his shadow weapon - heavy crossbow. While preparing a meteor shot, he looked towards Vegakes who wanted to climb back up the wall. A spiralling shot arrived in an instant, nailing it down into the flames. The heavy crossbow's queen bee bolt also pierced through it. Although the greater part of the poison damage was resisted, the crossbows still dealt extremely terrifying damage. One only had to listen to the miserable bug cry to know.

Ye Cang looked at the people in the fire, dealing with the bosses, and calmly drew his dual-pistols. He began to change the crystals, sighing at how this weapon burned through money. Each fire crystal cost at least a few gold. It was a lot cheaper to shoot magic crystals. Pushing a button, the two crystals fell to the ground and he inserted new ones. Then he threw the nearly empty crystals into his bag. He turned and saw that beside him, Wu Na was standing there with nothing to do, "Learn a few more wind spells. It should be able to match up well with fire. When we return to the city, I'll keep an eye out at the auction."

Wu Na nodded. She was an ice/wind hybrid spellcaster, not just pure ice. However, it had been a long time since they last saw a wind spell. She watched as FrozenCloud crouched, then with a spin, her leg swept out. Sweeping Wind - Kamaitachi! It created a

super cool looking fire tornado. Then she saw Lin Le leap to the boss that Zhang ZhengXiong had knocked up and toss a molotov in its mouth. She broke out in cold sweat as she watched the boss spit out fire and fall to the ground unconscious.



# Chapter 484: Giant Water Underworld Slime

---

SpyingBlade thought to himself, luckily the fire completely restrained them. The webs were practically useless, otherwise 'a tough battle' wouldn't be enough to describe it. Their party already leaned towards close range combat. If the three bosses were to shoot their webs, the fight would be over. Their weapons were already helpless against the normal spider webs let alone the boss level ones. Their only weakness was fire.

SpyingBlade recalled how useful Lin Le's Molotovs had been ever since Really New Village. It had restrained many bosses through terrain or attributes.

Fang Ci saw that the three bosses wanted to shoot their webs at the wall and escape, but the sprayed webs were ignited by the fire. He saw one of them throw off Brother Xiong, but was quickly pinned down through its head by a shadow pike. He turned and saw Ye Cang shoot out an Explosive Bullet towards it, not giving it any chance to escape the fire.

The deaths of the three spiders were announced. They all retreated out of the fire, staying vigilant against Ye Cang, ready to intercept. Lin Le looted them one by one, while Zhang ZhengXiong continued to use the excuse of overtaking his hand to console Ye Cang.

The three bosses provided three pieces of dark gold equipment and another three pieces of gold equipment, a pretty good harvest. Ye Cang distributed the items. The dark gold mage's shoes were given to Fang Ci. The gold cape went to Wang. The dark gold strength/constitution necklace to FrozenCloud. The gold weapon was pasted with a price-tag. No one needed the other dark gold dagger, so it was also thrown in the cart. As for the final gold item, it was a pair of mage gloves. They were directly given to Wu Na.

They had a supplementary spider web ability, which was extremely useful. It could be used to save her life or to restrict an enemy.

Little Ye Tian analysed and concluded that this triple bossfight hadn't been difficult. There were two main causes. One was the topography. The second was the food's stat buffs. Four types of food buffs along with a set effect was basically equivalent to everyone having an extra three dark / black gold equipment, resulting in a large increase in power. However, at great cost... recalling that taste, her little forehead was immediately covered in sweat, wetting her hair.

Everyone watched as Ye Cang hummed a tune and cleaned up the numerous corpses of various sizes. His speed at gathering the threads left their scalps numb. Wu Na gathered her courage and asked curiously, "What is that web for...?"

"Thread for tailoring or noodles." Ye Cang's words made everyone afraid. That toughness, are you sure it's chewable!? They continued to watch as he carefully stored away the three bosses abdomens, wishing they wouldn't have to eat it. But in their hearts, they knew the impossibility of their wish.

Everyone rested for a while. After healing up, they continued exploring deeper into the depths. Surprisingly, there was light at the end of the wide tunnel. Following the tunnel, Ye Cang went ahead to investigate. His eagle eyes saw that in front of them was a very big underground lake. The cave ceiling was lined with light crystals. There were blue, green, yellow, red, and even pink ones. There were also many exposed ore veins containing uncommon ores. Ye Cang was unable to estimate the size of this underground lake because he couldn't see the end of it, thus it must be a large lake. There were no signs of life by the shore.

Ye Cang motioned for everyone to come. Little Ye Tian began to evaluate it, but shook her head. "I can't figure it out. But we're already very deep underground."

She noticed the flow of the lake and frowned. Eh!? “Father, can you see if there is flowing water at the bottom...”

Ye Cang dove into the water like a fish and rapidly swam down. He saw that underneath where the others were was an underwater tunnel. The water flowed extremely rapidly. He quickly returned to shore and stomped on the ground, “Underneath us is an underwater tunnel...”

“Then this isn’t an underground lake, but an underground river. Brother A’Xiong, father, gather the resources here. Afterwards let’s take the boat to check out the other side.” Little Ye Tian pointed to the opposite shore veiled in darkness.

Ye Cang took out their portable steamship and installed a new magic crystal into it, then began to mine with Zhang ZhengXiong. The crystals on the ceiling weren’t very valuable as they would lose their light once they left, and their existence increased the party’s health and mana regeneration considerably, so they weren’t harvested. They harvested the mithril, thorium, shadow ice crystals and other precious materials.

Little Ye Tian sailed the ship, travelling while recording on her map. She calculated their position and deduced the direction to sail to. In her head, she would never lose her sense of direction. A compass may fail and stop working, but she wouldn’t.

Everyone silently travelled for two days! They even protected the boat from scattered demon beasts. Finally, everyone arrived at what appeared to be a large underground waterfall. The waterfall looked magnificent, the force sending water splashing up very high. It was hard to imagine just how high into the darkness it went.

Little Ye Tian furrowed her brows and accurately noted the position on her map, then looked up alarmed. Isn’t this that place!?

Ye Cang ordered Little Blue Feather to fly up. As it circled higher,

a familiar feeling overcame it. He also recognized this place. Returning from Little Blue Feather's sight, he said calmly, "This is near White Stone City. It was that place we didn't dare go last time."

Little Ye Tian was delighted. "If we can connect to the top, then establishing a village near Anya's shrine will only be a matter of time and money!"

"Is that possible?" SpyingBlade faintly raised an eyebrow.

"Easy. I'll design a boat lifting device. The design will be very simple, something I can accomplish at my current level! Leave this to me!" Little Ye Tian said confidently.

FrozenCloud sighed. Having a high IQ was so unfair! What we think is impossible, is only a minor problem for her. She turned and looked at Lin Le, then sighed again. A minor problem for me is probably like a magic spell from another world to him.

Ye Cang saw a big bubble rising outside the boat, obviously very strange. Feeling something wrong, he called out, "Little Tian! Back up the boat! At once! Don't stop!!"

Little Ye Tian quickly activated the magic crystal at full capacity to rush backwards. An explosion of water just brushed past the side of the boat, pushing it far away. An enormous, round, super gelatinous creature appeared before everyone's eyes. While the boat rocked, Zhang ZhengXiong broke out into cold sweat. My bro's favorite gel seasoning creature has appeared.

Ye Cang identified it.

Giant Water Underworld Slime (High Grade Boss - Abyss - Slime)

A rarely seen genus in the slime family. Only underground in deep water will one find traces of it. Extremely strong attack. It's slime core is an extremely rare treasure!

Weakness Identification Successful

The creature doesn't fear fire or water. Earth and its subtypes deal fatal damage to it. Electricity can also deal heavy damage and ice can slow it down.

Ye Cang quickly shared its weaknesses. SpyingBlade raised his brows. Earth and electricity were effective. Ice can cause slow. He decided to swap his weapons for an earth element hatchet and a lightning element dagger.

Lin Le quickly removed the three fire crystals, putting them away carefully, and inserting three earth crystals. His arm guard immediately thickened. One could vaguely see a layer of brown dust around his weapon.

# Chapter 485: Water Cannon Bombardment

---

Little Ye Tian pushed the steamship to retreat without rest. The enormous slime chased after them. It looked like an incoming tidal wave. Ye Cang also swapped the fire crystals in his gun for earth crystals and began to shoot. Large damage numbers continuously popped up. Zhang ZhengXiong silently held a tiny earth element dagger in reverse grip. SpyingBlade and Lin Le lowered their stances, ready to engage in melee at any time.

“Test and see how physical damage affects it...” SpyingBlade proposed.

Lin Le simply threw out a superior quality longsword, then pouted, “5 damage.”

SpyingBlade froze. He had nearly forgotten that Lele had a hidden weapons unique skill. If one was not careful, they would easily get taken out by this move of his. Only five points though. Although it had to do with the weapon’s quality, but this boss probably didn’t fear physical attacks. Everyone noticed this.

“Sister Nana, pay attention to the timing. Don’t cast continuously. Try to space your spells out so the slow will stop it from catching up to us.” Little Ye Tian reminded. Here, the only ones who could cast ice spells were Nana and the vulgar Wang. However, it would be a waste not to use Wang’s earth elemental, so they could only depend on Sister Nana to restrict it.

“I know.” Wu Na first cast a Cone of Cold, slowing the slime down. The steamship managed to widen the distance but it quickly caught up again. She quickly cast Ice Shards, slowing it down again. Ye Cang would also cast Ice Shards from time to time to give her time to refresh her cooldowns.

So they continued to kite it like this while dealing damage at range. Wang ordered his earth elemental to throw out boulders, dealing considerable damage.

“Choo choo!!” The enormous slime made an angry sound. It seemed to be getting bigger and bigger, as if it was absorbing water.

Little Ye Tian’s nerves were stretched taunt. This should be some sort of ultimate move. They had to dodge it! What was it!? She began to rapidly calculate and prepare. Water cannon!? Tidal Wave!? It’s approaching the critical time! It’s body can’t possible increase past three times its original size!

The boat was slowing down and approaching a corner. It’s coming! She saw water shoot out of its mouth like a cannon! She turned the corner at top speed!

Everyone watched as an enormous blast of water shot past the corner, hitting some rocks, blasting them apart and sending them flying. So close! Even having dodged it, the enormous pressure still left the boat rocking violently. If they were hit, they would definitely be sent back to town.

Little Ye Tian didn’t dare to stop. She approached the next bay corner, slightly slowing down and waiting for it to appear. Ye Cang shouted out a warning, “It’s coming again!”

Little Ye Tian immediately pushed the magic crystal to run at full power, once again dodging the water cannon. “Father! Add in more magic crystals! We have to maintain the power at above 40% to be fast enough!”

Ye Cang quickly quickly threw his two guns to FrozenCloud, “You use them. Give them back to me later!”

FrozenCloud received the two guns and looked vigilantly to their rear. Ye Cang began to pour magic crystals into the apparatus. 20%, 25%, it continued to increase.

“Team Leader! The boss has caught up! Hurry!!” FrozenCloud yelled, then began to shoot.

Little Ye Tian saw that the water cannon was about to shoot.

There just happened to be a stone pillar nearby. She sailed, as if drifting, to the back of the pillar. The water cannon blasted the pillar. Luckily, the pillar's base was sturdy and was able to obstruct the water cannon. The top part of the pillar was knocked far away by the powerful pressure. The steamship rocked violently.

Ye Cang loaded the motor up to 45%. Little Ye Tian began move quickly, passing by another corner, dodging once again.

Ye Cang called Fang Ci over and dropped a bunch of magic crystals on the ground. "You load the motor. I'll go keep watch!"

Saying that, he left the ship's hold and arrived on deck. FrozenCloud tossed the two guns back. Ye Cang reached out and grabbed them, then jumped onto the top of the boat. Seeing the slime becoming smaller and smaller, he sighed in relief. The water cannon also gradually weakened. Although it was still powerful but not as terrifying as the ones from before and was now much easier to dodge.

"Around the next corner, stop the boat and take it out! Wang, control your earth elemental to jump to the shore. Lele, SpyingBlade, you two go as well. The moment you see the boss, jump on it and go all out! FrozenCloud, you guard the boat. Nana, you are in charge of slowing it down. Find a chance to stun it with a Boulder Strike. We've already used up so much time, it's about time we finish it off..." Ye Cang examined the topography and saw that there was a chance at the next turn. He quickly issued these orders. Everyone nodded and went to get ready.

The boat approached the bend. Lin Le leapt onto a pillar and held his blade on standby. The earth elemental crouched by the edge of the shore. SpyingBlade stood on the earth elemental's shoulder and prepared. Little Ye Tian docked the boat by the shore and walked out of the pilot cabin.

Ye Cang and Wu Na simultaneously extended their hands covered in frigid air and began to cast. The enormous slime



charged at them angrily but what greeted it was an Ice Spear as well as tens of Ice Shards which left it in a half frozen and slowed state. The earth elemental leaped and landed on its body, dealing a large amount of damage. Lin Le reached out and began to cast a spell with the earth crystals. An enormous stone sword dropped from the sky, stabbing through it, causing stun. His brown dusted giant blade began to swing wildly, attacking all out. SpyingBlade also brandished his weapons, doing his best to deal a burst of damage. He activated his two weapons' skills simultaneously. Crushing stone and shocking electricity simultaneously shot out. Wu Na's Boulder Strike also smashed into it.

Little Ye Tian saw that the slime had been stunned, so quickly re-entered the pilot cabin. She controlled the boat to approach. With the boat as a springboard, everyone unleashed their final storm of attacks. Looking at the nearly dead enormous slime, everyone sighed in relief but just at that time, the enormous slime exploded, becoming tens of meter large lumps of water. The deck, the top of the boat and the shore; they were everywhere.

"It's divided! Kill the spawns! Don't let them assemble together!" SpyingBlade had met this type of boss before. Normally, there were three possibilities. 1, the main body escapes. 2, they split up to attack. And 3 is they split up to revive!

Lin Le killed them with one slash each. Little Ye Tian planned a route for everyone, directing them like a group of pacmen. In the end, they managed to kill them all. Ye Cang saw that there were corpses everywhere and his red eyes showed hesitation. Which one should he loot!? He had to pick the one with equipment!! Just as he was about to loot one, Lin Le called out happily, "Bother Lil' White, the boss dropped a black gold ring and a skill book."

Ye Cang looked at him suspiciously, "How did you know which corpse had things?"

"I didn't know. I picked one randomly." Lin Le replied.

“Any one is fine. This sort of dividing boss, unless it has a main body, then looting any one is fine.” SpyingBlade shrugged and said.

Ye Cang turned away and clicked his tongue unhappily. Should have said so earlier! Turning to look at the water’s surface, he saw two one meter diameter, pure and beautiful, light blue slime eyes. He jumped down to gather them, then collected the rest of the floating slime gel before distributing the equipment.

### Giant Water Underworld Slime Ring (Black Gold - Slime)

Category: Ring

Requirements: None

+40 Constitution

+30 Wisdom

+5% Constitution

+5% Health

+20 Defence

Recovers 1 mana every 5 seconds

Recovers 2 health ever 5 seconds

Received damage reduced by 30.

# Chapter 486: Five Coloured Slime Treasure Ring

---

“A’Xiong, take it and see if you can combine them...” Ye Cang passed the water drop ring to Zhang ZhengXiong.

Zhang ZhengXiong took off his ring and put them together. The little water drop wiggled over as if it had seen four of its friends. The five differently coloured water drops crowded together, then merged together becoming five crystalline stripes.

“Congratulations, you’ve obtained the Five Coloured Slime Treasure Ring”

Five Coloured Slime Treasure Ring (Unique - Slime - Quest Item) Category: Ring

Requirements: None

+50 Constitution

+40 Wisdom

+20% All Attributes

+10% Constitution

+10% Health

+15% Damage

+20% Defence

Damage received reduced by 35.

+20% All Resistances

+12 Damage

+25 Defence

+25% reduction to negative effects.

Restores 1% health every 10 seconds.

Restores 1% mana every 10 seconds.

+10 Luck

- Gliding Wings

Allow the wearer of the ring to glide for 5 minutes.

Cooldown: 10 minutes

- Super Speed

When using a charging attack skill, there is a chance to trigger this effect, increasing your speed by 5 times for 1.5 second.

Can be triggered once every 3 minutes.

- Five Coloured Fortune (*Choose 2 of 5, is reset daily*)

- Spell Storing - White

Can store any one spell in the ring. To change the stored spell, one must wait one natural day. The cooldown of the spell is the same as it normally is.

- Spell Reflection - Blue

Reflect one type of spell to the caster.

Cooldown is the same as normal cooldown for reflected spell.

- Flame Burst Transformation - Red

When receiving fire damage, one can attempt to absorb it, then turn the energy into a flame burst spell. Damage is based on the strength of the absorbed fire ability.

Cooldown is the same as that of the absorbed fire ability.

- Luck Constitution - Gold

Activate to forcefully make the next attack received deal only 1 damage. Only works on a single hit.

Cooldown: 1 day

- Water Source Transformation - Teal

Instantly consume 10% health to recover 15% mana or consume 10% mana to recover 20% health.

Cooldown: 1 hour

Everyone gasped upon seeing the ring's attributes. What the heck was this!? Seeing the page of densely packed attribute bonuses, SpyingBlade smiled bitterly. This ring was equivalent to four of other's. Four black gold rings at that. The five choose two skills were abnormal beyond belief and the new ability was just dope. Could he be any harder to kill!? The amount of constitution this ring provided him was definitely above 100. His attributes had risen to a whole other level. This was the most abnormally op equipment that he had ever seen at this point in the game, the second being team leader's revive + self-destruct ring which was even more disgusting.

“For the five choose two skill, the most dependable is still white,

with teal added on. Or perhaps white + a spare. I suggest the first option. The other three are all situational, while white and teal can be used in any situation, and it is often too late to choose when you need them.” Little Ye Tian analyzed.

Zhang ZhengXiong listened to Little Ye Tian and chose white and teal. The white and teal water drops rotated to the front of the ring. SpyingBlade was sure this was a godly artifact in the making. At least it definitely had the potential to upgrade to a godly artifact like item.

Ye Cang faintly smiled, then took out the skillbook. “Who wants this?”

High Pressure Water Cannon (Giant Water Underworld Slime - Uncommon - Rank 4 Spell)

Chant 1 verse (about 3 seconds) to shoot a violent water cannon at a target, sending it flying and dealing 100 water damage. Skill is affected by intelligence, spell power, and other spell effects increases.

Cost: 35 mana.

Cooldown: 4 minutes.

Ye Cang saw that Wu Na didn’t want it, so shrugged and learned it himself.

“Due to the compatibility between your Tidal Wave and High Pressure Water Cannon, they’ve fused together to become a new skill (original skills still exist)! Please give it a name!”

Ye Cang looked at the skill effect and named it, “High Pressure Tidal Wave”

High Pressure Tidal Wave (Ye Cang - Self Created)

Chant 6 bars (about 5 seconds). From the second bar, begin attacking targets in front with a fierce tidal wave. Persists for 4 seconds. Every wave deals 89 water damage and causes knockback.

Cost: 40 mana.

Cooldown: 3 minutes.

With still breeze and quiet waves, everyone returned to the village by Anya's shrine. Ye Cang immediately brought Little Ye Tian back to Black Rock City. The area in Black Peaks with the sinkhole was still masterless, so he brought out his money and directly made it part of his own fief. He then went to Azshara to share his new discovery.

Azshara immediately froze, then broke out into a grin after a good while. "You really are the lucky charm Little Mar brought over! Black Peaks is only so desolate because it isn't connected, so travelling is inconvenient and filled with dangers. Every year, only one convoy travels there during the summer. If we can really sail a boat till there, your shrine and village could perhaps become a mountain fort. Black Peaks is the barrier between us and the wastelands, extremely important! Although not many people know it, so many give up after knowing how tough a bone the Black Peaks is. Now if what you and the girl says is true, Black Peaks will be welcoming a period of prosperity."

Little Ye Tian offered him her blueprint and map, then began to explain, "The problem with the boat can be solved with this. It operates using the kinetic force produced by magic crystals. The only problem is that it requires a high-powered magic furnace. In order to lift large boats, anything less than a high-powered magic furnace won't do. Although manpower isn't impossible, but it is too troublesome. That method can only be kept as a backup for the furnace..."

After Azshara finished listening to Little Ye Tian's explanation, his brows rose. "That won't be a problem. I'll deal with it personally. You don't have to worry. Since the sinkhole here will also require a lift, we'll need to establish a fort down there. I'll have Little Mar personally oversee it's construction..."

“Then we’ll trouble you, Marquis Azshara.” Ye Cang nodded and smiled.

Azshara also smiled and waved his hand, “Stay for a meal. Little Mar will be coming later, we can conveniently discuss the details.”

After Little Mar arrived and everyone discussed the plan in detail, Little Mar brought some workers to the sinkhole. Ye Cang also brought Little Ye Tian and left the Marquis’ mansion.

“Father, let’s focus our construction on Anya’s shrine and move the other two! We can rebuild the shrine buildings, then with Ghost Peak as the framework, create the holy trinity of epic shrines. Since we’ve already decided it is inevitable to bring the three goddesses together in the future, why not prepare now? As for the goddesses, we’ll have to rely on father to negotiate with them whether they can share one residence instead of being seperated.” Little Ye Tian analyzed seriously and proposed to Ye Cang.

“I’ll ask...” Ye Cang smiled calmly.

# Chapter 487: Massive Vein

---

Black Peaks, Mallows' shrine.

Ye Cang intimately summoned the three goddesses to descend. The first thing he heard were complaints about Anya's prosperity, just as he expected.

"The area around Anya's shrine is extremely suited for establishing a city, so I hope you can all move your shrines over there. Of course, we will reconstruct your shrines there, and they will be much larger than they are now. Your believers will also increase substantially and the entire city will be built with the three of you at its heart..."

Ye Cang's words made Anya stand out and say seriously, "Just me is enough. The two of them will one day become prosperous too. It is only a matter of time, there is no need to be together. As for establishing the city, I completely support it. Feel free to go ahead..."

When Mallows and Jam heard Anya's 'all words and no action tone', they began to look at her as if looking at a little sl\*t.

"Don't even think about monopolizing it..." Mallows walked up with a trace of a smile and pinched Anya's face while laughing coldly. She was exuding the aura of an evil-step-sister

Jam grabbed Anya's hand and showed an innocent smile. With a voice as sweet as an idol's she said, "Sister, we should share the profits. Aren't we sisters? Sir PaleSnow, we agree."

Ye Cang shrugged. Who would have thought they would be so agreeable. "Then it's decided. I'll have the people in charge begin work."

The moment Ye Cang walked out the door, the sound of wrestling could be heard behind him. He muttered to himself, "They're so close..."



Then, Ye Cang notified Little Ye Tian of their approval. Little Ye Tian started phase one of the plan. First, would be to build the epic shrines. She had personally drawn the blueprints and a prototype had quickly taken shape. The funds she assigned with a flick of the pen were horrifying, but their profits from the new pier's operation could balance it out, let alone the fact that they still had the goddess association, Happy Firmament General Store and Thorns and Roses' Auction House which had started business. Every day, a large amount of capital came streaming through. It seems like around Black Rock City and White Stone City, wanting to devalue gold wouldn't be easy. It's value would even rise in the near future.

Little Ye Tian calculated their earnings. They had enough to build these things, but it would be best to have a bit more wealth. She suddenly recalled the mines in Callor Hills. Now was the time to expand them. According to her estimates, there should be at least five other magic crystal veins. She recalled the mining machine that was still sitting in their warehouse. However, one wouldn't be enough. They needed to buy a few more and hire workers.

Little Ye Tian arrived at the grocery store and found Granny Rica to see if there were any professional miners. Learning that they were easy to find and employ, she told Ye Cang of her plans.

"Little Tian, go to Marquis Azshara's manor and ask if he can help us obtain more mining machines and other instruments." Ye Cang was currently travelling through Black Peaks, heading back towards Anya's Shrine for a look and to visit the sinkhole.

"Understood, father." Little Ye Tian ended the call and arrived at the marquis' manor. Learning that the marquis was at the pier, she set off on her journey and arrived at the underground pier. Nowadays, it had already become famous, getting the name Black Rock Pier. The middle stop was called Black White Rift and the one by White Stone City was White Stone Pier. As for the final sinkhole

stop's name, it was still being discussed.

Azshara heard that they wanted some mining machines and asked doubtfully, "It's not a problem, but what are you going to do with it?"

"Callor Hills should still have some ore veins. We're planning to continue mining them." Little Ye Tian briefly replied. Azshara's brows rose. He recalled that Callor Hills had been abandoned. After the first vein, they had dug very deep without finding anything. It had already been included into the list of abandoned mines. He recalled that Little Mar's batch of magic crystals had come from a mini vein. It seemed like the empire had been careless. But it was all in the past, so he didn't say anymore.

"30% of the mined crystals go to the empire, the rest is up to you, but you definitely cannot sell it to an enemy country. If it is discovered, you'll be accused of treason and receive the death penalty. You must definitely be careful. This is my writ, you can directly head to the military to pick up the machines."

"Thank you Marquis Azshara..." Little Ye Tian performed a knight's salute, then took the writ and left.

"This girl's temperament is just like that kid's." Azshara faintly smiled, then continued to oversee the construction of the naval base.

Little Ye Tian brought over 100 professional miners along with the machines and hurried over to Callor Hills. Looking at the map, the pier was located to the southwest, while the mine entrance was located to the south. She predicted that the ore-vein would be to the southeast. Arriving at the mine entrance, she first examined the sign which said 'Private Property, do not enter.'

Little Ye Tian calculated based on the location of the previous mini vein and finally brought everyone to a place to begin tunnelling. After an entire day of full speed digging, a tens of meters tall wall of magic crystal was exposed by the tunnel.

Countless raw ores and crystals glittered within it. A veteran miner driving a mining machine had nearly lost his voice at the sight. “My god, thi-this... such a massive magic crystal vein. The empire actually gave up on this place? This magic crystal vein will be enough for Black Rock City to use for, eh, I don’t even know how many years...”

Still at the pier southwest of Callor Hills, when Marquis Azshara heard that it was an enormous vein, he gasped. He originally expected it to be another mini-vein, who would have thought it would be so enormous! He quickly called some people to the scene. Seeing the beautiful crystal wall tens of meters high, and this was only the portion that was exposed, he knew Ye Cang’s group had earned big this time, even after giving away 30%. With the pier and the magic crystal vein, Black Rock City was also about to enter a period of prosperity. He turned and looked at Little Ye Tian, who was calmly directing the mining process. This girl was also a lucky charm. Although this news couldn’t be completely hidden, they could still announce it as just a large ore vein.

Since there were already existing minecart rails, they very quickly connected to the existing system to continuously extract and transport the ore. They had formally opened for business. The sentry towers were once again lit. Azshara even created three new watchtowers and assigned some guards to the entry points of the hill to prevent trespassing.

Little Ye Tian returned to Black Rock City. They needed someone trustworthy to watch over that area, so she contacted Ye Cang. Ye Cang thought of Thorns and Roses, but changed his mind. Currently, Granny Rica would be the best choice but she was getting on in age. The Happy Firmaments Grocery as well as the Goddess Association were already keeping her busy and she still had to look after Jesse. He suddenly recalled the Fermianna tribe leader Lianna; Anya’s trusted clanswoman; an elder of the goddess association. Right, isn’t there still her? He quickly had Little Ye

Tian go to the Goddess Association's manager training class.

Little Ye Tian arrived at the manager training class and saw a group of tutors receiving brainwashing. She called Lianna over. Lianna knew that this was a matter of great importance. She was moved by Ye Cang's trust in her and quickly set off to Callor Hills to oversee the scene.

Little Ye Tian stretched lazily, then left for her own laboratory to play around.

Ye Cang passed by the dark cave instance. It was as packed as before. His own booth was still thriving. Nodding satisfied, he left for the sinkhole. There were platforms being built around it. It seemed like construction for the lifting machine had already begun. He walked over to a small platform and saw Little Mar drinking while talking to a worker.

# Chapter 488: Journey to the West

---

Little Mar saw the arriving Ye Cang and wrapped an arm around him while laughing heartily. “Not bad! Kid, you’re leading Black Rock City to prosperity. Supplies, transportation, commerce, will all bloom with this as foundation; especially transportation and commerce.”

“I’m currently extremely poor...” Ye Cang’s words made Little Mar freeze.

Little Mar changed to a look of contempt, “Are you messing with me?”

“The construction costs are too great, especially the plans for the new goddess city. The early phase already has me questioning the profits.” Ye Cang smiled bitterly.

“Once the goddesses’ city is established, the profits...” Little Mar continued to look down on him.

“True, let’s not talk about this. About me establishing a city, has the empire shown any reaction?” Ye Cang was a bit worried about this. Although Azshara didn’t stop him, he wasn’t sure about the government’s policy.

“Don’t worry, they won’t oppose it. In fact, they will happily support you taking on this tough task. Black Peaks has been sitting idle for more than just a few years. The empire’s funds and supplies are almost all sent to the front lines. This natural barrier has always been a secret concern of theirs. If someone can restore the three goddesses past glory, it will be a great help to the empire’s rear defences. Although we haven’t interacted with the Isca Fanda of the desert for hundreds of years, there are still the occasional merchants who visit. They are currently undergoing civil unrest which has been ongoing for hundreds of years. The latest news tells of their divided power and politics, becoming countless tribes. With Prosperity Hill being taken over by bugs,

they were too busy to come and we were too busy to go.” Little Mar talked about the construction of the goddesses city as well as the situation of the Isca Fanda Empire in the desert wasteland to the north.

“Even a religious city, as long as it isn’t an evil cult, there will be no objections.” Little Mar continued.

“Then I can be relieved. Oh right, do you know about Thousand Peaks Mountain...” Ye Cang nodded, then recalled something he wanted to ask.

Before he could even finish, Little Mar interrupted him, “Don’t mess with that place. It’s not worth the trouble. It’s not like the empire never considered it but it really isn’t worth the cost. The price in order to suppress that place is enormous. It would take at least a power equivalent to a few military legions.”

“So difficult!?” Ye Cang knew what a power equivalent to a military legion was, for example Maru Naya.

“Mm, in other words, don’t even think about it for now. Let’s discuss it again when the time is right. Exterminating that big guy is inevitable but not now. Let’s first stabilize our current resources without delay.” Little Mar’s words helped ground Ye Cang’s heart.

Together, they chatted and laughed for a while. Ye Cang left the sinkhole and arrived at the entrance to the Dark Cave. He gathered his party. Their instance had refreshed by now. NalanPureSoul once again joined them, then everyone quickly completed it once more, obtaining a dark gold item and countless gold equipment.

“Brother PureSoul, how about joining our party? I’ll double your bonus!” Ye Cang grinned.

The others all broke out in cold sweat. He is one of the leaders of China’s greatest guilds, what would he join your little party for? He should be inviting you. You think you can take their boss after a bit of success?

“Brother PaleSnow, as charming as always...” NalanPureSoul laughed lovably, then took his leave.

“Bro, where should we go next?” Zhang ZhengXiong felt like these few days had all been spent on internal affairs, there hadn’t been any fighting and killing. They had finally come to the instance, but it wasn’t a challenge anymore. They had completely steamrolled it.

Ye Cang opened Little Ye Tian’s map, then looked around the basin. All the noteworthy areas had been explored. Thousand Peaks Mountains wasn’t something they could touch right now. According to Little Mar, if someone went to Thousand Peaks Mountains, then they would surely die.

Ye Cang saw that Northwest of the lake was another stretch of mountains. Pondering for a moment, he said, “Let’s go that way and see.”

Everyone set off and began overcoming mountain after mountain. The process took them another week. Zhang ZhengXiong’s axe hacked through a huge Moon-Bellied Bear and saw that past it was another mountain. He said gloomily, “Bro, it’s already been a week, yet we haven’t even seen an instance or anything. Even though we got quite a few materials, this can’t go on.”

“Victory comes to those who persevere. I don’t believe we won’t find anything. Onwards. We’ll talk once we comb through that mountain.” Ye Cang said angrily as he shot down a Steel-Feathered Eagle, plucked it clean and threw it into the cart.

And just like that, they spent more weeks overcoming mountains; travelling across arduous terrain and climbing up deadly rock-faces. ThornyRose watched as their experience rose rapidly on the level rankings, not falling behind. Not bad, those guys have been pretty diligent this past month.

CloudDragon looked at the one suppressing him on the level

rankings, in other words, the unrelenting Ye Cang. This guy is so hard working? He's been training in the mountains for half a month straight.

NalanPureSoul was also suspicious. There had been no news of them recently.

As for Ye Cang's group, they stood dishevelled on a mountain peak, looking at even more mountains ahead. There wasn't even a lake or something to be seen. Besides trees, there were only mountains and those increasingly difficult monsters.

"Team Leader, let's go back. It'll take us at least half a month to rush back from here..." FrozenCloud suggested. Actually, their gains this half a month weren't bad. They fought many wild mini-bosses, both of the flying and crawling variety, but the thought of continuing was sickening. She looked beside her to the three meter tall, giant white toad. The little tadpole had already become a big toad. Its color also changed from grey to white and it even learned a light-type crowd-control skill.

"No! Onwards! I have to see what is over there!!" Ye Cang was going mad.

Another half a month passed. Ye Cang's group looked even more messed up as they viewed the barren wasteland beneath them. Beyond the wasteland was a vast ocean. Ocean, desert, mountains. FrozenCloud and SpyingBlade actually felt some admiration for Ye Cang. He really stubbornly brought them to the most western part of the Black Peaks.

SpyingBlade turned and looked towards Little Ye Tian's perfect, up-to-date map. This was one of their greatest harvests this trip.

Hearing an eagle cry, Ye Cang raised his brows and activated Eagle Eyes. Through Little Blue Feather's field of view, he saw a village. It was by the shore, with its back to the mountains. Outside the village was the wasteland. More importantly, the village had a dock. They could even see little fishing boats.



“There’s a village! Let’s go look.” Ye Cang happily brought everyone down the mountain, rushing towards the village. Arriving outside the village, the villagers saw Ye Cang’s group and were startled. They directly called the village chief over.

“I’m Sand Sea Village’s Chief - Mocha. How may I address you?” The chief looked like a middle-aged mediterranean. He wore a linen robe and spoke respectfully.

“I’m from the Planetary Empire. Black Rock City’s Earl, PaleSnow.” Ye Cang announced his identity.

The chief looked at the earl medal on Ye Cang’s chest and sighed in relief. “So you’re a traveller from the Planetary Empire. However, we’re in a remote region, there is hardly anyone who comes here. It has been over a hundred years since a visitor from the Planetary Empire has come...”

## Chapter 489: Ocean Abyss

---

Ye Cang roughly learned about Sand Sea Village. It was so boring he nearly fell asleep. It was the very image of a remote little village, nothing special. From time to time, a desert tribe traveller will accidentally make their way here. Little Ye Tian took out her map and roughly marked out the border. This was still within the borders of the Planetary Empire, so Sand Sea Village naturally belonged to it.

Ye Cang informed the chief that he would have Black Rock City send someone here with supplies every year, which greatly increased his reputation with the village.

Little Ye Tian arrived at the seaside and compared it to the holy church's rough maps. The sea here should lead into an unknown area. After an unknown amount of time, one might be able to reach Farsarqi Seaport. However, such a big unknown area, why had no one explored it?

"Sir Chief, what is this unknown sea area?" Little Ye Tian pointed to the map and asked.

"The Ocean Abyss, the sea monsters there are extremely powerful and the area is guarded by sea giants and deep-sea fishmen. No one can pass through it without their permission." The old chief Mocha replied. He looked at Little Ye Tian and smiled, "So young and already a knight of the holy church, really amazing."

Little Ye Tian shook her head modestly.

Lin Le looked over and said unhappily, "Tsk, I'm one of the three hands of the chamber of commerce, general manager of the debt-collection department."

Night gradually fell. Everyone sat around a fire on the beach, gazing at the boundless sea and the stars. It almost felt like reality.

“I’ve decided! We’re going to pass through Ocean Abyss to Farsarqi!” Ye Cang suddenly got up and pointed to the distance. Everyone sighed. They weren’t sure about the sea giants, but with their Team Leader’s reputation amongst fishermen, perhaps he could receive their friendship. No forget about friendship, as long as they were allowed to pass, it would be fine. However, just thinking about going to such a dangerous place so early in the game, everyone felt a bit nervous but also a bit excited.

The next day, everyone bade farewell to the village chief, then sat on their steamship and sailed towards Farsarqi. Giant sea serpents, giant octopus, they dealt with them one after the other. Since the two were both afraid of fire, they were burnt miserably by molotovs and forced to retreat into the water. Then Ye Cang would pursue them and take them out, displaying the power of his fishman title.

The sea became an increasingly darker shade of blue as they progressed. The little steamboat was like a leaf floating on the big ocean. Ye Cang looked to the distance where a few ‘people’ were sitting on some huge reefs. Seeing a boat, they swam over with weapons in hand. Little Ye Tian estimated that they were at least a few thousand meters away. According to that scale, these people must be at least 20 meters tall. Everyone gasped, then quickly sailed at top speed towards deeper seas. Ye Cang hurriedly dumped magic crystals into the boat. Who wants to be caught by those things!

“Luckily the boat is pretty fast at escaping...” FrozenCloud watched as they gradually threw off the giants.

A few days later, after a few more thrilling chases, they arrived at the center of the Ocean Abyss. They saw that from the distance, an enormous white bird was flying over. Little Ye Tian estimated that it had to be at least 300 meters large! What in the world was that!? Ye Cang identified it.

## Sea God Bird - Logia (Holy Beast - Ocean Abyss)

An Oceanic Holy Beast who roams the Ocean Abyss. Mild-natured but catastrophically destructive when angered. It's meat is a godly item among bird meats while its liver is a delicacy rarely seen in the human world. In all, its whole body is a treasure.

"It's a holy beast. It's got the word god in its name..." Ye Cang's words made everyone gasp. They were only level friggin 20 and had already met a wandering holy beast. Hopefully it wasn't the sort to eat on sight, otherwise they would definitely be sent back to town.

SpyingBlade saw that it had no intention to attack and let loose a sigh. He turned to see Ye Cang pulling out his ballista, aiming with shaky hands. The sigh he just released was once again sucked back in. He quickly pounced over, "Team Leader! Are you insane!?"

Everyone saw Ye Cang's actions and quickly held him down.

"It's a holy beast! A body full of top-quality treasure and it will definitely have a godly artifact! With my divine hand, I might even get a super godly artifact! Super super godly artifact! Super super super godly artifact!" Ye Cang watched with red eyes as his golden goose flew off, leaving behind a gust of air which nearly capsized their little boat. It was as if a storm was blowing.

Everyone had trouble even standing with the gale blowing against them. Just flying by nearly capsized our boat. Fight my ass! Everyone held down the slowly calming Ye Cang.

"Because of you all, we missed a chance to obtain a godly artifact..." Ye Cang turned away and sighed, muttering complaints.

Everyone silently returned to minding their own business and they continued to travel carefully.

An island gradually came into view. They became even more careful as they approached. Ye Cang even leapt into the water,

watching out for any underwater activity. As they got closer, Ye Cang saw a couple of dark-blue skinned fishmen flying through the water. They were three meters tall and carried harpoons and spears in their hands. Ye Cang quickly shouted, “Mmmrrglllm!!”

The fishmen heard him and surfaced from the water. Ye Cang also surfaced. Everyone watched as Ye Cang talked with their leader, a tall fishman. A few of the fishmen jumped onto the boat, looking around. Confirming something, Ye Cang turned back and said, “Go ashore...”

Little Ye Tian stopped the boat by the shore. The fishmen brought everyone to a nearby sea cave. As they went deeper, they could tell that it was the fishmen’s habitat. A nearly ten meter tall fishman carrying a giant blade came out from the biggest tunnel. It had a mouth full of sharp teeth and an extremely grim expression. Looking at Ye Cang, it grinned and said, “Mmmm Mrrrggk! Alabachia! Kaka!!”

Ye Cang walked over towards an injured fishman laying down on the ground. His hand shone with the soft watery light of a healing stream and the fishman very quickly recovered its vigor. It spoke thankfully to Ye Cang, “Mglrmglmgllmgl! Kaka!”

“I understood one word, ‘thanks’...” FrozenCloud said. From back when they were grinding fishmen prestige in Really New Village, they all learned a few common phrases but every tribe’s language was a bit different.

The fishman boss was extremely happy upon seeing Ye Cang’s impressive Healing Stream. It rushed over and pulled Ye Cang deeper into the cave, anxiety apparent on his face.

Half a day later, everyone saw Ye Cang come out holding a staff embedded with a black pearl. He walked out step by step, then raised the staff glowing with a faint black magical light, his expression solemn.

“Mmmm Mrrrggk! Alabachia! Mrgk!!! Mrgk!!!” The fishman boss

raised its giant blade and shouted.

The group of elite fishmen raised their weapons and joined in.

The party watched as the fishman boss spoke a few words with a big grin. The group of fishmen began to start a fire, preparing many huge shellfish and something that looked like a giant head. It looked just like one of the giants that had been chasing them before. This... They were completely baffled. What happened?

# Chapter 490: Fishman Shaman

---

The fishman boss and Ye Cang sat together, exchanging a few words. Ye Cang started laughing, patting the fishman's shoulder familiarly. He then started walking back to the group with a belly full of laughter. Sitting down with them, he began to eat some clam meat, "So good. Delicious. You all try it..."

"....." Everyone's chest tightened. This is the first thing you do when you get back!?

"What's going on!?" Wu Na asked, dumbfounded.

"Oh, it told me a really funny joke. It goes like this. Once there was a fishman with a mushroom growing out of its head... it..." Speaking till there, he was stopped by Wu Na's glare. Shrugging his shoulders, he said calmly, "It's nothing much. I'm now the Alabachia tribe's great shaman and got worshipped prestige. Earlier in there was Abado's daughter, Ababy, who got stepped on by a sea giant and her head wouldn't stop bleeding. The original great shaman is too old and was also on his dying breath. Before passing on, it accepted me as a fishman shaman, teaching me quite a few skills."

This is nothing much!? Wu Na, FrozenCloud, and SpyingBlade all gasped.

"We might need to stay here a few days because if I leave, this place won't have a shaman anymore. Before passing on, the old fishman shaman asked me to train some talented fishmen. Once I finish, I'll be able to leave." Ye Cang continued to add, then got up and spoke to Abado, pointing at the party, "Mmmm, mrgl, rrgrr!"

"Congratulations, your prestige with the Alabachia tribe has become respected!" Everyone immediately received this system message.

After the celebration, Ye Cang brought everyone to his 'room

(cave)' to rest.

Ye Cang showed his newly obtained skills and talents to everyone.

### Fishman Shaman Ritualist (Class Talent - Shaman)

Increase effects of water type magic by 35%, intelligence by 20% and will receive maximum respect from any fishman tribe. Most water-type factions will no longer take the initiative to attack you.

### Underwater Breathing (Fishman)

Can breath underwater.

### Water Source Totem (Shaman - Beginner Level)

Instantly summon a water source totem. Friendly targets within range will recover 4 health every 3 seconds, 2 mana every 5 seconds, and gain +10% spell power and +5% spell focus. Can only maintain one water source totem at the same time. Cost: 10 mana. Cooldown: None.

### Lightning Shield (Shaman - Beginner Level)

Instantly create a shield of lightning around a target. When receiving a close range attack, will deal 30 lightning damage to the attacker with a chance to cause paralysis. Consumed after five hits.

Cost: 25 Mana.

Cooldown: 1 minute.

### Healing Spring (Shaman - Beginner Level)

Instantly summon a fountain full of healing water. Allies can drink from it to receive the effects of an equivalent leveled healing stream. Can be used ten times. Fountain lasts for a minute.

Cost: 35 mana.

Cooldown: 5 minutes.



### Lightning Bolt (Shaman - Beginner Level)

Chant 3 lines (about 2 seconds) to shoot a ball of lightning, dealing 157 lightning damage to enemies in an area with a chance to cause paralysis.

Cost: 30 mana.

Cooldown: 1 minute.

### Healing Tide (Shaman - Beginner Level)

Chant 1 major water verse (about 5 seconds) to summon 5 bursts of healing water. Every ally standing in the tide will recover 51 health and 20 mana per wave. Enemies will receive 37 water damage.

Cost: 90 mana.

Cooldown: 30 minutes.

### Enchant Weapon - Wave (Shaman - Beginner Level)

Instantly enchant your weapon with shaman magic, wrapping the weapon in a layer of water. The next three attacks will deal extra water element damage. The third attack will have an added water crowd-control effect.

Cost: 25 mana.

Cooldown: 4 minutes.

### Enchant Weapon - Thunder (Shaman - Cooldown)

Instantly pour the power of thunder and lightning into your weapon. The next three attacks will deal extra lightning element damage. The third attack will have an added lightning crowd-control effect.

Cost: 25 mana.

Cooldown: 5 minutes.

Everyone sighed at how their team leader had taken another step towards omnipotence. Even his healing ability had improved with the addition of Healing Tide and Healing Spring. Especially Healing Tide, the effects were obviously powerful. Not only did it heal and restore mana in an area, it even dealt AOE damage to

enemies. What FrozenCloud paid more attention to was Lightning Shield and Lightning Bolt. Those skills, if used well, would be extremely effective in a grapple. What SpyingBlade looked at were the final two enchant weapon skills. Those would be good skills for an assassin. An assassin could never have enough weapon enchantment and poison skills.

Ye Cang took out the gorgeous black pearled staff and lifted it up, “This thing is good. Let me show you the world...”

Now, everyone shifted their attention to the staff. Its body appeared black but it was in fact made entirely of a beautiful crystalline material. It had a spiral design and the black pearl on top looked like a fruit being held up by petals. It gave off a faintly azure light.

Alabachia’s Light (Unique - Shaman - ??? - Quest Item)

Category: Staff

Requirements: Alabachia Tribe Fishman or Shaman

Damage: 49 - 55

+45 All Attributes

+10% Intelligence

+10% Dexterity

+10% Mana

+70 Water Spell Effect

+70 Lighting Spell Effect

Reduce water and lightning damage received by 45%.

Increase effect of water and lightning element spells by 20%.

- Water Spear

Switch to water spear form. Every close ranged attack will deal an additional 20% water damage.

- Geyser

Summon a violent gush of water in the target area, dealing 115 water damage with a chance to cause knock-up and knockback.

Cooldown: 1 hour.

- Lightning Lance

Switch to lightning lance form. Every close range attack will deal an additional 20% lightning damage.

- Electric Flash

Instantly shoot out a lightning lance which pierces into its target and explodes, dealing 130 damage with a chance to cause paralysis.

Cooldown: 1 hour.

Ye Cang instantly switched it to lightning lance form. With a flash of electricity, the black pearl turned into the tip of a lance coursing with electricity. He then changed it to Water Spear form. The tooth-like spear tip rippling with azure light looked gorgeous.

SpyingBlade compared it to a Black Gold quality item and more or less understood that this item must be the rank above Black Gold. Recalling Ye Cang's 'show you the world', he sighed. Last season, I was covered in Godly Artifacts. Now that's what you call 'showing you the world'. However, for this stage in the game, this thing really is a game changing item, something that even professional players could only hope for. This must be a top mid-game item.

# Chapter 491: Lin Le's History

---

Ye Cang reluctantly took out his shadow pike. "A'Xiong, do you have any way to fuse them?"

"I can try, but there is no guarantee." Zhang ZhengXiong shrugged.

"Then let's decide when we get back. Everyone rest up. We'll be here for a few days, so once the sun rises, you all go accept some quests and check out the armory." Ye Cang said, then logged off. After taking a shower, he laid down in bed and gazed at the moonlight shining through his window. Reaching out, he slowly opened a cabinet and took out a face-down picture frame. The moon shed light onto the picture. Ye Cang exposed a faint smile and murmured towards the photo, "A'Xiong is doing very well. He's already a man. Happy? QinXue..."

A good while later, Ye Cang put the photo back in the cabinet, then went to the balcony and let the sea breeze blow his messy white hair.

Ye Cang looked at the balcony on the other side. Lin Le was there in pajamas, staring off into space. Is he still thinking of his mom and dad?

Ye Cang returned to his room and called Song Xin's number, "Yo, sister-in-law..."

"Something the matter? It's so late..." Song Xin asked.

"Any news on Lele's parents? If you can't handle it, then I'll do it." Ye Cang suddenly became serious.

Song Xin hesitated a bit, "Lele is doing fine. I think it's better not to investigate."

"Why?" Ye Cang frowned.

"His past involves the Heaven's Sword Sect. Right now, Lele is

very happy and satisfied, don't put him in danger, ok?" Song Xin's words made Ye Cang frown harder. Heaven's Sword Sect, one of china's three great secret sects. Heaven's Sword, Devil's Gate, Hundred Flowers; said to be the greatest powers in china. Heaven's Sword and Devil's Gate had an especially great number of talents. Although they don't reveal anything to outsiders but every organization knew how fearsome they were.

"It should be for Lele to decide. I'll do as I see fit. Anyways, you no longer need to get involved on your side. There's no benefit for you." Ye Cang said, then hung up the phone. He directly called Hunting Flame. "Help me investigate the Heaven's Sword Sect's activity within the past 30 years. Get me an answer quickly."

"Understood." Hunting Flame didn't ask anything and directly began investigating.

Ye Cang returned to the balcony and saw the somewhat sad Lin Le. If he really had to leave one day, he should at least help Lele find the parent's he'd always been waiting for, dead or alive...

Song Xin was becoming a bit nervous. What did he mean to do? She finished up work at top speed, then arranged a flight home.

Ye Cang received reports from Hunting Flame one after the other. The more he saw, the deeper he frowned. Little Ye Tian saw that Ye Cang hadn't slept. She walked over, saw the data and began to analyze it. "21 years ago, the successor at the time, Lin ZhongYue, went against the elders and got together to a blind girl from XingYun City, Zhong Xiang, and eloped. Afterwards, the two of them were captured by the sect to be punished. Part way back, Zhong Xiang was accidentally killed by Lin ZhongYu. Lin ZhongYue was imprisoned in Heaven's Sword Pavilion. The autopsy showed that Zhong Xiang had given birth before which meant they still have a child somewhere. This child, based on the later parts of the investigation, is almost definitely Lele. However, with the Lin family's capabilities, there is no reason they can't find the child."

(Note: Lin ZhongYue and Lin ZhongYu are different people... their names just seem really similar when written in english letters. We'll probably come across this some more with the Lin family.)

“There must be some sort of secret agreement, since it involved a direct descendent of the Lin bloodline.” Ye Cang took a deep breath. “Little Tian, call Lele over.”

Little Ye Tian hesitated a moment, “Father, don’t tell me you want to...”

Ye Cang waved her off. Little Ye Tian turned and walked out the door to call Lele.

A serious Ye Cang showed the data to Lin Le. Lin Le’s jaw clenched when he saw that his mother had already died and that his father was imprisoned. Finally, he relaxed his fist. He knew of China’s three great sects from his Master Qin before, one of which was the Heaven’s Sword Sect.

“Lele, want to go? I can go with you...” Ye Cang said calmly.

Lin Le froze for a moment, then immediately showed a naive smile. “No. Lele is very happy right now. Lele is happy as long as mom and dad didn’t abandon Lele for being stupid.”

Saying that, Lin Le returned to his room. Ye Cang looked at Lin Le’s back, somewhat puzzled. Was he afraid of implicating others?

After a few days in the game, everyone noticed that Lin Le’s thoughts often wandered. He frequently stared off into space lost in thought and he rarely showed off anymore. Even SpyingBlade found it strange. Lin Le loved showing off the most. What was going on?

Ye Cang found a few gifted fishmen and began to teach them. It only took a few days of instructions to settle things.

Before boarding their boat, Ye Cang did a headcount. Where did Lele go? He recalled that a few hours ago, Lele said he was going to

Song Xin's place and would be back in a few hours. Sensing something wrong, he quickly logged off and called Song Xin. "Is Lele with you!?"

"No, what is it?" Song Xin asked doubtfully.

Ye Cang directly hung up and went to Lin Le's empty room. On the desk was a slip of paper. This made him recall the day that QinXue had died. He slowly walked over, picked up the paper and read the crooked, crayon written words.

"Brother Lil' White, Lele is going to save daddy. Thank you for your kindness, but this is Lele's own business. I can't trouble you guys. It doesn't matter if Lele lives or dies, Lele will do it. Finally... thank you Brother Lil' White and Brother Lil' Xiong for taking care of Lele, for being Lele's family. Hee hee. If I don't come home, please tell A'Xin... Tell her I went to save the world and am getting married to Sailor Jupiter."

Ye Cang held the paper tightly. He returned to his room, retrieved a long black bag, and disappeared like a flash of white lightning. Zhang ZhengXiong hurried to chase in his direction. SpyingBlade and the others all followed behind.

Ye Cang suddenly turned back and looked at everyone. "You guys don't follow. Go home. I'll go bring Lele back..."

Zhang ZhengXiong saw the slip of paper. He had already heard about what happened from Little Ye Tian. He faced the others and said, "You should all return."

SpyingBlade raised his brows. Without saying anything, he brought the unwilling Fang Ci and the confused FrozenCloud back to the house.

"Bro, Lele calls me Brother Lil' Xiong. We're brothers. When my brother is in trouble, how can I go home!" Zhang ZhengXiong said earnestly.

Ye Cang hesitated, then smiled. QingXue, see this? A'Xiong has

become a man who can hold up the sky. He turned to Little Ye Tian, “Little Tian, you go back and look after the others.”

“Father... I...” Little Ye Tian wanted to say something but when she saw Ye Cang’s serious expression, she could only sigh and turn back.

“A’Xiong, this time will be really dangerous. Not even I am guaranteed to walk out of the Heaven’s Sword Sect unscathed. Are you sure you want to come?” Ye Cang asked.

“You still need to ask?” Zhang ZhengXiong grinned.

“I’ve promised your sister that I won’t let you die before me... so as long as I live, you won’t die.” Ye Cang said confidently, then chased to the XingYun City’s train station.

Zhang ZhengXiong faintly smiled, watching Ye Cang’s back. He recalled his sister who had depended on that thin, little back. He smiled exceptionally gently and said, “That’s the back of a true man...”



# Chapter 492: Heaven's Sword Sect

---

Lin Le looked at the map that he had swindled from Mr Qin. Sitting on the train, he clenched his fist and took out the picture of a young man who looked a lot like himself. Father, Lele is coming to save you!

Ye Cang chased after Lin Le, getting on the second train to XingYun City.

Lin Le passed through XingYun City and entered Mount Starshine. Following the map, he arrived at a forest. Though it appeared to be an ordinary forest, according to what Mr Qin said, the Heaven's Sword Sect had actually set up an barrier here. If an ordinary person were to enter, they would find themselves eventually leaving the mountain instead of getting deeper. Passing through the barrier would not be hard for someone like Mr Qin, who had mastered the Yin Yang Trigrams. Lin Le, whose intuition for the Yin Yang Trigrams astounded even Mr Qin, could not be trapped by a mere barrier.

As Lin Le took his first step, a hand grabbed his shoulder and held him back. Turning his head, Ye Cang's calm expression appeared in his sight. Feeling extremely happy, yet also full of guilt, he called out, "Brother Lil' White..."

Lin Le was happy because Ye Cang had really chased after him. He felt guilty because he would be implicating Brother Lil' White and Brother Lil' Xiong. He also saw Zhang ZhengXiong running over from nearby.

"Lele, we're brothers, so your father is also our father. If you want to save him, then we do it together..." Ye Cang raised his hand and gave a hard slap.

Bearing the pain and covering his face, Lele felt moved. "Brother Lil' White, it's dangerous, I don't want to..."

Ye Cang slapped him on the back of the head. He looked with an aggrieved expression towards the distant mountain. “Don’t you know how strong I am? I even scare myself when I go all out...”

Lin Le broke out in cold sweat.

“Let’s go...” Ye Cang strode forwards.

Ye Cang brought everyone around a few times, unable to get to the inner mountain. The humiliated Ye Cang was on the verge of destroying the place in rage. Even if he couldn’t get in, this place would pay the price by becoming a sea of fire. Zhang ZhengXiong quickly stopped him and suggested they follow the confused Lin Le. After a while, Ye Cang looked speechlessly at the forest behind them. They really made it through.

Ye Cang saw two tall obelisks in front of them. Between them were the stairs up the mountain. Clouds and mist lingered everywhere. The large amount of flora gave the place an otherworldly feel.

A man and a woman appeared before the three of them. The man had a handsome face, while the woman was cute. They stood proudly before the stone obelisks with arms crossed and simultaneously called out, “Strangers...”

Before they could speak, the two of them sensed a demonic white haired figure. They couldn’t even react as they felt a pain on their backs, and then they fell to the ground unconscious.

Ye Cang had one hand ready on the sword at his waist and the other in his pocket as he ascended the stairs. He calmly said, “Let’s go up.”

As Lin Le passed by, he didn’t forget to step on the two a few times before following behind Ye Cang.

The three of them followed the steps upwards. Many sword wielding Heaven’s Sword disciples came down but before they could speak, they were instantly knocked out by a chop from Ye

Cang, not stopping their advance in the least. Zhang ZhengXiong smiled bitterly. Before he and Lele could even react, their bro had already taken out all the enemies.

The three saw that the steps were reaching an end. The simple yet solemn main hall slowly entered their sight. At the same time, nearly a thousand Heaven's Sword disciples standing guard in an array formation also entered their sight.

"I'm the elder of the Heaven's Sword Sect's Sword Hall, Lin ZhongTian! You three better have a good explanation for forcing your way here..." A middle aged man wearing a light black jacket walked out. Although he didn't have a sword, he gave off the feeling that his body itself was an incredibly sharp sword!

"Lele, say it." Ye Cang backed up, his right hand still on the hilt of his sword. He looked at Lin ZhongTian without a trace of fear.

"You villains! Release my daddy!" Lin Le jumped forwards and shouted.

When Lin ZhongTian saw Lin Le's appearance, his jaw dropped. Quickly, his brows furrowed and he shouted, "Evil creature! Only because of your father's begging and the elder's insistence that you are a Lin clan member as well as a fool did we leave you alone, letting you live. Now you recklessly charge back and cause trouble!? Form the formation!!"

The moment he finished speaking, the people forming the formation all fell to the ground. Ye Cang's figure only flickered for an instant. He looked at Lin ZhongTian and quietly said, "You best stay out of the way. I'm only holding back from killing because this isn't an eradication mission."

Lin ZhongTian was about to act but Ye Cang had already passed by him. The hand that was in his pocket was now pressing down on Lin ZhongYian's shoulder. A quiet voice spoke by his ear, "Don't be foolish, alright..."

Bringing along the stunned Lin Le and Zhang ZhengXiong, they directly entered the Sword Hall.

Lin ZhongTian was immediately drenched in cold sweat. What kind of speed was that!? He didn't dare to move for a long time because he knew that in the instant he turned around, his head might already have left its owner. That white haired man's strength was terrifying... Lin ZhongTian lowered his head and noticed that his fingers were on the ground and he hadn't even felt a thing. His heart seemed to freeze...

The three entered a very spacious hall. A mutated beast instantly obstructed their path. It was a nearly 40 meters large ape. Ye Cang slowly raised his head, his eyes becoming as cold as the nine hells. The enormous ape slowly retreated to the side, opening up a path because it could sense the scene of countless mutated beasts being cut into cubes of meat by this man.

Ye Cang saw that there was no one on the throne at the end of the Sword Hall. The entire place was completely empty. Continuing on, besides the Sword Hall, there was also the place where two stone sword shaped pillars crossed. That should be the Sword Pavilion. He brought the two to continue upwards.

"Have you found out who that white haired man is yet?" At the top of the Sword Pavilion, a smooth skinned scholarly man frowned and said. This was the current head of the Heaven's Sword Sect, Lin ZhongYu.

"Still unknown, but it could be Silver Devil of the Ten Commandments..." An old man said with a squint.

"He's got some nerve. A mere Ten Commandments dares to be so rash, helping that bastard child into the Heaven's Sword Sect. What have the elders said?" Though Lin ZhongYu spoke like that, he was very much afraid of Ye Cang's strength. Even Lin ZhongTian, whose strength was about equal to his own, was defeated. Only the elders could handle this.

Heaven's Sword Sect, in some prison.

“ZhongYue, your son has come to find you. He even forced his way through the Sword Hall, making Lin ZhongYu retreat to the pavilion and ask for the elders' help.” A woman with hair as white as swan feathers sat in front of a dusty table. Her picturesque eyebrows and beautiful face formed a smile directed at a grey haired man who was shackled with meteorite steel.

“Lele...” The man's eyes seemed to regain some clarity. They first showed happiness, then despair and sorrow. He looked to the white haired woman and begged, “Third elder, I beg of you, you must spare Lele's life.”

“I will. You're big sister's only son. He is also big sister's only grandson. I will do my best to save his life. ZhongYue, you're too much like big sister. To help others, you end up getting your most beloved people in trouble.” The white haired woman said, then turned to leave. There were also people locked in the adjacent cells. One of them was a scholarly man with a goatee. He got up and faced the white haired woman with a sneer, “See you outside...”

“Is that possible? Yun Lang.” The white haired woman didn't turn back as she left.

# Chapter 493: Outside the Heaven's Sword Pavilion

---

Lin ZhongYu could now see the white haired man in the plaza. His sight was drawn to the sword at his waist. As familiar with swords as he was, he actually couldn't tell what material it was made from.

The white haired woman walked out of the sword pavilion. In her hand was a black sword. She looked at Lin Le, who looked to be made from the exact same mold as his father, and calmly said, "Give up. I can pardon you in place of the master, but ZhongYue's son has to stay behind."

"Give up. I can let you live but that guy up there has to tie himself up and let Lele punish him." Ye Cang replied calmly.

The white haired woman froze. She couldn't stop a smile from forming on her lips. Her swan-white hair seemed to dance and the sword-mark between her brows seemed to ripple for a moment. "Sir sure is..."

Before she could finish speaking, Ye Cang's sword had already arrived. The white haired woman was alarmed. So fast! She moved to block with her sword but realised that there was no way she would make it in time. She could only watch as the sword instantly stabbed through her chest. The swordlight it created actually shot off into the distance. She watched as only now did the sonic boom catch up to the sword in his hand. The ground seemed to rippled and space broke apart from the vibrations. Her brows furrowed. What kind of sword art was that? His sword skills showed no signs of any style. The previous move was only the most common and most basic thrust but it was mind-numbingly fast. She looked at Ye Cang's hand, still at the hilt of his sword, as if he had never acted at all. Truth be told, the sword just now, even she could only sense but not see it.

Ye Cang turned towards the white haired woman and smiled, “Nice dodge...”

At this time, the blue veins on Ye Cang’s sword wielding hand bulged out. Facing the top of the Sword Pavilion, he unleashed a thrust. However, to the observers, it appeared as if nothing had happened at all. Suddenly, there was another sonic boom, then a violent spiral force shot out, creating a fierce gale as it flew towards the top floor. An elder in the sky swung his sword to receive it, creating a giant moon-shaped swordlight. Instantly, the sword, along with the swordlight, were crushed by the spiral energy. The top floor also had an additional hole. If the elder was any slower at retreating, he would have found it hard to escape the same fate.

The white haired woman materialized her sword mark and with a wave of her hand, her black sword transformed into a thousand swords. Feeling a chill at her throat, she suddenly found a calmly smiling Ye Cang with his face right up against hers and his sword at her throat. Only now did she feel that bone-chilling coldness.

“I’m not here to kill, so... I hope you can calm down, alright...?” Ye Cang smiled, then turned to walk away. The hand in his pocket, unbeknownst to when, was now holding onto a slender arm. When the white haired woman saw the arm, she suddenly turned to find hers missing. When had he torn it off!? Right now, blood was spilling out of it. She kneeled and hit some pressure points with her left hand to stop the bleeding. Ye Cang tossed her arm back to her.

The white haired woman looked at Ye Cang’s calm smile and felt a chill in her heart. This person... Wait... He looks just like Adam. Could it be...

“You’re an artificial human?”

Ye Cang didn’t respond. He nodded, but then shook his head.

Lin Le righteously opened up a banner, “Give back daddy! You

damn bad guys!”

Zhang ZhengXiong helped hold it up. The people here are too abnormal. My bro is even more of a freak.

The white haired woman retrieved her hand. She asked him after drinking some medicine, “What is the sword to you?”

“A tool.” Ye Cang said indifferently. He looked at the elder flying over from the distance and frowned. The hand holding his bag suddenly moved to his sheath.

Lin ZhongYu was frightened when Ye Cang instantly defeated third elder, but seeing the honored great elder coming, his heart relaxed. He respectfully bowed to the long eyebrowed, white clothed elder. “Great Elder.”

The great elder paid no attention to him. He looked at the white haired woman holding her right arm. “SongYin was defeated? Interesting.”

With a gentle leap, the elder appeared besides SongYin. Seeing Ye Cang’s white hair, white brows, and white lashes, he waved his hand and ten thousand swords weaved towards him.

Clang~ Clang~ Clang~ Clang~ Ye Cang hand became fuzzy. Of the incoming swords, not a single one got near the three of them. There was only a sky full of the sound of clashing swords.

At this moment, Ye Cang’s left hand threw his sheath to the ground, exposing the white blade. With sword in hand, he frowned. He had already activated the 6th gene lock, and hoped he wouldn’t have to go up to the 8th.

“A’Xiong, Lele, if I tell you to go later, you have to run far away. I’m afraid of injuring you two.” Ye Cang said with his back to the two of them.

“I got it, bro.” Zhang ZhengXiong and Lin Le retreated a few steps and continued holding up the banner like protestors.



Ye Cang dashed forwards, arriving instantly. The great elder only seemed to turn slowly, yet managed to dodge.

Ye Cang frowned. Their two 'fasts' were different. The great elder had a sort of nimble fast, while he himself sought the pinnacle of pure speed. He suddenly turned back, becoming hundreds of crossing sword afterimages. The great elder moved like he was dancing; wherever his sword passed, a thousand cuts interweaved. The audience could only see the countless sparks from their collisions and hear the sound of their swords colliding. The white haired woman retreated to the edge and watched their exchanged with a gasp. He can actually fight with master!

The great elder smiled and captured Ye Cang's blade. "This is a good sword. If I'm not wrong, it's made from the bone of some creature."

Ye Cang calmly nodded, then smiled lightly, "Correct. Guess what creature it belongs to."

"Human?" The great elder could feel Ye Cang's aura from his sword, as if it were a part of his body.

Ye Cang smiled. Correct, this sword was made from the spine left behind when I first went berserk. Pulling back his white sword, he unleashed a simple yet astonishingly fast thrust.

The great elder dodged hurriedly, "Such pure swordsmanship. If those brats had your comprehension and the patience to give up on the complicated and pursue simplicity, they wouldn't be so bad these days. However, your sword has no spirit. It lacks emotion."

"The sword is a tool for murder. Sword techniques are just killing skills. Since it is for killing, then obviously it should seek to kill in one strike. Superfluous things are all abandoned in pursuit of the limit of speed and power." Ye Cang smiled as he withdrew his sword.

"Such a sad sword," the great elder sighed, his two hands making

a sword seal. “Ten Thousand Sword Secret Art - Extinguish Ten Thousand Souls.”

“Such a ridiculous sword.” Ye Cang sneered, unsealing his seventh gene lock. The sword seemed to resonate, the space around it becoming fuzzy.

Against the sky full of sword lights, Ye Cang only use one attack causing the sword strikes to instantly shatter. His arm faintly trembled. This level of vibration affected even himself, but he quickly recovered.

Everyone watched as the endless stream of sword lights and the vibration continued to collide. The crushed sword lights would regather and continued to push forwards. The two of them once again locked swords. Ye Cang looked at the red sword that was now in the great elder’s hand. Finally drawing your weapon? The red sword lights continued to explode against the vibration. Ye Cang was slowly being forced back. The nimble speed of the great elder made Ye Cang feel suppressed. He sighed, “A’Xiong, Lele, go!”

## Chapter 494: Demon - Ye Cang

---

Great elder sensed an extremely dangerous aura, making him unconsciously hack towards Ye Cang with all ten thousand red sword lights, however, it sounded like he had struck at an unbreakable diamond. Clang clang clang sounds echoed around. A violent white aura broke through the red lights.

Ye Cang's pupils were no longer visible in his two eyes covered by white energy. White energy flow out from all over his body. Even his white hair was spilling with the white spiritual energy. His long hair had already grown down to his waist. The aura of danger he exuded in all directions was like that of a terrifying devil.

Ye Cang sighed. In the end, he was forced to unleash his eighth seal - demon. That old monster really was too powerful.

The great elder looked at Ye Cang. An unorthodox ability user with his body trained to such a terrifying level. The elder, holding his longsword tightly, saw a blade instantly appear before his chest. He narrowly fell short of avoiding it! He felt the pain on his shoulder and saw Ye Cang's hair flutter as it flew past him. Such speed!

“Ten Thousand Swords Secret Art! Heaven and Earth As One!” The great elder flew back and formed a sword seal. The ground and sky seemed to be engulfed by the red swords, all gathering towards Ye Cang in the center, trying to turn him into a hedgehog.

“Bro! Brother Lil' White!” Zhang ZhengXiong and Lin Le saw, from a distance, the sky and earth fill with swords, all stabbing at Ye Cang. They both cried out involuntarily.

Great Elder retrieved his sword array and looked at Ye Cang, whose entire body had been stabbed into minced meat and whose bones were now visible. Although his flesh could be torn through with difficulty, but there wasn't even a mark left on his bones. Mysteriously, Ye Cang's flesh instantly restored to what it was

before. His mouth formed into an evil grin, “Old man, that didn’t even tickle. Come at me for real...”

The great elder’s brows furrowed. If Heaven and Earth As One can’t do anything to him, then there is only that move left. With a dragon roar, a sword light instantly show out.

Ye Cang’s brows rose in surprise. Not good! It’s the Dragon Slaying Arts - True Dragon Cut! He retaliated with a vibrating sword slash. The vibrating sword and the dragon roaring sword light made contact. They mutually cancelled out, but the final winner was the great elder, whose true dragon cut had managed to slice through Ye Cang’s spine sword.

The moment his attack weakened, Ye Cang used his left hand as a shield. With a clang, his entire left arm was cut off. The red longsword cut into Ye Cang’s shoulder, slicing through two bones, and getting caught on the third, unable to budge. There was a burst of blood, however, everyone’s attention was not on Ye Cang but the elder’s chest. Ye Cang’s right hand, unbeknownst to when, had stabbed into it as if grabbing for his heart. A finger was pointed at the great elder’s Qi Core. Ye Cang, who was still bursting with white energy, faintly smiled, “Your loss. Swords are only tools as far as I am concerned. My body is the real ‘sword’.”

The great elder looked at the hand stabbed into his chest. A trace of blood leaked from the corner of his mouth. “Only a strong body can be a sword. Not going to kill me?”

“I’ve already said, I’m not here on an eradication mission but to save someone and settle a debt.” Ye Cang replied earnestly. He took out his hand, then pulled out the sword stuck in his shoulder and reconnected his left arm. It rapidly healed back.

Lin SongYin supported her master and helped him staunch the bleeding. She looked at Ye Cang, unable to speak. This man was actually so strong. Even her master lost to him. There were no more than 20 people in all of China that could stand a chance

against her master. She quickly spoke, “You should hurry and take the others away. Once the Heaven’s Sword Protector comes, you won’t be able to leave.”

The great elder nodded, “Hurry.”

Ye Cang smiled, “Since I’ve already come, I won’t leave without getting justice...”

“Is that right?” Ye Cang heard a voice beside his ear. He was about to turn around but discovered a sword already stabbed through his heart. He saw a similarly long white haired young man who was very handsome. His hair was combed back and held up with hairpins, and he wore a teal coloured robe. The sword mark on his head looked like a red spider lily.

Ye Cang’s eyes flashed when he saw Zhang ZhengXiong get sent flying by Lin ZhongYu in the distance. Lin ZhongYu’s long sword stabbed through Lin Le’s vermillion bird trigram, piercing through his heart. Then he began to walk towards Zhang ZhengXiong with a nasty grin.

I’ve promised QinXue that I’d definitely not let A’Xiong die! Definitely not! Definitely not! Those who want my brother dead! Must die! Must die!! DIE!!

A black coloured lock shattered.

The great elder looked at Ye Cang and sighed with pity. Then his eyes looked to his own master, Sword Senior - Lin Lan. This was the most terrifying existence in the Heaven’s Sword Sect.

Then something strange happened. Lin Lan saw that the white energy coming out of Ye Cang’s body was gradually turning black. Ye Cang suddenly disappeared from his sword and charged towards Lin ZhongYu, arriving in an instant.

Lin Lan laughed coldly, finding it somewhat interesting. With a slash, he appeared in front of Lin ZhongYu, his sword stabbing through Ye Cang’s heart once more. Sword lights instantly

shredded Ye Cang apart, but Ye Cang's berserk black energy quickly restored his body. Like a dying beast, Lin Le clutched his chest that was spurting blood and moved to Zhang ZhengXiong's side. Tears streamed down Lin Le's pale face. "Brother Lil'White, thank you for taking care of me for so long. This time, Lele got you involved and couldn't even save daddy. If there is a next life, Lele still wants to be brothers with you two. Sorry, Brother Lil'White, sorry..."

Lin Le continued to fall. Zhang ZhengXiong clenched his teeth. He glared at the cold Lin ZhongYu and the indifferent Lin Lan. Lin Lan looked at Lin Le and then glanced at Lin ZhongYu with a frown, "He's a child of the Lin family, why have you killed him."

"He's just an evil creature left behind by Lin ZhongYue and that blind person. He even brought people with him to break in, injuring so many of our people."

Lin ZhongYu's words made Lin Lan recall Lin ZhongYue. ZhongYue's talent and temperament were much better than this narrow minded person's. A pity. However, it involved the governing of the sect, which had nothing to do with him.

Ye Cang sat weekly on the ground, holding Lin Le, whose heart no longer beat. I've once again lost one of my beloved people. He looked at Zhang ZhengXiong, who was gnashing his teeth, on his last breath and recalled the scene that day in the pouring rain. That despair. That helplessness. That powerlessness. It all returned to him once more. I caused Lele's death... am I about to let A'Xiong die too?

"Brat, I admit that you're talented. Give up and I can leave you with your life." Lin Lan said indifferently.

"A'Xiong, I've said before that I would definitely not let you die before me..." Ye Cang slowly got up and said resolutely. The berserk black energy roiled. White energy also continued to rush forth. His hand stabbed into his palm, pulling out a sword shaped

bone.

“Such a twisted existence...” Lin Lan frowned. The feeling of danger made it so that he couldn’t help but be serious. “ZhongYu, return to the Sword Pavilion.”

Lin ZhongYu quickly flew off, back to the Sword Pavilion. Ye Cang stabbed out. The air seemed to form an enormous spiral flow which chased after Lin ZhongYu. Lin Lan waved the sword in his left hand. The energy of heaven and earth formed and rotated behind Lin ZhongYu, cancelling out Ye Cang’s spiral attack. “It’s no use...”

Ye Cang looked at the flowing lights. He only had this one move. His figure flashed and he pushed out with what appeared to be a common thrust. Lin Lan didn’t know why, but he felt like he couldn’t dodge it. He turned his body and slashed at Ye Cang’s chest. What alarmed Lin Lan was that the attack he had obviously dodged somehow cut into his ribs above his heart. He could only do his best to avoid a fatal blow. Terrifying! What kind of sword skill is that! Wait, it’s time control! His sword is so fast that it causes local time deviations!

# Chapter 495: Father and Son Reunited

---

Ye Cang spat out a mouthful of blood, then continued riding the momentum to attack. Lin Lan could feel his terrifying strength. At close range, it had nearly torn him apart. This was even while he defended with his full strength! His palm slapped away the demonic hand reaching for his neck, then he motioned. Dragon Slaying Art - Dragon Soul Break!

From his shoulder, Ye Cang was instantly cut into two but he still didn't relax his sword wielding arm. The berserk black and white energy continued to shoot out of his eyes. Pulling out another sword from his other palm, he struck once more. Lin Lan felt a burst of fright. He did his best to avoid this deadly blow. The sword that slashed past his chest made him admire Ye Cang's exquisite swordsmanship even more. Simple to the extreme, yet exquisite to the extreme. Pursuing the simplest of things but obtaining the ability of time distortion that even he himself found hard to handle. He regretfully pushed out with a palm. With a strike of his hand, Ye Cang was turned into meat paste by countless sword qis.

"Bro, Lele..." Zhang ZhengXiong couldn't stop his tears. In the end, he smiled, "We weren't born on the same day, same month, or same year, but we die on the same day, same month, and same year... At least us brothers can die together."

Lin Lan looked at Zhang ZhengXiong, who had spoken those words fearlessly. He felt even more regret. They hadn't put the word brothers to shame. He couldn't help but recall the ancient Liu Guan Zhang. How many brotherhoods throughout history could be like theirs. Charging into a dragon's lair to save a brother's father, not hesitating to risk their lives. They'd done it. He turned to leave, feeling too much regret...

There was the sound of a heart thumping, then heaven and earth seemed to lose all color, making everything look like a black and



white movie.

Song Xin was at the seaside cottage, her face full of worry. Lele and them must come home safely! Lele, if you were to die, then I don't want to continue living. She thought about the heartwarming memories, then about how colorless her world would if Lele were gone. Lele is my everything. Please don't let anything happen to him.

Song Xin didn't know that every living creature around Heaven's Sword Sect were all frozen still in a black and white world.

The originally dead Lin Le slowly got up. An extremely sinister red light shone from his two eyes. He laughed more sinisterly than an evil spirit, then began to sway. "This place... feels a bit familiar. Oh~ Ooh~This is the Heaven's Sword Sect? How nostalgic..."

Lin Lan was alarmed. Could it be? He faced him and said respectfully, "Great Ancestor Lin Sen..."

"Just hand over that Lin ZhongYu or something. This child is that brat Lin Lin's direct descendent. I've been protecting his bloodline. Since he actually managed to awaken me, I have the responsibility to ensure his safety. However, this child's temperament, wit, and talent are all very similar to that brat Lin Lin..."

'Lin Le' swept his eyes over the scene and sighed. "A pity. Hundreds of years have passed and the Lin family no longer has a possessor of the Eyes of Judgement. This child is the only possessor of the Eyes of Judgement left. Lin Lan, you are Lan Lan's son and this little guy's blood relative, but you're becoming less and less like your father. Even though your father also wasn't very sociable, he is at least someone who saved me. As for you... Hah~."

Lin Lan lowered his head, ashamed. He remained silent for a long while. Many years as a respected figure had worn away his passion and care for the public. He had become numb and cold-blooded. His two eyes regained their resolution, "Great Ancestor Lin Sen, I

understand. I won't let down my father's name."

"Good. The kid on the ground isn't dead yet. As for what comes after, do as you see fit..." Lin Sen noticed the change in Lin Lan and nodded, pleased. He then looked at Ye Cang, who was in pieces on the ground. He could instantly tell this person wasn't simple, because he could smell the scent of extreme danger from him.

...

Endless Hell, Avīci.

The white haired iron masked man, while being tortured, slowly closed his angry eyes. "Looks like I won't have to lend him 'hell'."

...

Heaven and Earth regained their color. Lin Le passed out. Zhang ZhengXiong was also in a state of shock from being on the verge of death. Ye Cang's smashed bits followed the berserk energy and fused back together, restoring his body. He got up, protecting Lin Le and Zhang ZhengXiong behind him, his sword poised to attack.

"Stop. We no longer have any reason to fight. Neither of those two are dead. Hurry and send them to the Sword Pavilion for critical care. As for Lin ZhongYu, I'll account to Lin Le..." Lin Lan said, then turned and flew up to the Sword Pavilion. He had people arrest Lin ZhongYu, spoke a few words to the great elder, then flew off to the back mountains.

Ye Cang sensed Lin Le's heartbeat and sighed in relief, but was completely puzzled. Lin SongYin quickly came over and looked at Ye Cang with suspicion. "Great Ancestor says that Lin ZhongYu is to be handed to you three for punishment. Lin ZhongYue and another from the sword pavilion prison have been granted amnesty. The more evil ones among the sect will be sentenced to the Heaven's Sword burial mound. Great Ancestor will personally guide the sect onto the correct path. Just what in the world happened between you and the Great Ancestor?"

Ye Cang had a head full of fog. As for how they escaped danger, it was a complete mystery, but since they had all come out of it together safely, he calmly chose to shake his head and remain silent. Lead by Lin SongYin, he arrived at the Sky Raising Pavilion. The other two very quickly regained their vitality. When Zhang ZhengXiong and Lin Le heard the results, they were extremely spirited. Lin Le was even happier at being able to meet his father.

In the prison.

After Lin ZhongYue was pardoned, tears wouldn't stop streaming down his face. After having his chains removed, he arrived at the Sky Raising Pavilion. When he saw Lin Le, his voice trembled, "Lele..."

"Daddy..." Lin Le met the kin that he had been mourning all this time.

Father and son embraced tightly. Ye Cang and Zhang ZhengXiong smiled. They gave Lin Le's shoulder a comforting pat.

When Mr Lin learned that it was Ye Cang who helped force their way here, obtained the Great Ancestor's approval, and even fulfilled his role as both father and big brother by taking care of Lin Le, his gratitude towards Ye Cang was so great that it got caught in his throat and was inexpressible with words. "Really, really..."

"Uncle, A'Xiong and I have treated Lele as if he were our real little brother. You are Lele's father, which means you are also our father. As sons, saving our father is what we ought to do."

"Uncle, you're now free."

Ye Cang's and Zhang ZhengXiong's earnest words made Mr Lin so moved that he broke out into laughter. For Lele to have brothers with such complementing personalities, who would fight with the elders for him and received the boss's approval, what more could he ask for!

Soon, the four of them saw Lin ZhongYu being pushed over. Ye Cang looked to Lin Le. This wasn't his business. How to deal with him was for Lin Le and Mr Lin to decide.

“Senior ZhongYue, it was really an accident. Let me off.”

Lin ZhongYue saw how far Lin ZhongYu had fallen. Hate? Killing him was not enough to quell the pain of his wife's death and his 20 years of separation with his son. He sighed. “Annoying. Third Elder, toss him into the Heaven's Sword Hell...”

Lin SongYin nodded. A couple Heaven's Sword Guards started to drag him away.

“I don't want to go to the Heaven's Sword Hell! No! Release me! I'm the clan leader!! Lin ZhongYue! You won't die a peaceful death!” Everyone saw Lin ZhongYu's ugly expression as he was dragged away and couldn't help but lament. Just a moment ago, he was the clan leader. A moment later and he's being dragged to Heaven's Sword Hell, a place that would make him wish he was dead instead.

# Chapter 496: Down the Mountain

---

Afterwards, tasked by Lin Lan, Lin ZhongYue once again became the clan leader. Though he had tried to refuse, he was still grateful for Lin Lan's kindness. The upper and lower echelons of the Heaven's Sword all sighed. Just a moment ago, he was a prisoner, the next moment, he became the dignified clan leader. They all looked in the direction of the Heaven's Sword Protector; he held the true authority in the Heaven's Sword Sect.

After a few days of contact, Lin Le was very happy. Ye Cang and Zhang ZhengXiong were also treated as guests. There were tasty foods and delicious drinks, making them not want to leave the mountain. They had completely forgotten that there were still people worried about them back at Lin Hai, waiting for news.

"Daddy. Me, Brother Lil'White, and Brother Lil'Xiong have to go back to Lin Hai for school. I'll come back when I'm free. You have to come see Lele too..." Lin Le knew that it was time for school to start, even though he didn't know that 'going to school' meant studying in a classroom and learning.

"Little Ye, ZhengXiong, I'll leave Lele to the two of you. If you need anything, don't hold back. The Heaven's Sword Sect will always be your home." Though Mr Lin was reluctant, but he knew that Lin Le was already a little adult. He had his own thoughts and goals. He couldn't just stay at the Heaven's Sword Sect all the time. Knowing that Ye Cang was looking after him, he nodded with a smile.

"I will..." Ye Cang smiled calmly, feeling like a weight had been removed from his heart. He no longer had to worry about Lele's future. He knew the strength of the Heaven's Sword Sect. The Ten Commandments couldn't even compare. He had personally experienced the depths of Lin Lan's strength and knew that what he had seen wasn't even his full power. His berserk self had never felt such powerlessness. He could truly feel the gap between them.

However, with his help and some luck, the 8th gene lock had completely opened. Who would have thought that his 8th gene lock's ability would come in a pair; one light and one dark.

Mr Lin sent the three of them to the stairs outside the Sword Hall and waved at them while they left.

Lin Lan was on a mountain peak watching the back of Ye Cang's group of three. "Those three children will be extraordinary in the future..."

A man with a goatee was smiling beside him. This was the man that SongYin had called Yun Lang. "However, whether that white hair's ending will be good or bad is hard to say. I can sense the suffering of hell from him."

"Is that right..." Lin Lan said, then suddenly struck. Yun Lang's sword fell into the garden behind them and he howled in pain. "Did I say you could take a break? Get back to memorize the daoist scriptures, southern scriptures, vajra scriptures; whatever scriptures there are, memorize them!"

Lin SongYin looked at the fallen Yun Lang. So this is what you foretold. If it were up to me, I would rather stay in jail. She looked to Ye Cang's gradually departing back and pressed down on her right arm, recalling his words then. The corners of her lips rose into a smile. He is a 'sword'... is it?

...

"Bro! When will you teach me that awesome white and black qi move?" Zhang ZhengXiong was full of excitement.

"Lele wants to learn too! Lele wants to learn too!" Lin Le happily bounced down the steps, making Ye Cang smile.

"I will. You haven't reached that stage yet..."

"Oh, oh, Brother Lil'White, daddy gave me two books called Thousand Sword Arts and Dragon Slayer Arts. He says they are manuscripts that he completed while in prison. He says we should

learn them together. Don't tell anyone." Lin Le took out two books.

"You and A'Xiong should learn. I don't need it." Ye Cang looked at the two books and saw that they didn't suit him. He watched Zhang ZhengXiong and Lin Le walk while discussing the moves and smiled once again. He thought back to that time when Lele had almost died. His heart had definitely stopped. Could it be Lin Lan who saved him? It must be so, he thought. Lele was a direct descendent after all. However, he kept feeling like something wasn't right. He shook the thought from his mind. Things were fine as long as they could live in harmony. He smiled and threw an arm around Lin Le and Zhang ZhengXiong as they descended the mountain.

...

Lin Hai, seaside cottage.

The extremely worried SpyingBlade, Song Xin and the others all saw the group of three slowly walking along the beach. Song Xin's tears suddenly fell and she ran over.. Everyone all ran over one after the other.

Wu Na's heavy heart could finally relax as she embraced Ye Cang, "Why didn't you call even once."

"My phone died in battle." Ye Cang said seriously with his calm smile.

Lin Le wiped Song Xin's tears and smile naively like a child, "I saw daddy. He got to know Lele. Lele was very happy these few days."

Song Xin nodded, unable to speak. She simply nodded and held Lele tightly to her bosom.

Zhang ZhengXiong saw that the two of them both had people to hug, so he turned towards FrozenCloud who was about to hug him too. "Fine, I'll let you hug me for a bit."

“Get lost!” Once FrozenCloud knew he was ok, she struck out with an elbow at Zhang ZhengXiong’s stomach.

“Alright, alright. Let’s all go home. Our studio has closed down for many days. Tonight is saturday, a weekend. Let’s rest tonight and start work again tomorrow afternoon.” Ye Cang stroked Wu Na’s head and urged.

That night, everyone sat around a table, talking and laughing. They listened to Lin Le talk about all the hardships they had gone through; overcoming thousands of difficulties and tens of thousands of dangers, just to see his father. It sounded like the father version of the legend of the magic lotus lantern He even managed to plagiarize the scene of cleaving Mt Hua. The story somehow became him suddenly awakening his powers and splitting the Heaven’s Sword Pavilion to save his father.

Ye Cang watched as everyone rolled their eyes at the story. He couldn’t help but smile. On their way back, Ye Cang had Lin Le keep the fact that Mr Lin was now the clan leader a secret. Lin Le also knew not to say that his father was the clan leader. Instead, he said that he was a guard.

Ye Cang waved his hand and smiled, “In short, things turned out well. The Heaven’s Sword Sect didn’t blame us either. Cheers...”

...

Late night.

Ye Cang tossed and turned on his bed, thinking about the scenes from back then; that feeling of powerlessness. He couldn’t fall asleep. He looked at the ring clutched in his hand that hung around his neck. I need to become stronger.

The next day, Song Xin kissed Lin Le goodbye and left to deal with pressing international affairs. Lin Le and Zhang ZhengXiong left to do their morning exercise. Their usual spar now included not only trigrams but also sword seals and jabs.



That afternoon, after lunch, they returned to the game.

The moment Ye Cang logged in, a message from ThornyRose arrived. “God dammit! What have you been fooling around with these few days! You didn’t even pick up your phone! I was just about to go look for you!”

“The truth is, Lele, A’Xiong and I went on a trip for a few days. It was pretty nice. Now I feel, like, much more relaxed~.” Ye Cang started off with an honest tone but ended up talking like a young girl.

“Beep beep...” Ye Cang heard the sound of the call hanging up and sighed. She needs to take her meds again.

Ye Cang’s group once again boarded their boat. The fishmen tribe all came to send them off. The newly promoted fishmen shaman were even respectfully saluting Ye Cang as he left.

“Mrrglmr! Mglrmglmg!mg!!” Abado commanded a few fishmen warriors to escort the boat, then waved goodbye. Ye Cang also waved and shouted goodbye in the fishmen language.

The steamship, protected by the fishmen warriors, ended up in a few fights with the sea giants. Only then did Ye Cang, SpyingBlade and the others learn how violent and brave these azure skinned fishmen could be. In the water, their speed was unbelievably fast. The sea giants didn’t even have a chance to hit back. With Ye Cang providing ranged support, the party even manage to collect some dark gold equipment.

## Chapter 497: Farsarqi

---

The fishermen led the steamship to sail along their territorial waterways. After leaving the Ocean Abyss, none of the fishermen warriors left. They were also in charge of the return journey. After ten days of sailing at top speed, Ye Cang saw the constantly airborne seagulls and other large motor ships. He knew they were arriving at their destination.

A large harbor gradually appeared in the horizon. Little Ye Tian began to steer the ship towards the harbor. Since Ye Cang's steamship was a local product, it didn't attract any extra attention, but the fishermen warriors on the boat startled the city officials. The harbor guards all bowed and had Ye Cang wait for the person in charge to arrive. SpyingBlade couldn't help but sigh. The service here trended towards that of the olden days.

A woman with curly blonde hair and wearing worker clothes appeared before Ye Cang's group. "You are the ones who brought the fishermen? May I ask where you're from..."

The woman saw Ye Cang's ship and her brows rose, "It's actually great master Pastor's work, the HHY-91-S13 portable magic crystal motorized vessel. This is a limited edition, custom made ship. Only three of them exist."

Ye Cang calmly smiled and stood forwards. Lowering his wolf head hood to his shoulders, he said gracefully, "We are travelers from the Planetary Empire's Black Rock City. I am Earl PaleSnow of the Planetary Empire..."

Wu Na and FrozenCloud sighed at how good Ye Cang was at showing off in front of strangers. He looked very cool, very stylish and very proper.

The woman cried out in alarm, "You passed through the Ocean Abyss!?"

“At the same time, I am the Alabachia Fishman Tribe’s Great Shaman Ritualist.” Ye Cang nodded, and began a little tribal dance with the fishmen warriors.

“.....” (Everyone)

The woman froze. When she confirmed that his medal was real, she became even more sure that they had crossed the Ocean Abyss. Full of respect, she said, “I’m the one in charge of Farsarqi Seaport’s Dock C5, Mary-Sue. I welcome you, guests from a distant land.”

In fact, the distance between Farsarqi and the Planetary Empire wasn’t that great, they were simply separated by hard to cross barriers such as the Magic Forest and the Furnace Lands. As for the sea route, it had the Ocean Abyss; controlled by Sea Giants and countless deep ocean races. The chances of defeating them in the ocean was extremely low. They weren’t called the darlings of the sea for nothing.

Mary-Sue gave those very formidable looking fishmen a glance. She couldn’t help but feel some trepidation. It wasn’t that they had never thought to sail through the northern sea route but after entering the Ocean Abyss, no ship has ever emerged safely. Even using the greatest battleships, those sea giants, nagas and fishmen weren’t to be provoke. In the sea, they were the kings. This earl wasn’t a simple man!

Mary-Sue allowed them through and gave them a pass.

Ye Cang brought everyone into the city. Following Little Ye Tian’s suggestion, they first went to the city hall’s property purchasing area. Bringing along a huge sum of money, they checked out the available properties. When they saw that Dock D3, due to bad management, had been seized and was being sold off, Little Ye Tian suggested they spent 2000 gold to purchase the entire thing. They also bought a large sized shopping center in Fabusch block along with many middle sized shops.

Ye Cang went to the firearms store. He broke out in cold sweat when he saw what was inside. His own Giant Owl No.2 only sold for 25 gold in this store and it even came with ten magic crystals. Recalling the price he had paid at the high-end auction to obtain his, he was immediately put in a bad mood. He bought over 20 Giant Owl No.2s and spent 200 gold buying a pair of Sea Owl No.1s

#### Sea Owl No.1 - Left (Black Gold - Standard Issue - Firearm)

Category: High Caliber Pistol

Requirements: 145 Strength, 170 Dexterity

Damage: 38-42

+17 Strength

+19 Dexterity

+5% Dexterity

+15% Reload Speed

+45 Shooting Speed

+50 Armor Penetration

+60 Range

- Converging Shot - Sea Owl No.1

Absorb large amounts of magic crystal energy. After 2 seconds, an extremely powerful piercing bullet will be fired, dealing 265% attack damage. For every target pierced by the same shot, damage will decrease by 5%.

Cooldown: 5 minutes

#### Sea Owl No.1 - Right (Black Gold - Standard Issue - Firearm)

Category: High Caliber Pistol

Requirements: 175 Strength, 155 Dexterity

Damage: 39-44

+19 Strength

+16 Dexterity

+5% Strength

+10% Reload Speed

+40 Shooting Speed

+65 Armor Penetration

+70 Range

- Explosive Energy Bullet - Sea Owl No.1

Absorb large amounts of magic crystal energy. After 3 seconds, an unstable, explosive energy bomb will be fired, dealing 135 energy damage in an area.

Cooldown: 5 minutes

The twin pistols overload mode's effect was also kept. It's speed was more or less improved, but not by much. The guns' barrel increased in size significantly. Ye Cang equipped them, very satisfied. As for the rest of the 20 or so guns, he would bring them back and sell them to the spendthrifts.

Little Ye Tian went around the city consulting many experts about blueprint composition and purchased quite a few designs in the auction. Due to Ye Cang receiving a notification that their harbor was about to be completed and the initial work on the palace was finished, they abandoned their original plan to meet the city's mayor and rushed to buy a large amount of the city's specialty products before getting on the boat, and rushing back at full speed.

Originally, Mary-Sue had wanted to consult with Ye Cang, but looking at their fishmen warrior escorts, she smiled. They'll be back, no rush...

The little steamboat, with the fishmen warriors' help, drove away the sea giants and some pursuing naga. Following Alabachia's sea-route, they returned to the island. Without stopping, they continued to rush to Sand Sea Village. Upon arriving, they used their map to travel along the shortest path and began to cross the mountains. After another long and difficult trek, withstanding the wind and rain, everyone was already sick of it. At last, they returned to the area around Anya's shrine - though it should now be called the three goddesses' shrine. From the day they set off, 2 months had already passed. Everyone in their party had already all reached level 20. Ye Cang was even as high as level 23.

Ye Cang saw that even though the surroundings looked a bit

dilapidated, the palace contained the very majestic aura of the three goddesses. The 100 meter tall marble statues of the three goddesses stood side by side, looking very serene. In contrast, the inauguration celebration they hosted afterwards was very extravagant. Maru Naya, Linda, and Makarlo all came over, each of them responsible for one of the goddesses individual shrines. As for the main palace, which represented this holy trinity, it had Ye Cang and the three of them jointly responsible.

The sinkhole had long since been connected to White Stone City. The trade route from Black Rock City to White Stone City, then to Black Peaks was now exceptionally prosperous. The magic crystals mined in Black Rock City were shipped to White Stone City. Then the goods from White Stone City were then carried to the three goddess city. Transit between the three places had become one whole, tying them together. They thrived together and would fall together.

Now that the three goddess shrines were complete, Ye Cang was planning what to do for the event. Coming to the depths of the inner palace, he planned to summon the goddesses for a dress rehearsal. Everything they had invested depended on the success of goddess city, he couldn't be careless.

# Chapter 498: Goddess Representative Selection

---

Ye Cang returned to his booth at the Dark Cave and replenished its stock. Many teams had already beaten the first boss, the toad. It seemed like someone had discovered a special strategy, increasing the efficiency. Lin Le was ordered to mass produce alchemical items, allowing him to promote to Alchemist Master. The promotion earned him an even more powerful fuel recipe and an even more unstable combustible composition, but they all required powder made from fire crystals. This made Ye Cang begin to wantonly purchase fire crystals, attracting the attention of a few guilds. They were all guessing whether Ye Cang was secretly trying to stock up or if it was some conspiracy... in any case, it was definitely not something good.

The imported goods that Ye Cang brought back caused a huge sensation. Of his 21 pairs of Giant Owl No.2s, not a single one was left unsold at a price of 200 gold. FrozenCloud couldn't help but sigh at this huge profit. It only cost 20 gold over there, but here it sold for 200 gold, and supply still didn't meet the demand. The moment more were released, they would be instantly snatched away. The customers were all relatively famous professional players. They probably bled their wallets dry in order to buy them. One must know that 200 gold wasn't a small amount. The other equipment also sold well, especially the portable boats. They could only seat 2-3 people but the Freedom Alliance, Mad War, and Lord's Reign all paid a high price to snap up these little boats.

Ye Cang looked at his bursting coin pouch and decided to bring a bit more back next time. They had earned many times the money they spent there. The profits were just... Tsk tsk. Haah, it turns out that I'm a business genius. With a sigh, over half of the profits went to construction. Looking at the virtual picture of Goddess Peak (originally Ghost Peak) and the majestic palace on the top as

well as the city facilities covering the entire mountain, he felt a sense of accomplishment.

The beneficiaries of Goddess City were mainly the players, including the three big investors: the Freedom Alliance, Mad War, and Lord's Reign. This was this season's first player established city, so it received a great deal of attention.

White Stone City's public instance, as well as Black Rock City's public instance became the two places with the busiest traffic. Travelling between Goddess Moor (the sinkhole) to White Stone City was extremely easy. Little Ye Tian even developed a large sized magic crystal vehicle and invented a new magic crystal engine which had an even higher efficiency! Tests showed that travelling from Bal Village to Black Rock City only took 3 hours. The magic crystal consumption wasn't high either. Thus, public transportation spontaneously sprung up, quickly starting operation. Five 50-person magic crystal vehicles travelled back and forth between Bal Village and Black Rock City.

For Little Ye Tian, inventing the vehicle was only a minor matter. Right now, she was facing the difficult problem of how to scan for the size and structure of magic crystal veins. Once she accomplished this, she could resolve the problem of their mine becoming abandoned once this vein was mined out. Little Ye Tian held an empty magic crystal, studying it in detail, but sighed. It would require a machine to further analyse it. Drawing the design for a bit, she shook her head and shelved it, then threw herself into new research. Her former master, now assistant and apprentice, was bowing and listening to Little Ye Tian's orders while being looked at as if he were an idiot.

The profits from the mines were obvious. Ye Cang thought of the money that continued to pile in. In addition to that, the harbor, stores, etc were all very prosperous. It was even enough to build up another city. He felt like a real-estate tycoon.

Lin Le returned to the Chamber of Commerce. Because Lin Le



had won them a share of the magic crystals, he was directly promoted to vice-president and was regarded very highly.

Zhang ZhengXiong was also commended, becoming head priest. He was highly regarded by both Magi and Mar Junior.

As for Ye Cang, who was getting tired of counting money, he decided to have some fun. He returned to reality, turned on the TV and yawned. Looking at the fashion model beauties, a divine light went off in his head. He quickly logged back in and summoned all his employees in Black Rock City and White Stone City. At the goddess association doorways, he pasted a notice: “The first Goddess Representative Beauty Contest is recruiting.”

The notice listed many benefits and awards. First place would receive a large amount of money (players would also get equipment), get to meet the goddesses and even participate in the next descent to liven things up.

Ye Cang informed CloudDragon, LordAsked, NalanPureSoul, as well as Mar Junior and Makarlo, letting them be judges. CloudDragon thought it over. Though he was unwilling, considering the benefits, he still accepted.

Ye Cang gave his female staff a goal. “Whoever can get first place, I’ll let her be the store manager.”

All the women were first delighted, then looked around at their coworkers and began their battle of cutting remarks and various behind-the-scenes maneuvering. Ye Cang left the meeting room with a calm smile. Laughing quietly to himself, he muttered, “This is much better than watching dramas. Fight! And I can even make money...”

FrozenCloud stood at the doorway and saw Ye Cang’s smile after he had turned away. It was like the smile of an evil puppeteer. Just how black hearted was he. She shivered. Even if I die, I can’t let him know that I tricked him...

“Lil’Dino, I’ll leave you in charge of this... Don’t let me down.” Ye Cang’s spoke heartfelt words as he patted FrozenCloud’s shoulder and smiled.

FrozenCloud saw that good-willed smile and quickly nodded. The longer she was with him, the more scary he seemed. He couldn’t be described with just crazy.

Ye Cang’s event drew in a lot of people. They came in all shapes and sizes. On the day of the event, Zhang ZhengXiong sat a seat of honor and looked at the unevenly matched contestants. Some were very beautiful and stunning, like the female proprietor of the cafe - Allie, Earl Calata’s daughter - Jenny, and Ye Cang’s subordinate public relations elf Liliana. There was also the C grade mating quest’s ‘demoness’ - Kelly. When the Freedom Alliance’s LooseCloud saw her, he immediately trembled all over and hid behind NalanMight, muttering, “No, no...”

NalanMoon saw LooseCloud’s appearance, then turned to look at Kelly; her appearance like a work of god and that bloated body... She gasped, then turned to look at Ye Cang. That guy really was vile.

Following the start of the event, the women walked the stage one by one while showing off their talents. Mar Junior graded them very professionally. Especially when it came to temperament, which he understood well. His handsome appearance caused many girls to swoon. Ye Cang saw Aiki off stage, watching Mar with cold eyes, and immediately broke out in cold sweat.

CloudDragon had a very poisonous tongue when it came to judging figures, making many women leave in tears. Many even collapsed on the spot. To be able to ruthlessly talk about people’s elephant legs, bow legs, artificial \*\*\*\*s and other abnormalities; even the tiniest thing would be noticed and made a big deal by him. His harshness invited many complaints but everything he said was logical. ThornyRose gazed at CloudDragon speechlessly. To be so serious and toxic at a recreational event... She watched as

a young lady walked off the stage, bawling in her mother's arms. He actually told her she had short legs and a flat chest, suggesting that she should drink more milk.

# Chapter 499: Mid-Selection

---

Kelly swaggered onto the stage. The judging committee immediately froze, as if facing their greatest nemesis.

“She deserves praise for her courage...” Mar Junior said slowly.

“Inner beauty...” Ye Cang simply added.

CloudDragon directly revealed his score, showing a very humane 1 point.

Makarło wore a friendly smile. “What is your dream?”

“To get married, have kids and find that man who slept with me.” Kelly actually spoke with a confident smile, giving off a ‘girl from a wealthy family’ aura.

Everyone gasped. Who was the god with such draconic courage!

Ye Cang and the others, who knew the inside story, froze. Ye Cang then showed a good-willed smile. Seeing his smile, FrozenCloud knew that someone was screwed.

LordAsked spoke with a queer expression, “A very admirable dream...”

He decisively gave her 2 points.

NalanPureSoul turned and saw the hiding LooseCloud and blushed with shame. For the extra 10 gold from that time, he gave 3 points.

Mar Junior saw that this woman didn’t expose any anger when faced with everyones jeering. In fact, she even looked down on those people. Feeling respect in his heart, he said, “Compared to superficial beauty, your temperament puts the rest to shame. You haven’t let down the Abbes family name...”

“Sir Cross, I appreciate your feelings, but there is only one man in my heart. Apologies...” Kelly replied coldly.

Mar Junior froze, then broke into laughter, revealing 8 points. This was, up until now, the highest score. It drew the resentment of countless women.

Mar Junior smiled. “She has the temperament and purpose that you all lack.”

Ye Cang slowly got up and applauded. “Truly an admirable woman...”

Saying that, he suddenly pointed to the spot LooseCloud was hiding. “He’s there! Go! Seek your true love! We all offer you our sincerest blessings. Let’s give her a round of applause!”

NalanMight and them saw Kelly’s burning gaze and were so scared that they immediately moved aside. Everyone opened up a path. The trembling LooseCloud glared at Ye Cang. He even felt the urge to kill right now. He actually fell into a trap again!!

Everyone looked at LooseCloud with untold respect, instantly breaking into applause, giving him their blessings as if stabbing him in the back.

LooseCloud quickly turned to flee. Kelly lifted her dress and shot after him with big strides, like a shooting star. “Dreamy! Wait for me! Let us work together for a better future!!!”

Ye Cang watched the two of them disappear down the street with a sincere and moved smile. Waving his hands, he wished them well. “Be happy!”

“So moving. Definitely, you definitely have to find happiness!” Lin Le also waved at them, extremely emotional.

FrozenCloud, NalanMoon and NalanMight all felt a shiver down their backs. Just how treacherous were they.

CloudDragon looked at Ye Cang’s sincere expression, then heard a scream from far away. God knows what made him so twisted. One might even be tricked into believing that he was benevolent.

Next on stage was Linda. Before even reaching the stage, those ‘When wind meets the waves, The clouds will sail out to sea, And storms will arise’-like ripples instantly earned 10 points one after another. Everyone offered their own praise. CloudDragon was taken in by her sturdy body. Though she didn’t appear strong, she had explosive strength like a cheetah ready to pounce. Moreover, that chest... Yeah~ not bad.

Mar Junior froze for a moment when he saw Linda’s milk jugs. He turned and saw the cold gaze of Aiki, then immediately put on a righteous expression. “Cough cough. As expected of one of Black Rock City’s heroes. Admirable...”

The others all bobbed their head along with the ripples. Ye Cang even got up and held Linda’s hand. “You win and directly become Goddess Representative. Congratulations...”

“Hey hey! There are still so many people left!”

“Isn’t it just a big chest and big butt! Can you be anymore shallow! And you call us superficial!”

Earth shattering opposition came from everywhere.

“Umm, I’m not participating. I’m only here to clean up the stage a bit...” Linda shook her head. She took out a broom and swept the stage a bit, then left under the extremely reluctant gazes of all the men.

“Continue.” Ye Cang calmly returned to the judging panel.

“Face too big! Next!” (LordAsked)

“No hips. What are you even coming up for?” (CloudDragon)

“No spirit. Too ordinary. Practically no talent. Next.” (NalanPureSoul)

“Miss, your chest is rather small. Come back after growing up a bit.” Makarlo stroked his beard, then grabbed some herbal medicine and passed it to the red eyed contestant, giving her a

regretful yet encouraging smile.

“Overall not bad, but the face lacks a bit of maturity. Next time.” Mar Junior said tactfully.

“ThornyRose? Eh... not bad... next. My face!!” (Ye Cang)

After much filtering, only Allie, Jenny, Liliana, ThornyRose, FrozenCloud, BlackIce, NalanBeauty, FrozenCloud, the shop assistant Melo (rabbit girl) and Aiki were left.

“Bro, it seems our guild doesn’t produce beauties. None of them were chosen...” LordGrinned poked his head over and said. LordAsked strangely didn’t talk back. He just unleashed a simple chop and sighed.

For the second round, the women all changed clothes and went back on stage.

“Brother Lil’ White, she looks ominous! Give her low points!” Lin Le looked at BlackIce and proposed. Ye Cang nodded and raised the 1 point card.

“You... what are you looking at. Yes you, looking so ominous. Both Black and Ice, why not just stick to a theme.”

“FrozenCloud, both ice and cloud, also doesn’t conform to a theme. 1 point.” CloudDragon retaliated.

LordAsked and NalanPureSoul remained silent, staying out of their fight.

BlackIce and FrozenCloud could only smile bitterly. ThornyRose gnashed her teeth, unhappy at the fact that she actually received less points than the rabbit girl named Melo. Surprisingly, FrozenBlood defeated Aiki in terms of talent. Faced with Aiki’s resentful gaze, Mar Junior wanted to cry. He had already done all he could.

In the end though, only three women remained: Allie, Jenny, and Liliana. They were all unobjectionably tied. Talent-wise, they each

had their specialties. What surprised Ye Cang was that Jenny was extremely gifted in drawing. Even more surprising was Liliana's singing; it was so ethereal that everyone felt their bodies going limp.

In the final showdown. Ye Cang followed procedures and let the three women change into swimsuits. Although it was a bit shameful, the three women still put on the sexy swimsuits. With the girls leaning by the edge of a fountain, the stimulation brought on by the swimsuits made Mar Junior see the light. Makarlo stroked his beard while nodding repeatedly, "Beautiful in its simplicity. Not bad, not bad..."

OldWangFromNextDoor couldn't help but reach downwards. FrozenCloud and Wu Na both raised their eyebrows at him, their gazes full of contempt.

"No! It's not that!" Wang quickly put his hand on his hip and said.

The look of contempt from the two women became even more intense. They both sighed, patting his shoulder from both sides. Wu Na said somewhat sympathetically, "I'll try to find someone for you from my least favorite friends..."

"Me too..." FrozenCloud promised.

Wang wiped away his sweat. As expected of the women who follow boss.



# Chapter 500: Three Way

---

“Allie gives off a girl-next-door sort of vibe. Jenny has a graceful aura, very princess-like. Liliana’s fashionable green hair and professional smile give her a very warm feeling. The three’s appearance all make them top picks. There’s nothing to complain about when it comes to their figures either. Choosing one amongst them will be a real headache.” LordAsked’s professional opinion made CloudDragon, Ye Cang, and NalanPureSoul all look at him strangely.

“My bro, when he’s bored, will read women’s fashion magazines...” LordGrinned once again leaned over.

Before he could speak anymore, a vein-throbbing LordAsked smashed down with a chop. “Stop butting in!”

“So he is that sort of person. Who would’ve thought.” Ye Cang and the others thought. Their mocking expressions made LordAsked furious.

“Knight LordAsked’s opinion is exactly what I was thinking. To really see who is best, we need a new method. Earl PaleSnow, what do you think?” Mar Junior crossed his arms and said seriously.

“Everyone’s opinions are reasonable. Lele, your thoughts?” Ye Cang looked towards his good-for-nothing advisor, Lin Le.

“Lele thinks that we should pick 100 strangers and have the girls go into the water. Then they will come out and show off their various charms. See who gets the most votes.”

Lin Le’s words made Ye Cang nod. “Good idea. Let’s do it.”

Lin Le randomly chose 100 drooling men.

The three women entered the water somewhat embarrassed. Even though none of them cared about being the representative, none of them wanted to lose to the other two. The first to come out of the water was Allie. With a soft call, she flung her long wet hair.

Her cleavage was faintly visible. Although they weren't very big but they looked nice and firm. Her performance was quite powerful.

Contestant number two was Jenny who came out hugging her shoulders shyly. Compared to her original grace, she now had the charm of a shy young girl. The gap was exceptionally stunning. Allie looked away unhappily. That scheming b\*tch.

Contestant number three, Liliana, with her tall figure, unconsciously radiated the noble elegance that elves were known for. Her long ears did a little wiggle, making others want to intimately touch them.

CloudDragon's brows rose. "Up until now, I believe the best performance has come from Liliana. Cold, warm, professional and subdued, she gives one many impressions..."

"Brother CloudDragon, could it be... you're hard?" Ye Cang turned to him and asked seriously.

"F\*\*k off!" CloudDragon roared unhappily.

"CloudDragon, you're a guy with such little self control?" LordAsked smiled and said disdainfully.

"Bro, you're not hard? I'm..." LordGrinned once again stuck his head over but, without a word, was blasted away by LordAsked, this time with a burst of punches and kicks. NalanPureSoul facepalmed. LordAsked was slowly becoming used to him.

"I agree with the words of our friend from White Stone City, Liliana has indeed managed to capture the hearts of most of the men but the one I am in favor of is Jenny. Last time I saw her, she was still huddled in bed feeling inferior, becoming a shut-in girl. Now, from the first moment she appeared, she's given me one shock after another. I'm so moved." Mar Junior sighed. He unconsciously glanced towards Aiki who was smiling grimly and his heart sank. He could only smile bitterly.

"President Makarlo, given your experience you must have seen

countless women, what is your opinion?" Mar Junior straightened himself out then asked.

"I think most highly of Allie. She has excellent potential, not only for her looks but also her culinary skills and her business management. A housewife, a chef and a boss; the ideal wife of every man. Winning her would be like obtaining a treasure. I give my vote to Allie." With Makarlo's experience and insight, people felt enlightened and looked at Allie more positively. It was indeed true, the cafe managed by her was thriving. The hundred voters began to struggle once more.

The 6 votes from the judges were distributed, 2 to each contestant.

"Time is up, cast your votes." Ye Cang nodded.

Allie turned to look at the voters. She pointed to Jenny and said calmly, "Those who don't vote for this little sl\*t will get a 10% discount at my store."

The judging panel gasped. Who would have thought that Allie had such a side to her. Mar Junior immediately recalled, "The one who first started bullying Jenny at school was Allie Tiger! She's Marat Tiger's delinquent daughter! Black Rock Academy's queen..."

Jenny faced the overbearing Allie. Her original luxuriousness turned into cuteness and helplessness, looking very pitiable.

The expected drop in Allie's popularity didn't happen. In fact it rose sharply.

"A former female gang leader! Queen, violate me!! Bully me!!"

"A lovely wife, cook, boss, delinquent. Damn, for real?!!"

Jenny's confidence weakened. She turned to look at Ye Cang, then grit her teeth and mumbled, "Allie... not scared of you... Do-don't come over. I'm not afraid of you!"

“Tsundere! She’s actually a tsundere! So cute!”

Jenny’s tsundere appearance was extremely popular with the crowd. Allie began to gnash her teeth while somehow still maintaining her tender smile. However, there was a chill in her eyes.

Liliana sighed with contempt. She turned away, and began playing with her beautiful emerald green hair. Her elegant aura instantly swept the audience away. The judging panel could feel the elven arrogance growing. She was like a piece of art that can only be looked at but not touched. Even though she clearly didn’t do anything special, her popularity unexpectedly surpassed the other two. She was actually an aloof type!!

“Truly a brilliant confrontation.” Makarlo couldn’t help but be impressed. He had seen many fights to the death, but this sort of formless contest really shook one to the core.

Everyone nodded in agreement.

ThornyRose no longer felt bad for losing. The three on stage were too strong.

Allie and Jenny both noticed the change. They looked at Liliana’s otherworldly peaceful expression and decided that they had to drag her into the fight! Jenny glanced at Ye Cang again and gnashed her teeth. She began to think about how to obtain victory! She even began plotting like a b\*tch.

Wu Na and FrozenCloud saw that the surrounding men were caught up in the craze. They saw Wang lead the otakus to cheer for Liliana. The two girls facepalmed and sighed.

“Their battle has entered an impasse.” Mar Junior said.

“Let’s see who acts first. Based on what we’ve seen, Allie is the most likely, but I feel that Jenny might step up. Just look at the resolution in her eyes. Those are the eyes of someone about to revolt.” Ye Cang analyzed the scene.

“Indeed, but even so, this will be a fierce battle.” CloudDragon actually agreed with him.

“She’s started...” Makarlo faintly narrowed his eyes.

Allie and Jenny had reached a rare agreement, and with identical expressions, were about to make things difficult for Liliana. Liliana suddenly screamed. Her voice was full of panic, but even in her panic, it held a trill that made ones legs go soft. That aloof to the point of lovely Liliana suddenly squatted down, her two hands tightly covering her chest. “The clasp inside came undone...”

The originally indecisive 100 voters froze, then in an instant, they frantically cast their votes to the portrait of Liliana and begged, “Please! Get up!!”

# Table of Contents

[Virtual World: Peerless White Emperor](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Acknowledgement](#)

[Chapter 401: ThornyRose's Shock](#)

[Chapter 402: General Level Zombie](#)

[Chapter 403: Shadow Frost](#)

[Chapter 404: Frozen Corpse Eyes](#)

[Chapter 405: Outside the Ravine of Death](#)

[Chapter 406: Withered Shade](#)

[Chapter 407: Good Karma](#)

[Chapter 408: Rabbis](#)

[Chapter 409: Killing Rabbis](#)

[Chapter 410: Shadow Chains](#)

[Chapter 411: Vanish](#)

[Chapter 412: Insect Cave Behind the Temple](#)

[Chapter 413: Burn Down the Temple](#)

[Chapter 414: Bagu Bug Vanguard](#)

[Chapter 415: Goddess Jam](#)

[Chapter 416: Three Goddesses](#)

[Chapter 417: Goddess Association](#)

[Chapter 418: Negotiation](#)

[Chapter 419: Archbishop Magi](#)

[Chapter 420: Giant Owl No.2](#)

[Chapter 421: Association Instructors](#)

[Chapter 422: Clearing the Ravine of Death](#)

[Chapter 423: Divide and Conquer](#)

[Chapter 424: Sandworm Path](#)

[Chapter 425: Gathering in the Broodmother's Nest](#)

[Chapter 426: Racketeering](#)

[Chapter 427: Killing the Broodmother](#)

[Chapter 428: Chilvini's Blade Net](#)

[Chapter 429: Strength of the Three Instructors](#)

[Chapter 430: Amplification Device and Soldier Food](#)

[Chapter 431: Debt Collector Department President - Lin Le](#)

[Chapter 432: Assenroche](#)

[Chapter 433: Liu Family Battle](#)

[Chapter 434-1: Frog in a Well](#)  
[Chapter 434-2: Red Dragoness](#)  
[Chapter 435: Coaching the Three Goddesses](#)  
[Chapter 436: Establishing Happy Firmaments](#)  
[Chapter 437: Eagle Eye](#)  
[Chapter 438: Solam Bandits](#)  
[Chapter 439: Repeating Old Tricks](#)  
[Chapter 440: White Stone City](#)  
[Chapter 441: Liliana](#)  
[Chapter 442: Marquis Azshara's Brand](#)  
[Chapter 443: Earl PaleSnow](#)  
[Chapter 444: Battlefield Opening](#)  
[Chapter 445: Chaotic Warfare](#)  
[Chapter 446: Humiliation](#)  
[Chapter 447: FlameEmperor](#)  
[Chapter 448: Victory](#)  
[Chapter 449: Goddess Tea and Cake](#)  
[Chapter 450: Continue Exploring](#)  
[Chapter 451: Aboriginals](#)  
[Chapter 452: Lianna](#)  
[Chapter 453: Magical Leatherworking](#)  
[Chapter 454: Meeting Pastor Again](#)  
[Chapter 455: Guarding Pastor Again](#)  
[Chapter 456: Fierce Battle on the Lake](#)  
[Chapter 457: Fishmen Shaman's Acknowledgement](#)  
[Chapter 458: Armed Crystal Drive](#)  
[Chapter 459: Leave for the Swamp](#)  
[Chapter 460: Open Instance](#)  
[Chapter 461: Toad Banquet](#)  
[Chapter 462: The Dark Cave](#)  
[Chapter 463: Googoo](#)  
[Chapter 464: Little XXX and Stinkin' Toad](#)  
[Chapter 465: Giant Marsh Crocodile](#)  
[Chapter 466: Three Headed Sea Monster](#)  
[Chapter 467: Breakthrough to Level 20](#)  
[Chapter 468: Fire and Spice](#)  
[Chapter 469: Control Spores](#)  
[Chapter 470: Cang and Pure](#)  
[Chapter 471: Hybrid Spore](#)

[Chapter 472: Free Time](#)

[Chapter 473: Training](#)

[Chapter 474: Personally Taking the Stage](#)

[Chapter 475: Masterchef](#)

[Chapter 476: Mountain Blood](#)

[Chapter 477: Fried Toad Sale](#)

[Chapter 478: Flasher Uncle's and Panty Uncle's Situation](#)

[Chapter 479: Exploring the Sinkhole](#)

[Chapter 480: Najas](#)

[Chapter 481: Boss Level Food is Terrifying](#)

[Chapter 482: Iron Web Spider](#)

[Chapter 483: Baked Spider](#)

[Chapter 484: Giant Water Underworld Slime](#)

[Chapter 485: Water Cannon Bombardment](#)

[Chapter 486: Five Coloured Slime Treasure Ring](#)

[Chapter 487: Massive Vein](#)

[Chapter 488: Journey to the West](#)

[Chapter 489: Ocean Abyss](#)

[Chapter 490: Fishman Shaman](#)

[Chapter 491: Lin Le's History](#)

[Chapter 492: Heaven's Sword Sect](#)

[Chapter 493: Outside the Heaven's Sword Pavilion](#)

[Chapter 494: Demon - Ye Cang](#)

[Chapter 495: Father and Son Reunited](#)

[Chapter 496: Down the Mountain](#)

[Chapter 497: Farsarqi](#)

[Chapter 498: Goddess Representative Selection](#)

[Chapter 499: Mid-Selection](#)

[Chapter 500: Three Way](#)